



CHAOTIC SWORD GOD

BOOK 10

Xin Xing Xiao Yao

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Chaotic Sword God

(混沌剑神)

by

Xin Xing Xiao Yao

(心星逍遥)

Synopsis

Jian Chen, the publicly recognized number one expert of the Jianghu. His skill with the sword went beyond perfection and was undefeatable in battle, After a battle with the exceptional expert Dugu Qiubai who had gone missing over a hundred years ago, Jian Chen succumbed to his injuries and died.

After death, Jian Chen's spirit was transmigrated into a completely foreign world. Following an extremely fast growth, his enemies piled up one after another before becoming gravely injured once more. On the gates of death, his spirit had mutated, and from that moment henceforth, he would tread on a completely different path of the art of the sword to become the sword god of his generation.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Pipipingu @ [Gravity Tales](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 901: Conflict

Hearing that Jian Chen actually wanted to buy the King Armament, Qing Yixuan's expression changed slightly. She cried out, "The sword caught my attention first, so I'm allowed to buy it first. There's no chance for you." Qing Yixuan was an expert with the sword. The shape of the Saint Weapon she used was almost the same as the King Armament, so it was extremely important to her. If she obtained the King Armament as a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King, it would just make her even powerful. She would totally possess the power to overcome the difference of cultivation levels to challenge Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Kings.

As a result, Qing Yixuan had already sworn to obtain the King Armament. Although Ruler Armaments were quite common in the sea realm, a Ruler Armament was nowhere near enough for her strength. Only King Armaments and Emperor Armaments could boost her strength but these two types of weapons were extremely rare even on the Tina Yuan Continent, let alone the sea realm where there were sparsely any humans.

"Senior, since you wanted the sword, why haven't you bought it after staring at it for so long? The sword is in my hands now. I'm taking it," Jian Chen said with determination. His uses for the King Armament were just too great, so he was also determined to obtain it. Although it would cause him to offend Qing Yixuan, the two of them already had enmity. He did not care about adding some more to it.

Qing Yixuan had already paled in anger. She stared at Jian Chen as flames of rage burned in her eyes as she said coldly, "The sword has been reserved by me, so it's already mine. You can't buy the

sword before I give up on buying it.”

“I want the sword right now. I wonder if I can get the right to buy it before the reserver?” Jian Chen asked aloud, yet his eyes were focused on an old man who walked over. He exuded a learned presence. He was a Saint Ruler of the Ninth Heavenly Layer and Jian Chen knew that he was the shopkeeper here.

“The two warriors sure have good eyes. I’ve only recently obtained this King Armament and it’s just been on sale for three days. I originally thought that no one would buy it, so I planned on auctioning it off in the large auction in a few days. Never did I think I would meet the knowledgeable so fast. It really has surprised this one.” The shopkeeper chuckled as he walked over. He observed Jian Chen and Qing Yixuan secretly, understanding that the two of them must have very influential backgrounds, such that he could not offend them.

The shopkeeper arrived before the King Armament and continued, “This lady may have had her eyes on the King Armament but she hasn’t paid any reservation fees or discussed it with the shop. As a result, this warrior may buy the sword given the rules. As long as you pay the right price, the weapon will be yours.”

Qing Yixuan began to panic as soon as she heard that. She said with a deep voice, “Shopkeeper, I also want the sword but I don’t have enough crystal coins on me. I’ve already contacted a good friend of mine to bring over the money, so can you hold onto it for sometime for me?”

“This...” The shopkeeper hesitated slightly. He was a bit troubled.

A smile immediately appeared on Nanyun Lie’s face when he heard that Qing Yixuan did not have enough money. He said, “Since this lady likes this sword called King Armament, I’ll buy it and gift it to you. Shopkeeper, I’d like to take the sword. Bill it to the Nanyun clan. There’ll be someone who’ll come with the money.” As he said that, Nanyun Lie glanced at Jian Chen in provocation. He knew that Jian Chen was not weak but he did not care about that at all. This was because he was the youngest son of the Nanyun clan, which had two 15th Star experts.

A sneer formed on Jian Chen’s lips when he noticed Nanyun Lie’s glance. He could tell that Nanyun Lie was a hedonistic degenerate from a rich family with a single look. He probably did not even know what a King Armament was.

“Shopkeeper, may I ask of the price?” Jian Chen asked.

“Fifty million grand quality crystal coins,” said the shopkeeper.

“What! F-f- fifty thousand grand quality crystal coins.” Nanyun Lie immediately jumped in fright when he heard the price. He asked in disbelief, “Shopkeeper, are you sure that’s the right price? How can a sword like this be worth fifty million grand quality crystal coins?”

“Young master Nanyun Lie, you probably don’t know about the origins of this weapon then. If this weapon was thrown onto the

Tian Yuan Continent, it's enough to cause a storm of blood. Fifty million coins is already a low price," explained the shopkeeper.

"F-f- f-fifty million coins. How is it so expensive?" Nanyun Lie revealed an ugly expression. He became extremely awkward. He knew nothing about the Tian Yuan Continent, so naturally, he had no idea of the weapon's value. He originally wanted to buy it and gift it to the attractive girl beside him, so that he could win her heart. However, never did he think that the King Armament would be so expensive, being at a price of fifty million grand quality crystal coins. Even to his clan, this price was a huge amount of wealth. It was not an amount he could spend.

Qing Yixuan did not even glance at Nanyun Lie throughout this. She waved a medallion before the shopkeeper and said, "Shopkeeper, this is the medallion of my identity. Are you able to give me some time?"

"T-this..." The shopkeeper's expression immediately changed greatly when he recognized the medallion in Qing Yixuan's hand.

"You're not the only one with something like that. I have it too. Shopkeeper, here is the medallion of my identity. I want to buy the King Armament." Jian Chen also pulled out his guest's medallion.

The shopkeeper immediately paled when he saw Jian Chen's medallion. He directly vomited a mouthful of blood, taking several steps back in retreat. His gaze toward Jian Chen was filled with fear while his heart began to toss and turn.

He had just seen a hazy figure sitting within a grand hall from the medallion. It radiated with a great pressure, capable of shaking up the world. It was like god, consecrated and undefiable. He did not recognize the hazy figure but the figure's identity somehow began to flash through his head the moment he saw it. It was the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall, one of the three supreme experts of the sea realm.

The shopkeeper's gaze toward Jian Chen had changed completely. It was now filled with fear because he understood that any person who could pull out a medallion like that was an extremely important member of the hall. Even the person secretly in control of the store would not dare not to offend someone like that.

"Shopkeeper, so who will you be selling the King Armament to now?" Jian Chen put his medallion away and smiled as he looked at the shopkeeper, who had yet to recover from his shock.

"Esteemed warrior. I have been ignorant. If I had been disrespectful before, I hope this warrior can forgive me. I'll obviously be selling this King Armament to you." The shopkeeper's attitude to Jian Chen underwent a complete change. He was now much more polite to him.

Nanyun Lie could not help but grow curious about Jian Chen's identity as he saw the shopkeeper treat the young man like that. It was actually enough to even make the shopkeeper treat him so politely. Even his identity as a young master of the Nanyun clan was not enough for him to enjoy such treatment.

“And who’s this lady? She’s actually able to just say that she wants to buy this King Armament worth fifty million grand quality crystal coins. That’s not an amount anyone can pull out and yet she did not even bat an eyelid when she heard that. And what medallion did she show the shopkeeper before to make him react like that? Does that mean her identity is impressive?” Nanyun Lie began to make guesses, before he quickly thought of something. He rejoiced as he thought, “If I can bond with this lady and get her to become my cultivation partner, the status of our clan will rise up to another level.” Nanyun Lie’s heart began to swell with confidence as he thought up to there. He was the youngest son of the Nanyun clan. His background was great and he was handsome and dashing. He believed he could melt this woman’s heart of ice as long as he put in some effort.

“Girl, isn’t it just a King Armament? There are plenty of weapons like this in the sea realm. I’ll order the members of my clan to find one as soon as I get back. You should be receiving a similar King Armament without much time. May I ask for your name and where you live? If I find a King Armament, I’ll deliver it to you as soon as possible.” Nanyun Lie immediately began his intense attacks on Qing Yixuan.

However, Nanyun Lie’s lofty aspirations were destined to collapse on themselves. Qing Yixuan stared at him coldly and said, “If you dare say another word, I’m going to throw you out immediately.”

Nanyun Lie flinched slightly when his enthusiasm was met with such cold words. He said, “Girl, I am the...” Just when he wanted to bring up his clan to shock Qing Yixuan, she waved her hand before he could even finish. Immediately, a powerful force collided

with his body, sending him flying. He smashed through a window and fell onto the streets outside.

“How dare you harm the young master of our Nanyun clan!” The two guards of Nanyun Lei roared out immediately, charging toward her in unison. However, Qing Yixuan waved her hand gently once more and the two of them immediately followed Nanyun Lie out. They were all knocked away by a powerful force, through a window and onto the street outside.

Although the shopkeeper watched all of this happen, he did not dare to stop her. After all, he had completely recognized her guest’s medallion.

Jian Chen had already pulled out a large pile of crystal coins from his Space Ring, before borrowing some more from the grand elder. He gathered a total of fifty million grand quality crystal coins and bought the King Armament, putting it away in his Space Ring under Qing Yixuan’s furious gaze.

“Farewell, senior.” Jian Chen clasped his hands at Qing Yixuan before leaping out the window with Xie Wang and the grand elder. They directly took to the skies.

Qing Yixuan stared at his figure sunken-faced as he flew away. First, Jian Chen had stolen the Octoterra Map fragment she had paid a price of being heavily injured to obtain and now he had taken the King Armament she had valued very much. It made her hatred for him peak.

“You’re the first brat who dares to act purposefully arrogant before me. There will be one day where I make you regret your choices. I refuse to believe that old turtle will protect you for your whole life.” Qing Yixuan gnashed her teeth. Afterward, she disappeared from the building with a flash.

Nanyun Lie charged up to the fifth floor furiously and in a horrible shape as soon as she left. He said angrily, “How dare she treat me like this. She doesn’t acknowledge the Nanyun clan at all... Hm? Where’d she go?” Nanyun Lie looked around and realized that Qing Yixuan and Jian Chen had disappeared.

“Shopkeeper, where are they? Where’d they go? Hmph, do they really think it’s so easy to flee after hitting me?” Nanyun Lie called at the shopkeeper as he had no one to vent his anger on anymore.

The shopkeeper sneered at Nanyun Lie, “Young master, those people have already done you a great favor by not crippling you. Not only do you fail to realize what’s good for you, you even want to find them for revenge. If you really do agitate them, your Nanyun clan will be pulled in as well. Do you know who that woman is?”

“Then tell me who that woman is. I’ll definitely go find her in the future,” sneered Nanyun Lie.

“That woman possesses a guest’s medallion from the Sea Goddess Hall and she’s definitely not just an ordinary guest of the hall. I think she should be Qing Yixuan of the eight great human experts, a 16th Star Seasoul Warrior,” sneered the shopkeeper.

“What! Shopkeeper, w-w- what did you say? That woman’s a 16th Star expert?” Nanyun Lie cried out in fright. Blood immediately drained from his face.

Chapter 902: The Highest Kill Command

Jian Chen, Xie Wang, and the grand elder of the Turtle clan left the city together. They flew in the air while Jian Chen constantly examined the King Armament in his hand. He would use his hand to touch the shiny blade surface from time to time as he looked at it with unconcealable fondness.

“This King Armament just suits me too well. I’ll even be able to fight ordinary 15th Star Seasoul Warriors when I come across them,” Jian Chen mumbled to himself. His voice was filled with happiness.

The King Armament was extremely powerful and not as gentle as a Ruler Armament. Even an Earth Saint Master could use a Ruler Armament and use it to increase their strength by a few levels without any backlash. However, the King Armament in his hand could shoot out sharp strands of Sword Qi all by itself. No one below Saint King could use it or they would be injured before they could even harm an opponent.

If Jian Chen wanted to wield the King Armament, he needed to have his Chaotic Force circulating such that his defenses were pushed to the maximum. That way, he would not be injured by the sword Qi. However, even when that was the case, the sword Qi from the King Armament when he wielded it would leave white marks on his skin.

The grand elder of the Turtle clan could not help but sigh secretly when he saw the toughness of Jian Chen’s body. “He really is a ruler of the Turtle clan. The toughness of his body is so great.

He's actually making full use of our clan's special characteristics."

"There are very few King Armaments on the Tian Yuan Continent as well. Only some ancient families will possess a few. I never thought I'd obtain such a rare item so easily," Jian Chen was ecstatic. It may have cost him fifty million grand quality crystal coins but to Jian Chen, even a hundred million grand quality crystal coins could not compare to the King Armament, let alone fifty million.

Suddenly, Jian Chen's eyes narrowed abruptly. He finally looked away from the King Armament. Up ahead, a dazzling red light shot directly toward him with lightning speed. It was so fast that it covered several dozen kilometers in a mere second, rapidly approaching Jian Chen.

The grand elder of the Turtle clan also discovered the red light and his expression immediately changed. "Be careful, ruler." He appeared before Jian Chen with a flash, directly throwing a clean fist toward the red light.

However, it seemed to be intangible, without a corporeal form. The grand elder's fist actually directly passed through the red light without blocking it at all.

The red light passed through the grand elder's body and directly struck Jian Chen. Immediately, Jian Chen began to shine with a splendid red glow. It condensed into a vague red blade which hung over his head.

“This is the highest kill command from the Heaven’s Spirit Hall. It has the ability to seal up the targeted person’s strength.” The grand elder’s expression changed abruptly when he saw the red light over Jian Chen’s head.

Jian Chen also became stern. He could feel a weird energy invade his body, wrapping around his dantian in the form of a net.

“It wants to seal up my strength! Don’t you dare!” Jian Chen became furious inside. With a thought, the chaotic neidan in his dantian began to spew out large quantities of Chaotic Force. It surged wildly in his body with a devastating aura, before transforming into the shape of an enraged dragon. It charged at the sealing energy with an unstoppable force.

Chaotic Force collided with the energy and they immediately fell into a stalemate. However, how could ordinary energies match the strength and uniqueness of Chaotic Force? Very quickly, the energy started to be devoured by the Chaotic Force slowly, before completely disappearing. There were no traces left.

Jian Chen could feel that his Chaotic Force had increased by a tiny strand once again after devouring the energy. However, the amount was tiny, almost insignificant.

The red light around Jian Chen also gradually disappeared after the energy had been devoured.

Two loud whistles resounded from afar. Two people shot toward Jian Chen with lightning speed as they radiated with killing intent.

They did not come with good intentions.

“Crap, they’re 16th Star experts. They’re people of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall. Run, ruler.” The grand elder’s expression immediately became extremely ugly and he fled into the distance as he tugged Jian Chen along.

However, they were still not as fast as the two 16th Star experts. Before they had even traveled much, the two 16th Star experts shot over their heads as streaks of light and blocked their path.

The two 16th Star experts were young men who seemed to be in their thirties. They wore black robes and although their appearances were not particularly outstanding, they seemed exactly the same. They were twins.

The two people glared at Jian Chen while killing intent flickered in their eyes. One of them sneered, “I didn’t think someone would still be able to flee after being marked by the highest kill command of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall.”

“You’re actually Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi of the eight great human experts. You’re outsiders yet you want to try to take the life of a ruler of my Turtle clan. Don’t you want to stay in the sea realm anymore?” The grand elder called out.

Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi laughed together. “We may be outsiders but we’re working for the Heaven’s Spirit Hall. It’s not us who want to kill him this time but the Heaven’s Spirit Hall. The only person you can blame is that ignorant brat for offending the

hall. Die!” Huge, palm-width swords appeared in both their hands. They swung down suddenly, shooting two strands of huge sword Qi at Jian Chen.

Although they had struck out casually, any casual strike from them as Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings possessed the power to destroy the surroundings. The two sword Qi cut through space with powerful ripples of energy and headed directly for Jian Chen.

“I’ll stop them. Ruler, please leave,” cried out the grand elder. His body began to swell quickly, turning into a ten-meter wide turtle that shielded Jian Chen. He used his shell to take on the casual strikes from the two people.

The grand elder of the Turtle clan was of the Fourth Heavenly Layer. He was slightly weaker than Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi but his most terrifying aspect was his defenses. Even when Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings wanted to injure the grand elder, they would need to use all their power.

The grand elder was not injured at all after taking on the two attacks. He threw Jian Chen far away with some might, before turning around to fight the two of them. He wanted to keep them busy to earn some valuable time for Jian Chen.

“Brother, keep him busy. I’ll go kill the target,” Zhou Yunzi said emotionlessly. He immediately began to pummel the grand elder with sharp attacks.

“Alright. I only need a single strike to kill him,” Zhou Tianzi said

confidently, immediately chasing after Jian Chen.

“Don’t you dare injure the ruler. Secret technique of the Turtle clan, World within the Shell!” cried out the grand elder. His shell immediately detached from his body, flying into the air and transforming into a humungous shell in the blink of an eye.

The shell was ten thousand meters wide. It floated in the sky like a storm cloud, causing the surroundings to darken abruptly.

A huge suction force appeared from within the shell. It sucked Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi into it, before the grand elder also disappeared into the shell itself. He seemed to have fused with it.

Boom! Boom! Boom...

Muffled rumbles constantly resounded from within the shell and it began to shake violently in the air. A vast presence could be vaguely felt within the shell before it fell from the sky. It struck the ground heavily, forming a huge crater and kicking up dirt into the air. Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi were currently fighting the grand elder inside the shell. It could be imagined just how intense the battle was.

Jian Chen’s eyes flickered with a certain light as he stared at the shaking shell. He knew that the grand elder was unable to trap Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi for long and that they would break free very soon. He was unable to flee very far in that short amount of time. He was hesitating about whether he should cast God’s Descent to kill off the two of them.

He needed to pay at least a thousand years of his life to kill off two Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings as he was unsure whether the two of them could use Saint Tier Battle Skills or not.

At this moment, a blue light shot toward Jian Chen from afar. A stern light exploded in Jian Chen's eyes as the King Armament appeared in his hand. He directly chopped toward the light with a destructive aura.

However, the blue light directly passed through the King Armament and disappeared into Jian Chen's body. Immediately, he began to shine with a dazzling blue light, while a deep-blue serpent dragon condensed above his head. It opened its large mouth and revealed its sharp teeth.

"The highest kill command of the Serpent God Hall," Xie Wang cried out. His expression was extremely ugly.

The highest kill command of the Serpent God Hall was the same as the highest kill command of the Heaven's Spirit Hall. Not only would it make the target stand out very much, it possessed the ability to seal the target's strength.

Jian Chen's face drained of blood. He did not think that experts from the Serpent God Hall would appear at this moment as well. The situation was turning against him more and more.

Jian Chen immediately devoured the energy of the seal using the Chaotic Force within him. As soon as he had devoured it all, a

figure shot over with lightning speed and a bold aura. Its target was Jian Chen.

A sliver of determination flashed across Jian Chen's eyes. He immediately began to prepare for the casting of God's Descent. He had no other choices now.

Jian Chen formed a seal with his hand before his chest. He raised his head, facing the sky, beginning the process of casting the arte.

“Hahaha, so you're the person marked by the Serpent God Hall's kill command. A mere 14th Star Seasoul Warrior, yet the Serpent God Hall attaches so much importance to you, even getting me, Ling Fengxing, to personally head out. Dying by my hands will make you content even after you arrive in the next world,” Li Fengxing laughed aloud as he radiated with a bold presence.

Li Fengxing noticed that Jian Chen was in the process of casting the God's Descent soon afterward. He produced a soft interjection of surprise and said, “Are you trying to cast a secret technique to flee? How can I let you do that?” Li Fengxing's speed increased abruptly. He arrived before Jian Chen as a blur and directly kicked him in the chest.

Spurt! Jian Chen vomited a mouthful of blood. Charging up the forbidden arte took some time but Li Fengxing did not give him that time at all. His kick had forcefully disrupted Jian Chen's preparations.

Chapter 903: The Grand Elder's Death

Jian Chen shot backward as blood spurted from his mouth. Li Fengxing's kick had already broken several of his ribs, injuring him quite badly.

Jian Chen's heart sank. Now that his forbidden arte had been disrupted, he no longer possessed any methods to threaten Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings. Li Fengxing would never give him more time to cast God's Descent. He did not even have the ability to run anymore from the pursuit of a 16th Star expert.

He would be able to temporarily seek refuge within the saint artifact but if Li Fengxing took the artifact and brought it back to the Serpent God Hall, the situation would become even worse.

"Brat, die!" Li Fengxing laughed aloud with a remorseless expression. He directly struck out with his palm toward Jian Chen, completely looking down on him.

Jian Chen became stern and his eyes narrowed. Suddenly, a towering sword intent began to radiate from his body. In that moment, he seemed to become a divine sword that radiated with a shocking glint. The King Armament appeared in his hand and with a wild jolt of his arm, he stabbed out like a bolt of lightning.

The sword was extremely fast. The ordinarily-looking thrust contained Jian Chen's comprehensions of the path of the sword, which made the ordinary strike seem perfect and flawless.

The King Armament collided with Li Fengxing's palm with a devastating presence. His palm was directly pierced by the weapon, causing blood to flow from the wound immediately.

"Hmm?" Li Fengxing produced a surprised sound. He abruptly clenched his hand that had been stabbed by the King Armament, forcefully trapping the sword in his hand. He gazed at it in surprise.

"This is actually a Saint Weapon left behind by a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King after he passes away," Li Fengxing said in surprise. He paid no attention to the great pain in his hand.

A sliver of light immediately flashed across Jian Chen's eyes when he saw Li Fengxing trap the King Armament. With a thought, devastating Chaotic Force immediately shot out from the weapon, wreaking havoc wildly at Li Fengxing's hand. It caused his wound to constantly enlarge.

This time, Li Fengxing's expression finally changed. He unconsciously opened his hand, staring at the King Armament in shock. "Just what is this power? It's so weird."

Jian Chen took advantage of the situation and pulled back the King Armament. Without any hesitation, he immediately began to move his arm at extreme speeds. The King Armament was thrust out constantly, forming a flock of densely-packed blurs toward Li Fengxing. The blurs were extremely close to one another and overlapped with each other, completely enveloping the space before him.

Jian Chen's fast sword style was displayed to its maximum. In that moment, he stabbed out countless times, while his speed had reached an unbelievable level.

Li Fengxing became momentarily stunned. He stared at the sword blurs and could not help but praise. "Ever strike looks like a blur but it's actually completely solid. Not bad, you are quite fast. If there was any other person of the same cultivation level fighting you, they would die for sure. Too bad the difference of our strength is too great. Just your speed is not enough to deal with me. Freeze, space."

Li Fengxing extended a hand and pointed out with a finger. The wall of sword blurs immediately disappeared. Jian Chen's surroundings had frozen, binding him tightly in the air.

Jian Chen's heart sank. He poured the Chaotic Force in him wildly into the King Armament. The weapon immediately began to radiate with an even more terrifying aura of destruction, causing the surroundings to tremble slightly. It actually forcefully broke through Li Fengxing's frozen space.

Jian Chen rejoiced when he saw how the space frozen by a 16th Star expert had been broken by himself. The power of the King Armament really did not disappoint him. He was actually able to display such strength all by himself. Jian Chen showed no hesitation at all and used all his strength to strike Li Fengxing with his weapon.

“Hmm, you have some ability. You’re actually able to break through my frozen space with your strength of the 14th Star.” Li Fengxing marveled once again as the shock in his eyes thickened. He was the most powerful of the five great magical beast experts, possessing strength of the Sixth Heavenly Layer. He felt rather astonished that Jian Chen could break through his frozen space.

However, a sneer soon formed on his face. “I’m not going to waste time with you anymore. I’ll end your life now and complete the mission early. That way, I can leave a little earlier too. It’s too close to the Sea Goddess Hall here. Kid, I’ll show you my true strength now.” Li Fengxing clenched his hand into a fist as invisible World Force condensed quickly. Controlled by a Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint King, the World Force was much, much greater than what a Saint Ruler could control. It was the same power but the difference was just overwhelmingly large.

“This is a punch with forty percent of my power,” growled Li Fengxing. He punched out and the space ahead distorted greatly.

A mad light appeared in Jian Chen’s eyes. Right now, all he could do was fight for his life. There was no more room for escape. He stabbed out with the King Armament as hard as he could, colliding with Li Fengxing’s fist.

A mouthful of blood spurted from Jian Chen’s mouth, raining down onto the land below. He shot backward like a cannonball and became pale. There was not even a shred of blood remaining in his face. He constantly coughed up blood, as well as pieces of his organs.

Although the strike was only forty percent of Li Fengxing's strength, he was a Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint King after all. It still was not something a Saint Ruler like Jian Chen could block. He had been heavily wounded.

"You're actually still not dead." Li Fengxing stared at Jian Chen who remained hovering in the air. His face was filled with disbelief. He knew the power of his punch very well. It was enough to kill off any Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler.

"Since forty percent of my power is not enough to kill you, let me show you fifty percent," Li Fengxing said coldly.

At this moment, the sky was suddenly covered up by something, causing the surroundings to darken abruptly. Constant muffled sounds rang out from a huge turtle shell as it rocked and flew backward in the sky. Afterward, a powerful suction appeared from it again, sucking Li Fengxing away as well.

A vicious light shone in Li Fengxing's eyes. He roared furiously, "You old turtle. Your shell may be tough but resisting the twins' attacks is your maximum and yet you still want to suck me in too. I'll give you death since you're looking for it. I'll smash your shell."

Li Fengxing's voice became fainter and fainter, before being sucked into the shell.

"Run ruler!" The grand elder's voice resounded from the shell. He huffed and puffed as he spoke, making him seem slightly weak.

He clearly was in quite some pain.

Although the defenses of members of the Turtle clan were great, resisting the attacks from both Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi was already rather difficult for him. He had almost reached his limit.

“Grand elder!” Jian Chen called out. He looked at the turtle shell worriedly. It was already extremely difficult for the grand elder to keep the twins busy. Now with the addition of an even stronger Li Fengxing, it was just making the situation even worse for him.

“Don’t worry about me. Run, ruler,” the grand elder’s voice rang out once again. His voice was filled with anxiety.

Jian Chen stared deeply at the giant shell. He had only known the grand elder for a very short amount of the time, yet he was actually throwing down his life to save him. This touched him deeply. He gritted his teeth before flying off with Xie Wang, hurrying toward the Sea Goddess Hall as fast as he could.

“You old turtle, I’ll make your wish come true since you want to die so much,” Li Fengxing’s roar resounded from within the shell. Shortly afterward, a vast energy began to radiate from the shell, causing the shell to rumble loudly. It was like thunder in the sky, reverberating over hundreds of kilometers away.

The shell trembled violently and a faint crack appeared.

“Old turtle, your shell might be tough but I’d like to see whether

it can resist Saint Tier Battle Skills from the two of us,” Zhou Tianzi’s voice also rang out from within the shell.

Immediately, the wind and clouds of the surroundings began to change. A terrifying presence descended from the sky, filling the entire region. Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi had begun to cast Saint Tier Battle Skills together.

Boom! With a violent rumble, the Saint Tier Battle Skills from the two brothers erupted from within the shell. It struck the shell viciously.

The shell directly shattered in the sky, while the powerful force shot off in all directions. The sky began to rain blood, dyeing the entire space red. A heavy smell of blood pervaded the entire region, while the grand elder’s body had already disappeared.

“Leave, ruler!” A message that originated from the grand elder’s will boomed in the sky, before disappearing.

He had been slain by the Saint Tier Battle Skills cast by Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi simultaneously. Only the will to protect Jian Chen remained, producing a weak sound before it quickly dissipated into the surroundings.

“Grand elder!” Jian Chen cried out sorrowfully. He was torn with grief. He knew the outcome of the grand elder and had also felt the soul of the grand elder disappear. Only his will remained and it was still worrying over his safety.

The blood rain dyed him red. It was the blood of the grand elder.

The grand elder had died to save Jian Chen, dying to Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi's Saint Tier Battle Skills.

Two enormous sword Qi cut through the rain of blood as they descended, heading straight for Jian Chen and Xie Wang. The twins had slashed out toward them from thousands of meters away with their sword, which had completely locked onto their presence.

Two huge fingers shot over from behind Jian Chen at this very moment. It zoomed past Jian Chen and Xie Wang with an unbelievable speed, directly colliding with the two strands of sword Qi.

Chapter 904: Returning To The Turtle Clan

Boom!

With a violent rumble, the fingers completely condensed out of energy collided with the sword Qi shot out by the twins. It immediately erupted with a terrifying residual energy which shook up the surroundings. It caused space to tremble.

The rain of blood had already disappeared, knocked far away by the violent energy. However, the ground below was dyed red, already covered by the blood from the grand elder's death.

“How dare you foreigners! You’ve killed an elder of my Sea Goddess Hall. I will not be letting you go,” an old voice boomed from behind. It was filled with anger, crushing down with a terrifying pressure.

The expressions of the twins and Li Fengxing immediately changed abruptly when they felt the terror of this pressure. Although they could not see the person, they had already understood that he would be far beyond what they could handle.

“The person is at least equal to hall elder.” Li Fengxing became stern. Without any hesitation, he turned around to flee, no longer bothering with Jian Chen.

Every single moment counted when fleeing away from an expert like that. Any hesitation could result in being caught up. At that time, even if they did not die, they would suffer quite a lot. The

hall's mission was very important but their lives held even more importance.

“He's come quite quickly. It's at least a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King or maybe even an expert at Great Perfection. Let's go.” The twins had also become stern, unwilling to stay for even an extra second. They turned around and fled, disappearing into the horizon in the blink of an eye.

Jian Chen was intoxicated by sorrow. He raised his head to look at the blue sky while his face was filled with grief.

The giant turtle shell had already disappeared from the sky and the grand elder's familiar figure was gone too. The only thing that remained without dispersing completely was a will. It was the grand elder's will before death, filled with regret and concern.

The grand elder's soul had been wiped out. Even his corpse did not exist anymore. All that was left was a ground full of blood and countless shattered pieces of palm-sized shell pieces.

“Grand elder,” Jian Chen's voice was filled with sorrow. He had not met the grand elder very long ago but he had sacrificed his life in order to save him. His soul had been dispersed without even leaving behind a corpse. It was a tragic outcome.

What the grand elder had paid was something he was unable to pay back even with his entire life. His soul was lost, without any way of recovering it. Even the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force did not possess the power to revive him.

Although the origin energy could revive the dead, this could only happen if their souls remained and their bodies were in good shape. The grand elder currently fit none of these criteria.

A figure quickly arrived before Jian Chen. He was an old man who seemed to be in his twenties and was the hall elder that had hurried over from the hall. It was elder Hong.

The elder stared at the ground full of blood with a sunken face while killing intent flickered in his eyes. He said coldly, “The Serpent God Hall and the Heaven’s Spirit Hall are becoming bolder and bolder. They actually killed one of our elders. It’s a pity that I’ve come too late.”

Elder Hong floated before Jian Chen. He looked at the sky and gave out a deep sigh. “The grand elder may be dead but he’s unable to truly rest. His will remains.”

Elder Hong grabbed at the empty space. The will that floated around in the surroundings quickly condensed, before forming the grand elder’s hunchbacked figure. He was as faint as a shadow.

“Grand elder,” Jian Chen could not help but cry out when he saw the grand elder’s figure. His voice was filled with grief. He knew that this had only been condensed from the grand elder’s will and would disperse very quickly. It would not exist for very long.

“I’ve been useless, unable to protect my ruler. The thirty thousand year’s of hope for the clan has disappeared.” That was

the message in the grand elder's will. It was his final thought before death, filled with great amounts of regret. That was the reason why it could form a will.

“Don't worry grand elder. I will definitely revive the Turtle clan. This is my oath to you,” Jian Chen said to the grand elder's will. His voice was filled with determination. He needed to fulfill the grand elder's final wish as he had died for him.

The grand elder's will slowly dispersed, disappearing with the wind. From then onward, he had left the world forever.

Jian Chen stared blankly at the empty space, without coming to his senses even after a very long time. A while later, he slowly fell to the ground, picking up every single piece of the scattered shell fragments with trembling hands. This was the only thing the grand elder had left behind. He wanted to treat it as the grand elder's body and bring it back to the clan, before burying it properly.

“Sigh.” Elder Hong sighed deeply as he watched this from the sky. He did not leave and instead stuck around to wait for Jian Chen to collect all the shell pieces.

Xie Wang quickly began to help out too, collecting every single piece of the scattered shell fragments with Jian Chen.

The two of them spent a total of seven days before they picked up all the pieces. Jian Chen stored them in a Space Ring.

“Jian Chen, come back to the hall with me,” elder Hong finally spoke after waiting for seven days.

Jian Chen shook his head gently and said, “No, elder Hong, I don’t want to return for now. I want to go to the Turtle clan to bury the grand elder.”

Elder Hong pondered in silence for a while before replying, “Alright then. I’ll devote some effort into paying attention to the movements of the two other halls in this period of time to prevent them from sending other experts. If you encounter any troubles within the Sea Goddess Hall’s territory, just present the medallion from the hall master.” With that, elder Hong turned around and left.

Jian Chen and Xie Wang also left after elder Hong’s departure. They directly made way for the tribe of the Turtle clan.

The second and third elder were currently discussing something secretive in the Turtle clan. They had cast down a powerful barrier in their surroundings, isolating their voices from outside.

“Second elder, the situation doesn’t seem too great. A ruler of our Turtle clan has actually reappeared after thirty thousand years. That’ll ruin our plans,” the third elder said gruffly.

The second elder nodded sternly. “Problems occurring in the nick of the moment are indeed not beneficial for us. It’s fortunate that this ruler is not strong, so the two of us can suppress him for some time. However, the grand elder has already left with him.

It'll be difficult for us to assassinate him with the grand elder by his side."

"If he does not die, the Turtle clan will end up in his control sooner or later. We need to contact the Taihong clan and get them to follow through with the plan as fast as possible," the third elder said gruffly.

At this very moment, the second elder's expression changed. He waved his hand and canceled the barrier, speaking toward the outside, "Didn't I say to not disturb us unless it's important?"

"Reporting to the second and third elder, the ruler has returned," a heavy voice sounded from outside.

"What? He's come again?" Both of their expressions changed slightly as they looked at each other before walking out in unison.

Currently, Jian Chen stood emotionlessly in the huge, central square of the tribe as he held a Space Ring. Xie Wang stood to his side, a step away, observing the surroundings cautiously.

Around the two of them had already gathered a great group of people. There were so many, to the point where it boxed them in. They were all members of the Turtle clan and they all looked toward Jian Chen. Their faces were filled with doubt or excitement but no one held any hostility.

"I feel a weird pressure from him. It seems to be the Ruler's Qi. Is

he really a ruler?”

“Is he really a ruler of our Turtle clan?” The ruler of our clan has finally returned...”

“Thirty thousand years, a whole thirty thousand years. We’ve finally waited up till the appearance of the ruler...”

“It’s time for us to regain our former glory...”

The surrounding clansmen all discussed excitedly or with mixed emotions. A few of the older members had even been moved to tears.

“The second and third elder have arrived.” A loud voice sounded from the crowd. All the people shuffled as they formed a path. The two elders walked in from outside with long strides, while a group of Saint Rulers followed behind them.

“Why have you returned? Where’s the grand elder?” The second elder stared directly at Jian Chen. His tone was not very kind.

“The grand elder’s dead.” Jian Chen’s voice was extremely heavy.

The two elders became stunned at the same time. They asked in disbelief, “What did you say? The grand elder’s dead?”

The surrounding clansmen broke into an uproar when they heard that. They all revealed expressions of disbelief.

Jian Chen said nothing, passing over the Space Ring in his hand to the second elder carefully. The second elder accepted the ring with suspicion and looked through it. The moment he saw what was inside, his expression changed greatly, now replaced with sorrow.

The third elder seemed to realize something when he saw the second elder's change in expression. He immediately became stern, snatching the Space Ring from the second elder's hands to look through it. He then became filled with grief as well.

"Just how did the grand elder die?" The third elder asked sorrowfully.

"The grand elder was killed by Li Fengxing of the Serpent God Hall and Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi of the Heaven's Spirit Hall to save me," Jian Chen said with a deep voice.

"What! So you were the one who was responsible for his death?!" The second elder became furious, yelling at Jian Chen as he pointed a finger at him.

"I was responsible for the grand elder's death. But it has already happened. We should give him a proper burial," said Jian Chen.

The two elders looked at each other and said nothing. They

immediately began to hold a dignified funeral for the grand elder.

Soon afterward, the news of the death of the Turtle clan's grand elder was spread everywhere. It caused quite a large disturbance in the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall. After all, the grand elder was a 15th Star expert, as well as an elder of the Sea Goddess Hall. His death was an extremely disturbing piece of news.

Hundreds of thousands of kilometers away from the Turtle clan, three middle-aged men sat with their legs crossed in a grand and extravagant castle.

“We’ve just received the news that the grand elder of the Turtle clan has died. There’s no one to stop us now. Send the order down, prepare for action.” A blue-robed, long-haired man said gruffly.

“The grand elder may be dead but a ruler has actually appeared from the Turtle clan. Fortunately, he’s not very strong so he can’t stop us. However, it’s for the best if our clan, the Taihong clan moves quick. We can’t give the ruler time for growth.” This time, the speaker was a black-robed, skinny man.

Chapter 905: The Taihong Clan

“The Turtle clan is still dealing with the grand elder’s funeral. We’ll head over after the funeral. That way, it’ll be even easier for us to annex them.” The final man had also spoken.

Another great piece of news spread throughout the entire sea realm as the grand elder’s funeral was held. The eight fragments of the Octoterra Map had all appeared and the eight pieces would be united as one in a year’s time where all three territories bordered one another. They would go on a search for the Octoterra Divine Hall.

A huge commotion erupted in the sea realm since the Octoterra Divine Hall was about to appear. The divine hall had been left behind by the Octoterra Emperor near the end of his life. It was rumored that he went without disciples and always moved alone. As such, he had left his legacy and all his wealth in the divine hall. Afterward, he used a great ability as an emperor to hide the hall somewhere that no one could find. Only through the eight map fragments he left behind could the exact location be found.

The Sea Goddess Hall’s territory immediately began to churn secretly with the news of the map fragments. Many large organizations and clans began to make their intense preparations, pouring all their efforts into the clansmen that were at the peak of the Ninth Heavenly Layer. They increased their strength as much as they could, before sending them to the Sea Goddess Hall in hopes of earning a place to enter the Octoterra Divine Hall.

Many large organizations fought extremely hard over these

opportunities. They basically used all the connections they had and many clans had even offered up invaluable treasures to hall elders, all for the hope that the hall elders could give one place to their clan.

This was because only through entering the hall did people have a chance of obtaining the Octoterra Emperor's legacy. This was a great treasure that could not be bought with money, attracting all the experts in the sea realm. It made countless people green with envy. Other than the legacy, there were also chances of obtaining the emperor's treasures placed within the divine hall. All the treasures collected by the emperor would definitely be extraordinary and invaluable.

The entire Turtle clan was still filled with deep sorrow as they were still holding the grand elder's funeral.

All the people of the clan were heavy-hearted. The grand elder was the strongest person of their clan. With his departure, the clan's strength would weaken once more, growing further and further away from how it was like before.

“Eight map fragments brought together in a year, the opening of the Octoterra Divine Hall.” Jian Chen had also learned of this news as he participated in the grand elder's funeral. He immediately clenched his fists tightly. “I definitely need to go into the Octoterra Divine Hall. I hope whatever is inside doesn't disappoint me. Once I become powerful enough, I'll kill my way through to the Heaven's Spirit Hall and Serpent God Hall personally. I'll personally slaughter Li Fengxing, Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi to avenge the grand elder.” A sliver of powerful killing intent flashed

through his eyes.

The grand elder's funeral took seven whole days before coming to a close. However, the clan did not quieten down afterward as a result. As soon as the funeral had ended, more than ten experts arrived at the clan threateningly. They floated high up in the sky, gazing coldly at all the Turtle clan members from above.

A Saint Ruler said with a loud, clear voice, "We are the people of the Taihong clan. All of you listen up. From today onward, your Turtle clan will be controlled by us, the Taihong clan. You will become part of us. If there is anyone who disagrees," as he spoke, he pointed out and a powerful energy immediately shot from his fingertip, striking a huge rock below. With a boom, the rock shattered in all directions. He then continued, "Do you see that? If anyone disagrees, that'll be your outcome."

The Turtle clan immediately became silent. Shortly afterward, all the clan members stared at the people in the air and started crying out angrily.

"Their Tiahong clan actually wants to annex us..."

"How dare they. When we were powerful before, the Taihong clan didn't even exist..."

"It's wishful thinking if you want our clan to become a subsidiary of yours..."

“We’d rather die than follow you. We’d rather have the ground dyed with our blood than bow down to your Taihong clan...”

“Right, I’d rather die than follow them. Even if I die here, I’ll make the Taihong clan pay a heavy price...”

Each and every member of the clan was aggravated. None of them acted cowardly. The Turtle clan may have declined now but its former glory could not be dirtied.

The second and third elder looked at each other before rising up into the air in unison. They faced the people of the Taihong clan together, radiating with a powerful presence.

All the members of the clan quieted down immediately as they saw the two strongest experts of the clan head out.

“Taihong clan, you’re daydreaming if you want to annex our clan. You better leave. We will not be bowing down before anybody,” growled the second elder.

“Right, we’re not going to be bowing down to anyone.” People immediately agreed from below.

Of the dozen or so people from the Taihong clan, the leading middle-aged man sneered, “Does your Turtle clan really want rivers of blood? With the strength of our Taihong clan, we can easily wipe you out. Aren’t you going to consider for the clan as the second elder?” This middle-aged man was the ancestor of the

Taihong clan. He was called Tai Dou and was also the most powerful member of the clan. He was a Saint King of the Fifth Heavenly Layer.

The second elder pondered quietly before continuing, “If you can defeat the third elder and I all by yourself, then we, the Turtle clan, will bow down to your Taihong clan temporarily.”

Tai Dou laughed aloud. “Alright, I’ll fight the two of you. Perfect opportunity for me to see just how powerful the defenses of your Turtle clan is like,” Tai Dou turned around and flew off into the distance as he said that.

The two elder looked at each other and followed Tai Dou without saying anything. Just the residual energy from battles between Saint Kings could flatten the ground completely. If they fought above the clan, it would be a catastrophe. That was why they moved to an empty area several hundred kilometers away.

All the Saint Rulers within the Turtle clan followed along. Only Jian Chen and Xie Wang remained.

“Do you want to go have a look?” Xie Wang asked.

Jian Chen shook his head and said calmly, “No, because the outcome has already been determined.”

A violent boom reverberated from several hundred kilometers away and the vast energy wreaked havoc in the surroundings. It

caused the sky and the ground to undergo changes; the two Saint Kings of the Turtle clan had already begun their battle with the ancestor of the Taihong clan.

Each and every member of the Turtle clan stared anxiously at the battle that had erupted far away. Although they could not see the exact details of the battle, the outcome would determine the clan's fate. As a result, everyone paid great attention to it.

The fight did not last for very long. The two elders of the Turtle clan flew over pale-faced very soon. They were in a horrible shape, with residual blood at their mouths. The Saint Rulers of the Turtle clan that had followed them to watch the battle were all dejected and down.

The two elders arrived back at the clan and said dejectedly, "We've lost."

The entire clan fell into a silence at that very moment. All the clansmen felt extremely heavy-hearted. The second and third elder were the strongest people in the Turtle clan. If they could not beat the ancestor of the Taihong clan when working together, then there was no more hope left for them.

The group of people from the Taihong clan also flew over from afar. The Taihong clan ancestor was joyful as he led the group, laughing aloud. "According to the agreement from before, your Turtle clan will now become a tribe of my Taihong clan. We are in control now."

“Second elder, third elder, we can never bow down. Why don’t we just offer up a great price to recruit some experts to help out our tribe,” growled a Saint Ruler of the Turtle clan. He was unwilling to give in.

“Yeah, we’ll put up a great price to invite experts.” Many people repeated this in agreement immediately.

“Shut up,” the third elder was sunken-faced as he said, “Do you think it’s really that easy to recruit experts who can fend off the Taihong clan? And we had an agreement earlier. Do you really want the Turtle clan to go down as liars?”

“The third elder is right. We cannot be liars.” The second elder also spoke his mind, before looking at the ancestor of the Taihong clan. “Taihong clan, you’ve won. From today onward, our Turtle clan will become a part of your Taihong...”

“Wait!” Before the second elder could finish speaking, a sudden voice cut him off. Jian Chen strode over from afar and said with a loud, clear voice, “I am the ruler of the Turtle clan, so I have the right to participate in all matters regarding the clan. I shall now declare as the ruler that we, the Turtle clan, will never become a part of the Taihong clan.”

Jian Chen never wanted to be the ruler of the Turtle clan but he needed to complete the grand elder’s final wish as he had died for him. He had to take on the heavy responsibility of reviving the Turtle clan and returning it to its former glory.

The faces of the second and third elder both darkened. The second elder glared at Jian Chen as he yelled, “Even if I ignore the fact that you haven’t formally become the ruler of the clan yet, just your decision is enough to destroy the entire clan.”

“The grand elder already died because of you. Do you want the entire clan to go down as well?” The third elder also spoke up. He was very rude.

Jian Chen paid no attention to the two elders’ retorts and glanced at the surrounding clansmen. He said loudly, “Does everyone support my idea or the two elders’ idea?”

“To think that we were once so glorious. We may have declined but we will never bow down to others. I support the ruler...”

“Only under the lead of the ruler can our clan regain our glory. For the future of the Turtle clan, I support all the decisions made by the ruler...”

Chapter 906: Five Year's Agreement

“We support all the decisions of the ruler...”

“We support all the decisions of the ruler...”

The members of the Turtle clan all began to chant, growing louder and clearer each time. In the end, almost all the clansmen began to participate in the chanting, showing their support for the ruler's decision.

The second and third elder both became extremely ugly. They had never thought that the situation would develop in such a direction. This was not what they had wished to see at all.

“We've underestimated the ruler's status in the ordinary clansmen's hearts. He's completely exceeded us to them,” the third elder sent a mental message to the second elder. His voice was gruff.

The second elder nodded slowly, remaining silent while his darkened face.

The past glory of the clan had all been brought on by rulers. At their very peak, the clan had a total of four rulers at the same time and every single one of them was equivalent to a hall elder. They were one of the few superpowers within the sea realm. As the rulers disappeared, fewer and fewer appeared. That was the cause behind the decline of the clan, making it weaken with each generation.

It had already been thirty thousand years since a ruler had last appeared in the clan. It caused them to decline from their glorious past to today. They would soon become a second-rate clan that did not even have 15th Star Seasoul Warriors or even a third-rate clan; their status was teetering. Not to mention the fact that the clan now faced the threat of being annexed by the Taihong clan, they had almost fallen into despair. As a result, the reappearance of a ruler garnered the support of many clansmen, which even made many people believe that this would be the end of their declining days. They thought that the ruler would lead them on the path to glory once again.

The members of the Taihong clan all bore extremely ugly expressions, while the ancestor's face became as dark as a storm cloud. He had already used items that tempted the second and third elder to bribe them; annexing the turtle clan was also something he had already planned with the two of them long ago. It was supposed to proceed very smoothly, yet a nobody had appeared out of who knows where and destroyed it all just as it was about to succeed. It made him absolutely furious.

“Hmph, since the ruler refuses to become a part of our Taihong clan, we can only take action against you. After I capture you, I wonder if your Turtle clan will submit or not,” growled the ancestor. Afterward, he arrived before Jian Chen with a flash, directly extending a hand out to grab him.

Jian Chen remained calm. He pulled out a medallion from his Space Ring and placed it before him. He said, “Have a look at this.”

The ancestor's hand forcefully stopped a meter away from Jian Chen's throat. He stared fixedly at the medallion in Jian Chen's hand while he revealed a doubtful expression. However, his expression changed abruptly in the next moment. He backpedaled several steps, now filled with shock and disbelief.

"H-h- h-h- h-hall..." The ancestor produced a frightened cry. He had already paled. He was unable to say the second word of 'hall master' no matter what, as if it had been lodged in his throat.

All the people in the surroundings became suspicious when they saw the ancestor react in such a way. Even the second and third elders were not exempted from this and they extended their necks to examine Jian Chen's medallion curiously.

"Do you recognize this?" Jian Chen raised the medallion and asked expressionlessly.

The ancestor of the Taihong clan was still a Saint King after all, so he calmed down very quickly. He sucked in a deep breath, still badly shaken as he stared at the medallion and said, "Why do you have this medallion?" This time, the ancestor's gaze toward Jian Chen had completely changed.

"I think you already know why I have this medallion. Do you dare to touch me now?" Jian Chen said coldly.

Deep fear appeared in the ancestor's eyes. He took a few steps back slowly as the light in his eyes flickered uneasily. After some hesitation, he said, "You may be a part of the hall and possess quite

an impressive status in it but this is still a battle between clans. The hall will not interfere with these matters.”

Jian Chen frowned slightly as he heard this but he did not say anything.

The ancestor continued, “I’ll give you five year’s time because of this medallion. After those five years, my clan will come again. At that time, it’ll be useless even if you pull out that medallion.”

Jian Chen put the medallion away and said coldly, “Then let it be five years. I’ll fight you as the ruler of the Turtle clan in five years. If I lose, then the Turtle clan will temporarily bow down to you. But if I win, your Taihong clan will belong to the Turtle clan.”

Jian Chen’s words immediately caused a great commotion in the surroundings. A few experts could already roughly feel Jian Chen’s strength. He definitely was not a 15th Star Seasoul warrior and he definitely could not increase his strength by a lot in those short five years. They wondered just how Jian Chen would fight with the ancestor who was of the 16th Star in five years.

The two elders of the Turtle clan secretly rejoiced. They did not believe that Jian Chen could become a 15th Star expert in five years at all.

“Alright, I’ll fight you in five years,” the ancestor said with the same expression. However, he secretly rejoiced. As a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King, he had completely seen through Jian Chen’s strength. He refused to believe that Jian Chen could raise

his strength to a level where he would be able to fight him in five years.

As the people of the Taihong clan left, the Turtle clan cheered in jubilation. A few clansmen who did not know about his strength really did believe that their ruler had the strength to fight a 16th Star expert. They all cheered, “Long live the ruler, long live the ruler.”

Jian Chen calmed down everyone below, before slowly scanning past the second and third elder and the Saint Rulers behind them with narrowed eyes. He said loudly, “Is there anyone else who’s unhappy with me inheriting the position as ruler?”

“We pay respects to the ruler!”

Earth-shaking cries immediately began to reverberate from the surroundings. In the blink of an eye, the area became a black mass as the ordinary clan members all bowed down. Only the two elders and the Saint Rulers remained standing.

Jian Chen said nothing. He stared calmly at them with a sharp gaze. His eyes were like two drawn swords.

“We pay respects to the ruler.” This lasted for some time, before half of the Saint Rulers also bowed down. They accepted Jian Chen’s status. Only the other half of the Saint Rulers and the two elders remained standing.

The two elders revealed ugly expressions. Their faces darkened very much, while the Saint Rulers who were still standing behind them looked toward the two of them. The elders clearly had power over them.

“Hmph, let’s go,” snorted the second elder. He turned around and left. The third elder and the Saint Rulers that followed them did not stick around for much longer either, following him away.

The two elders understood that they could do nothing now that the situation had developed like this. The ruler had already won the support of the entire clan, so even if they questioned the ruler’s identity, it was useless. This was all because Jian Chen’s Ruler’s Qi was the real thing. It was not a forgery and even the ordinary clansmen could feel it clearly.

As everything had developed like this, nothing could stop Jian Chen from inheriting the position as ruler in the clan.

After successfully inheriting the position, Jian Chen settled down in the Turtle clan. He devoted all his efforts into cultivation, hoping to break through the second layer of the Chaotic Body within five years. If he did so, he would have the power to battle a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King with his King Armament.

The news about a ruler reappearing in the Turtle clan spread very quickly. For some time, all the second-rate organizations in the surroundings all paid visits to them with rich gifts to congratulate the clan but all these miscellaneous matters were delegated to other people by Jian Chen. He did not appear at all, remaining in the beautifully decorated hall to cultivate.

The next day, hall elder Hong went to the Turtle clan in search of Jian Chen. When Jian Chen learned that the elder had come personally, he immediately stopped cultivating and received the hall elder in the hall.

“Jian Chen, is the final fragment of the Octoterra Map on you?” Elder Hong cut straight to the point and asked straightforwardly.

“Correct, I am indeed in possession of a map fragment. Has elder Hong come today specifically for this matter?” asked Jian Chen.

Elder Hong nodded with a smile. “I have indeed come because of that today. Jian Chen, the Octoterra Divine Hall will be opening in a year and only people below the 15th Star can enter. Each map fragment can permit twenty people to enter, so a total of a hundred and sixty people will be entering from the eight pieces. I’ve come today to ask you for ten of the chances. Is that fine with you?”

“That’s fine, of course that’s fine.” Jian Chen agreed without any hesitation. He only had three people that needed to enter, so he had no use for all the chances to permit people in. The Sea Goddess Hall had even saved his life after all.

Elder Hong did not stay for much longer, leaving the clan very quickly. With the elder’s departure, Jian Chen also continued his cultivation, pouring his energy into powering up. In order to revive the Turtle clan, he needed to be strong enough. Only power could determine everything.

Without him noticing, Jian Chen had already stayed in the sea realm for over a month. In the Changyang clan of Lore City on the distant Tian Yuan Continent, a tower several hundred meters in height had appeared. From the very top of the tower, one could see a large portion of the city.

The appearance of the tower in the Changyang clan had caused quite a large disturbance in the city as it had not been built up slowly. It had appeared overnight instead, as if it had just grown out from the ground.

Changyang Zu Yeyun current sat by a window in her white dress at the very top of the tower. She stared blankly in the direction of the Changyang clan's main entrance, while her gaze was sorrowful. She would sit there almost every day, sitting for several days and nights every time this happened. She was unmoving like a piece of wood, completely petrified.

"Sigh," a long sigh sounded from behind her. Changyang Zu Yunxiao slowly walked up to the window in a similar white robe, gazing at the misty-white sky in sorrow as well. He said, "It's getting closer and closer to the day where Kong'er meets the end of his life. The seal is still present in his head, so he'll never be able to become a Saint Ruler. I wonder where Kong'er is currently. Is he still alive? Can we ever see him again?"

Chapter 907: Return of the Changyang Clan Ancestor

Currently, an old man flew in the sky several hundred kilometers away from Lore City. He traveled extremely fast, utilizing Spatial Force as he fused with the surrounding space. He traveled several kilometers in the blink of an eye.

“Gesun Kingdom, I’ve returned. Lore City, I’ve returned. Changyang clan, I wonder if you still remember your ancestor after so many years,” said the old man with a sigh as he flew. He was Changyang Zu Yunkong, who had just returned. He was the founder of the Changyang clan, known as the Changyang clan ancestor by people.

Changyang Zu Yunkong traveled directly for the Tian Yuan Continent after he had initially left Three Saint Island. He spent over a month traveling, covering several millions of kilometers before he finally returned to the Tian Yuan Continent.

Once upon a time, Changyang Zu Yunkong believed that he would never be able to return to the continent ever again. As a result, he was extremely excited as well as strewn between emotions when he returned this time.

Finally, he could vaguely see Lore City up ahead. As he saw the huge city walls, Changyang Zu Yunkong’s excitement peaked.

“Argh!” Changyang Zu Yunkong roared out as he was unable to suppress his emotions. His voice was thunderous, echoing in the

surroundings and spreading far off into the distance. He seemed to be venting all the steam he had gathered throughout the years. Afterward, he shot toward the Changyang clan like an arrow as he radiated with a vast presence.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yeyun currently gazed down at the flourishing clan from the window of the tower. Suddenly, Changyang Zu Yunxiao's eyes narrowed and he gently raised his head to stare into the distance. He could feel the presence of a Saint Ruler rapidly approaching the area but he paid no mind to it.

“As long as he doesn't cause trouble in the city, then let him be,” thought Changyang Zu Yunxiao. They protected the Changyang clan and since the clan was in Lore City, they had vaguely become the protector gods of the city, which even made the kingdom's status increase greatly.

“I've already successfully become a Saint Ruler. I've gained another two millennia of life. I wonder if my parents are still fine. I need to pay a visit to the protector clan to see them sometime in the future. Though I wonder if they still can recognize me as I am right now.” Many thoughts swam through Changyang Zu Yunkong's head as he flew. He felt conflicted, scattered among many emotions.

Changyang Zu Yunkong boldly made his way into the city, slowly flying toward the bare center of the Changyang clan and landing there.

“The current Changyang clan is indeed much more powerful

than before. All of this is because of my talented grandson.” Changyang Zu Yunkong constantly looked around the rebuilt clan. He was filled with excitement that he struggled to hide.

“How audacious! Who are you!? You haven’t entered through the main entrance! Don’t you know the rules of our Changyang clan?” A large group of guards immediately moved in unison and surrounded him as soon as he landed in the open space. They all wrapped around him aggressively. All their faces were cold.

Changyang Zu Yunkong could not help but smile when he realized the quality of the guards. The guards were much better than before, both in terms of teamwork and strength. Among them, he had even discovered a few Earth Saint Masters. The guards were never this powerful before.

Just as Changyang Zu Yunkong was about to speak, his surroundings froze abruptly. It bound him tightly, even removing his ability to talk.

As he was shocked, a white-robed, middle-aged man floated down gently from the tower. He was Changyang Zu Yunxiao.

Changyang Zu Yunkong immediately became stunned the moment he saw Changyang Zu Yunxiao. His eyes were filled with disbelief as well as intense excitement. Although so many years had passed, Changyang Zu Yunxiao’s appearance had not changed at all. Changyang Zu Yunkong recognized him at first glance.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao stared at the old man who had trespassed

the clan in such a bold fashion and could not help but frown slightly. He felt an extremely familiar feeling from this old man, as if he had seen him somewhere before. However, he was willing to swear that he had never met this old man.

“No one is allowed to trespass the Changyang clan. Leave immediately and come through the main entrance or don’t blame me for being impolite,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao said normally as he suppressed the suspicions in his heart. However, just as he wanted to wave his hand and send the familiar old man out, uncle Chang flashed past all the guards in his caretaker’s attire, directly arriving before the trapped Changyang Zu Yunkong.

Uncle Chang stared blankly at Changyang Zu Yunkong. His old face instantly became flooded with emotion as he said with a trembling voice, “Master, master, you’ve finally returned, you’ve finally returned.” Two streaks of turbid tears rolled uncontrollably down his cheeks, before he suddenly fell to his knees. He knelt as he said emotionally, “Master, you’ve finally returned.”

The surrounding guards were all stunned by this. They looked at each other with emotions of astonishment. Uncle Chang was currently the oldest member of the clan; although he was not the patriarch, even the patriarch needed to treat him politely. Yet uncle Chang was now actually referring to an old man they had never met in such a way. It made them all tongue-tied.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao’s complexion changed suddenly. His heart tossed and turned, extremely moved. He stared at the old man who had trespassed the clan in disbelief as he said with a trembling voice, “Y-y- you’re-you’re-you’re Kong’er?” Changyang

Zu Yunxiao had already released Changyang Zu Yunlong from the bindings as he said that, allowing Changyang Zu Yunkong to regain control over his body.

The white-dressed, elegant Changyang Zu Yeyun also descended from the sky quickly. She stared blankly at Changyang Zu Yunkong's old appearance. She too was filled with emotion and disbelief.

"Y-you're Kong'er? Are you really Kong'er?" Changyang Zu Yeyun said with a trembling voice. Two streaks of emotional tears rolled from her eyes. She was overwhelmed with disbelief.

When Changyang Zu Yunkong had first left the protector clan, he still had the appearance of a man in his twenties. That face had been burned deeply into the couple's minds, making them unable to ever forget it. However, now that they had met again, Changyang Zu Yunkong had become a wrinkly old man. It completely overthrew what the couple had anticipated, almost causing them to fail to recognize him.

Changyang Zu Yunkong stared back at Changyang Zu Yeyun and Changyang Zu Yunxiao with mixed emotions. He fell to his knees and said with a trembling voice, "Father, mother, Kong'er has been a horrible son. I have made the two of you worry."

"Kong'er, Kong'er, it really is you." Confirming his identity, Changyang Zu Yeyun could no longer suppress her emotions. She shot toward him like an arrow, embracing him tightly.

“Kong’er, Kong’er. My child, you’ve finally returned. Mother missed you so much. Mother had even believed that she would never see you again.” Changyang Zu Yeyun choked with sobs. The joy and other emotions in her heart had completely overwhelmed her.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao who stood to one side also began to weep. He was extremely moved as he mumbled, “As long as you’ve returned. As long as you’ve returned. It has been so tough on you these years, Kong’er.”

“Master, you’ve finally returned. This old servant thought he would never be able to see you again,” uncle Chang said emotionally.

The surrounding guards all watched on in complete astonishment. Quickly, a few smart guard captains guessed Changyang Zu Yunkong’s identity and immediately bowed down. They cried out, “We greet the old patriarch.”

“We greet the old patriarch!” The other guards all returned to their senses and bowed down too.

Afterward, all the elders and important members of the clan hurried over after receiving the news. They all came to pay their respect to the ancestor’s return.

“Kong’er, wasn’t there a seal in your mind that prevented you from becoming a Saint Ruler? W-why have you now become a Saint Ruler?” Changyang Zu Yunxiao asked as the three of them

calmed down. He was filled with doubt.

Changyang Zu Yeyun had also noticed this and immediately revealed an expression of astonishment. She said, “Kong’er, you’ve actually become a Saint Ruler. Perhaps the seal in your head has been undone?”

Changyang Zu Yunkong thought of Jian Chen the moment they brought this up. He immediately revealed a joyful smile and said, “Father, mother, the reason why I could become a Saint Ruler was all because of a great grandson by the name of Changyang Xiangtian. He risked his life to enter the depths of the Fantasy Star Ocean and obtained a stalk of hundred-thousand-year Dragon’s Saliva. The grasses’ power suppressed the seal, allowing me to finally become a Saint Ruler.”

“Changyang Xiangtian. It’s actually him,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yeyun both mumbled gently. They both revealed happy smiles, before taking their son into the tower with them.

A barrier was personally cast down by Changyang Zu Yunxiao around the tower, restricting any sounds from spreading to the outside. Inside, the three of them conversed for a whole day. In that time, Changyang Zu Yunkong told them everything that had happened since he left the protector clan, and also learned about the most recent matters that had happened on the continent from his parents in detail. That included the matter regarding his great grandson, Changyang Xiangtian, and the Winged Tiger God.

Even with Changyang Zu Yunkong’s temperament, he struggled

to stay calm after learning everything. He could not help but suck in a breath, quickly beginning to worry about the safety of his grandson. After all, the people searching for him were the ten most ancient protector clans of the continent.

“Xiangtian, that child is currently in the sea realm. Kong’er, you don’t need to worry about his safety for now. At least Saint Kings can’t enter the sea realm. He should be relatively safe hiding there,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao comforted him as soon as he noticed Changyang Zu Yunkong’s anxiety.

The return of the Changyang clan ancestor caused the clan to celebrate jubilantly. In the morning of the very next day, the king hurried over impatiently after receiving the news. He had come to pay respects to the Changyang clan ancestor. However, when he arrived at the clan, Changyang Zu Yunkong had already left the kingdom with his parents. They went to the protector clan to get the great elders to remove the seal in his head.

Chapter 908: Bi Jian's Calculations

At the same time, in a concealed basement that was several hundred meters under the Huanggu clan, hidden in an ancient forest. Several fist-sized luminous pearls were lodged in the roof of the basement, which added some light to the dark room as they shone hazily.

Currently, a girl in yellow robes sat on the ground as she cultivated. She was a beautiful, possessing a face of devastating beauty. She currently sat in the center of the room like a sculpture as powerful and pure strands of water-attributed energy radiated from her body. It caused the entire room to be permeated with a hazy mist and tiny water droplets had condensed on the surrounding walls.

She was Huang Luan. She had been taken here as the disciple-in-name of the ancestor of the Huanggu clan quite some time ago, devoting her efforts to cultivation in this room ever since she had arrived.

At this very moment, the door of the room slowly opened. A simply-dressed old man walked in. His appearance was ordinary but his eyes shone with vigor. His gaze toward Huang Luan hid a sliver of greed and coveting in its very depths.

Huang Luan slowly opened her eyes, looking with spirited eyes toward the old man that had walked in from outside. She slowly stood up, before clasping her hands at the old man. "Master!"

This old man was the ancestor of the Huanggu clan. He stared at her with a smile and said gently, “Disciple, how has your cultivation been proceeding?”

“I thank master for his concern. This Scripture of the Aqua Sunflower suits this disciple very much. In just such a short period of cultivation, my strength has increased greatly. However, since disciple’s Saint Force is water-attributed, disciple’s speed of cultivation should increase drastically if disciple cultivates in a place where water-attributed energy of the world is rich. I hope master can let disciple go out to find a perfect place for cultivation,” said Huang Luan. Her voice was filled with spirit, like the call of a lark. It was extremely pleasant.

The ancestor smiled and said, “Disciple, you need to remember that everything must proceed with at a gradual pace. Your speed of cultivation is already extremely fast, so you must not continue with undue haste. Otherwise, it might destroy your foundations. You should stay here to cultivate in this period of time, to prevent the outside world from disturbing you.”

“Master...” Huang Luan wanted to say something but she was cut off as soon as she opened her mouth.

“Alright, disciple, I won’t disturb you any further. Cultivate well. I hope you can reach Saint Ruler at an earlier time.” With that, the ancestor left.

The doors to the basement closed up once again, leaving Huang Luan to stand alone in the center of the dark room. Suddenly, a book appeared in her hand. She casually flipped through it and

murmured, “Why doesn’t master give me the entirety of the Scripture of the Aqua Sunflower? He’s only given me a small part of the very start.” Huang Luan looked around at the surroundings and a light flickered in her eyes. She could acutely sense that the surroundings had been enveloped by a barrier. The barrier was completely submerged into the soil, so it could not be seen at all. If she wanted to break it, she would need to break through the layer of soil first.

“This barrier was cast down by master to protect this room from any external disturbances. But...” Huang Luan pondered in her heart. She seemed rather confused.

However, she dismissed these notions very quickly. She sat down in the room again and thought, “I’m currently a Fifth Cycle Earth Saint Master. I should reach the Sixth Cycle soon with this current speed, before reaching Heaven Saint Master. I need to cultivate hard in the upcoming period of time and reach Saint Ruler quickly. Only then can I help Jian Chen.”

With a thought, her face darkened. Jian Chen’s resolute, handsome face flashed through her head as she began to yearn for him deeply. “Jian Chen, the entire continent is searching for you right now. Where are you? It must be very tough these days.”

...

A hundred thousand kilometers away from the Gesun Kingdom, several tens of thousands of people busied themselves with building the city at the base of the Flame Mercenaries. After these years of construction, the city that was completely made of

tungsten alloy for the mercenaries was already three quarters complete. The city walls were already over seventy meters in height. Although the city was incomplete, it already possessed a mighty presence.

The current mercenaries were extremely influential. They had become the most powerful organization in a radius of several hundred thousand kilometers. Even the hermit clans did not dare to provoke them over small matters as they had two Saint Rulers guarding them. With their connection to the Changyang clan, it even made ancient clans fear them.

Currently, the mercenaries had already grown to over three hundred thousand people in number. Although they could not be compared to the army of any small kingdom, they were undoubtedly the strongest. Every single member of the mercenaries possessed quite some strength and any one of them completely exceeded any soldier of those kingdoms. The number of Earth Saint Masters they now possessed reached the hundreds, with forty-odd Heaven Saint Rulers. They were the supreme rulers of the region.

You Yue and Bi Lian currently conversed in boredom in the palace that had already been repaired.

The Flame Mercenaries had embarked on the right path with constant hard work over these years. In the recent period, the two of them had already delegated many matters to people below, only dealing with a few large, troublesome things when they appeared. As a result, their lives were now extremely relaxing, no longer as tiresome as before.

“I wonder where brother is right now and when I’ll be able to see him,” said Bi Lian with a sigh as she sat at the table. A sliver of reminiscence appeared on her face.

You Yue also revealed a vague sliver of distress and loneliness when she heard that, she also sighed. “I hope he can return safely. I will always wait here for him and help him manage the foundation of the mercenaries he had laid down. The Flame Mercenaries is his. He was once here.”

“Sister You Yue, when brother sees how grand the mercenaries has become now, he’ll definitely be ecstatic. For the captain of the mercenaries, you’ve done too much, too, too much,” Bi Lian said sweetly.

You Yue revealed a sweet smile and said nothing. However, as she stared at the hazy sky outside, there was a sliver of sorrow hidden in the very depths of her eyes.

“I was rejected by you not just once with similar reasons. Now, I finally can understand your pains. Before, you seemed to be so glorious, yet you endured such great pressures secretly. I wonder whether you’ll marry me after you return and deal with everything...”

“I know that this marriage was set down by father all those years ago. Maybe I’ve never even formed an impression in your heart. I might just seem more like an ordinary friend to you but you know, Jian Chen, your figure has already appeared in my heart. I can’t

cast it away no matter what...”

Several kilometers away from Flame City, over ten middle-aged men on Class 5 Magical Beasts stood in a straight line. They gazed at the city from afar on a mountain.

“The Flame Mercenaries sure are extravagant to build a city completely out of tungsten alloy. Just the city itself is an invaluable treasure of the continent,” said a blue-robed, burly, middle-aged man with a sigh.

“If another organization obtained this much tungsten alloy, they’d probably struggle to hide it. Only the Flame Mercenaries dare to act so fearlessly, boldly using it to build a city.” A middle-aged man with flame-red hair also sighed. His eyes were filled with envy.

The middle-aged man who seemed to be in his twenties smiled weirdly and said, “Everyone, the reason why I have called you all here over such long distances is not going to be as simple as just viewing Flame City.”

The middle-aged men beside him all looked at each other when they heard that. Afterward, one of them clasped his hands at the young man and asked politely, “Perhaps prince Bi Jian has other intentions for calling us over?”

“Indeed, I do have other intentions. I wonder if everyone has ever thought about taking the city made completely out of tungsten alloy?” A cold smile formed on Bi Jian’s face.

The expressions of the men all changed abruptly when they heard that. Someone said immediately, “Prince Bi Jian, don’t you know about the Flame Mercenary’s backing? Our mercenary group may not be weak but even if we’re a hundred times bolder, we would never have ill intentions toward the Flame Mercenaries.”

“Yeah, prince Bi Jian. Even if we ignore the fact that the mercenaries are supported by the Changyang clan of the ten protector clans, I’ve also heard that they have quite the relationship with the esteemed grand elder of Mercenary City. Even if we have tremendous courage, we would never try to do anything against them. That’s just looking for death,” added someone immediately. His eyes were filled with fear.

A sneer formed on Bi Jian’s face. “What’re you worrying for? Since I’ve called you all over to discuss this, I’ll obviously deal with these possible fears for you.”

“Yep, the Changyang clan of the ten protector clans is indeed powerful but the reason for the protector clans’ existence is to protect the Tian Yuan Continent. They have an agreement to never interfere with anything regarding the continent unless it’s directly connected to the continent’s safety. I can guarantee you that if people from the Changyang clan interfere with you when you fight for the city, the nine other protector clans won’t just sit around and watch. Hmph, now with the matter of the Winged Tiger God, there should be quite the disagreement between the Changyang clan and the other protector clans.”

“As for Mercenary City, there’s no need for you to worry at all.

The reason for Mercenary City's existence is almost the same as the protector clans. Although the grand elder of Mercenary City possesses the greatest power and status, everything he does is equivalent to what Mercenary City does. If he dares to interfere with what goes down with Flame City, just the disagreement of the other elders is enough to restrict his actions even if we ignore whether the protector clans will agree or not."

"Bi Jian, are you really sure that the other protector clans will stop them from interfering?" asked a middle-aged man worriedly.

Bi Jian laughed confidently. "Don't worry. My father has a deep bond with a great elder of the Yiyuan sect of the ten protector clans. Through this relationship, I've already secretly formed an agreement with the other protector clans. The Changyang clan is too strong now. Not only do they have three geniuses, they've even formed a connection with the Pure Heart Pavilion and the Arctic Ice God Hall. It has technically already broken the balance between the ten protector clans. The other clans will definitely not just watch this through."

Chapter 909: Qin Qin Takes A Master

The men around Bi Jian all began to breathe heavily when they heard this. Their glances toward the Flame City that was still under construction no longer possessed any fear, now replaced by an intense greed.

“Prince Bi Jian, if the protector clan and Mercenary City really won’t be interfering, what else do we have to fear?” One of the middle-aged men immediately said excitedly.

Even with the entire Tian Yuan Continent in perspective, a city completely made out of tungsten alloy like Flame City was enough to make everyone green with envy. Let alone hermit clans with Saint Rulers, even ancient clans that possessed Saint Kings would drool at it. The reason why they never dared to move against the mercenaries was all because they feared the protector Changyang clan and Mercenary City. If it were not for these two powerful organizations supporting them, the mercenaries definitely would not have the power to keep such a large tungsten alloy mine in possession.

“Alright, as long as the Flame Mercenaries doesn’t receive any other powerful support, we, the Apocalypse Mercenaries, will also take part.”

Afterward, many of them expressed their opinions. They were each a captain of huge mercenary groups, all with at least a thousand or even thousands of years of history. Although they were only Heaven Saint Masters, there were many former captains that had stepped down. There were some Saint Rulers among

them.

Most of the captains were greatly attracted by Flame City, so they all signed up for the operation to take it. Only a few of them were left hesitating and did not plan to participate.

Bi Jian looked at them with some cold intent, before looking toward Flame City once again. He said, “The city should be complete in another year’s time. When it’s complete, it’ll be time for us to take over it. I’ll invite my father and a great elder of the Yiyuan sect to personally form a Space Gate when the time comes and deliver your groups in from several hundred kilometers away.”

“That would be fantastic. With the help from the two esteemed seniors, it’ll be too easy for our people to get here.” The mercenary captains all revealed happy expressions.

Beyond the continent, the Heavenly Enchantress currently sat on the edge of a cliff at the very top of Three Saint Island. She had placed the simple Zither of the Demonic Cry on a flat, smooth surface, gently playing the strings with her white and elegant fingers. It produced a pleasant sound.

She was not wearing her veil, revealing her beauty that even the sky seemed to envy. Her hair fluttered gently in the slight breeze beside her ears, covering up a small portion of her face. It only amplified her beauty.

The zither notes seemed to contain an enchanting, sagely tune,

reverberating in the surroundings. It was filled with a sorrowful, miserable feeling that was able to influence the emotions of people and make them sad.

The notes echoed gently through the area. All the small creatures who heard the sound quieted down, each and everyone stopping their foraging for food. They would lie down on the ground, listening quietly to the music that seemed to be the most beautiful tune in the world. The sadness within it even made some of the creatures tear up and cry.

“What’s with master? Why is she sad for no reason?” Xiao Yue glanced toward the Heavenly Enchantress’ location with suspicion. She was filled with doubt.

“I can feel that master seems to be very sad and very miserable. It’s so weird. Why does master feel like this?” Xiao Qian also said doubtfully as she blinked her bright eyes. They were baffled by why the Heavenly Enchantress would feel like this with no evident reason.

The sad music gradually stopped. The Heavenly Enchantress had stopped playing the zither. She placed her hands gently on the zither strings, gazing lifelessly at where the sea and sky met. Her face was a mix of emotions.

“Sigh.” The Heavenly Enchantress produced a long sigh and mumbled, “Do I hate you, or do I not?” She was currently strewn between different emotions.

Suddenly, her eyes narrowed. She suddenly looked into the distance and with a gentle motion of her hands, she immediately ripped open space. It quickly formed a Space Gate. Through the gate, a huge and boundless continent could be seen. It was the Tian Yuan Continent.

The Heavenly Enchantress disappeared through the Space Gate, having already traveled to the distant Tian Yuan Continent.

Within the Tianqin clan of Walaurent City in the Zhuya Kingdom, a young lady current sat all by herself in a pavilion. She played the zither, producing beautiful music which drifted through the garden gently.

Although Qin Qin's zither had yet to reach the level where it could control the emotions of people, it possessed the power to influence and affect people's feelings. It could make them become unwillingly intoxicated by her zither notes.

Qin Qin's zither seemed exactly like the Zither of the Demonic Cry used by the Heavenly Enchantress. They were of the same color, size and had the same number of strings. It seemed like the real thing.

"Master Jian Chen, just where are you? Are you still well?" Qin Qin could not help but imagine Jian Chen's handsome, determined face. She was filled with a deep reminiscence, and perhaps because of her emotions, the music she played possessed a sliver of longing and concern.

“Qin’er, you’re playing here again!” A heavy voice sounded from behind her. The patriarch of the clan had arrived before her, staring at her with a smile.

Qin Qin said nothing. She did not stop the gentle stroking of her fingers as if she had not even heard the voice behind her.

“Qin’er, your marriage with the first young master of the Zhuyun clan is in three days. Why don’t you go and make some preparations,” said the patriarch with a smile.

The music suddenly stopped. Qin Qin said with a gentle but resolved voice, “Father, I don’t want to marry.”

“Qin’er, you’re not young anymore. It’s about time you marry. It’s a pity that you can’t cultivate, so your life is only as long as normal people. Otherwise, your father would not force you like this,” said the patriarch. He too was filled with helplessness.

“But I don’t like the first young master of the Zhuyun clan. Does father want to force me into marrying someone I don’t love?” Qin Qin’s voice was filled with pain.

“Sigh.” The patriarch produced a long exhale. He did not know what to say in this moment.

At this very moment, a vast pressure suddenly appeared. It enveloped the entire clan. Before this pressure, all the guards of the clan felt like a boulder had come crashing down on them. It

was even difficult for them to remain standing and they were now all incapacitated. Even the Earth Saint Masters were the same, immobilized by the pressure.

In the entire clan, the only person who was unaffected was Qin Qin.

At this moment, a veiled, purple-dressed woman descended from the sky. She seemed like a fairy that came from heaven. She was filled with a dignified, divine, and consecrated aura.

The woman carried a zither. She stopped three meters above in the air, staring at Qin Qin with the only thing revealed—her emotionless eyes. She said, “Are you willing to take me as your master?”

The patriarch of the Tianqin clan had been bound by frozen space unknowingly. He stared at the mysterious woman in shock as his emotions churned. He struggled to speak.

Qin Qin stared at the woman in shock, before locking onto the zither in the woman’s arms. It was exactly the same as the zither she used.

“A-a- are you the Heavenly Enchantress?” Qin Qin immediately cried out as she identified the woman through the Zither of the Demonic Cry.

The Heavenly Enchantress nodded slightly and said calmly, “You

have drawn me here with your zither music. We're fated to meet. Are you willing to take me as your master?"

"I'm willing, I'm willing. Disciple Qin Qin pays respects to master." Qin Qin agreed hurriedly. She liked playing the zither, while the Heavenly Enchantress was equivalent to the god of zithers. She had once dreamed about becoming a disciple of hers, so now that the opportunity had presented itself, how could she let it go?"

"You will need to come with me if you accept. You will go far beyond the continent for cultivation. Are you certain?" asked the Heavenly Enchantress.

Qin Qin hesitated slightly. A strong unwillingness to part appeared on her face, but her eyes became determined soon after, "Disciple is willing to leave the clan and follow master to beyond the continent. However, disciple would like master to give disciple the chance to bid farewell to her family."

The pressure from the Heavenly Enchantress' body had already disappeared, freeing the people of the clan from their bindings.

The patriarch in the pavilion bowed toward the Heavenly Enchantress politely, before turning to Qin Qin. He said, "Qin'er, are you really going to be leaving the clan?"

Qin Qin nodded resolutely. "Father, you know that I can't cultivate and that I only like to play the zither. Only by following master can my fate be changed."

The patriarch pondered in silence before exhaling deeply. “Alright then. Qin’er, go without worry. Whenever you have time, you need to come back and visit your father frequently. As for the marriage with the young master of the Zhuyun clan, father will talk to them about it and cancel it.

At this very moment, a large group of people rushed over from the surroundings. The person in front was the young master of the clan, Qin Xiao.

Qin Qin immediately informed them of the matter that she had taken on the Heavenly Enchantress as her master, before bidding farewell to them. She knew that once she left, she would not be returning anytime soon. Afterward, it would be a journey of tens of millions of kilometers. Even when Saint Rulers hurried without any sleep or rest, it would take them over a month of travel.

“Sister, brother respects your choice. In the future, brother will definitely become a Heaven Saint Master and come looking for you in the sea.” Qin Xiao’s eyes were filled with tears. He was extremely unwilling to part with Qin Qin.

Qin Qin’s eyes also glimmered with tears. She said, “Brother, when you see young master Jian Chen again, please give him this drawing.” Qin Qin pulled out a piece of paper from within her wide sleeves, before slowly opening it. To no surprise, the drawing was of Jian Chen. It was him wielding the Light Wind Sword, in a sword dance all by himself. His posture with the sword was sharp, as if every strike was lethal. It was extremely realistic.

Chapter 910: Violent Movements Of The Emperor Armament

In the very beginning, the Heavenly Enchantress paid no mind to it. She only believed it to be someone else with the same name but when she saw the drawing, her eyes narrowed. She grabbed at the empty air with her right hand and the drawing immediately flew into her grasp from Qin Qin's hand.

The group from the Tianqin clan all became surprised when they saw the Heavenly Enchantress take the drawing of Jian Chen. They all looked toward her with suspicion.

The Heavenly Enchantress stared at the person in the drawing blankly as mixed emotions appeared on her face. She subconsciously spat out a sentence, "Why do you have his drawing?"

"Master, do you know master Jian Chen?" Qin Qin's eyes lit up, staring at the Heavenly Enchantress unblinkingly.

The Heavenly Enchantress returned the drawing to Qin Qin and said nothing. Her veiled face hid all her emotions.

Some of the people present immediately began to worry when they saw the Heavenly Enchantress behave like that. They were afraid that Jian Chen had offended her in some way, which would affect her master-disciple relationship with Qin Qin.

Although some of them had thought this, none of them dared to mention it due to the Heavenly Enchantress' status and fame.

Qin Qin gave the drawing to Qin Xiao before leaving with the Heavenly Enchantress after a hurried farewell. They left for Three Saint Island.

The sky before the ancient mountain range was wonderful. It was sunny and cloudless, deep blue in color. Groups of flying magical beasts could be clearly seen as they soared freely through the sky. They would emit loud and clear cries from time to time. It resounded through the surroundings, echoing into the distance.

The loud roars of beasts could be heard occasionally within the forests, while magical beasts could be vaguely seen as they rushed after their prey at great speeds. There sometimes would even be the vague sounds of intense battles, coupled with powerful ripples of energy.

This was a battle between high class magical beasts and there was no lack of Class 5 ones.

At this very moment, the deep-blue sky began to distort violently. With a powerful energy, it ripped open and formed a colorful Space Gate.

Three figures stepped out of the Space Gate. The leading person was a white-robed, middle-aged man. He seemed rather ordinary but he also gave off a feeling as if he was part of the surroundings. He had fused perfectly with the space around him. It was

extremely easy for others to miss his presence.

After him was a white-dressed, middle-aged woman. She was elegant and graceful. She also carried the feeling as if she was part of the surroundings. However, her presence was much more distinct than the man.

The final person was an old man who was covered in wrinkles. He seemed to be past his seventies and he easily be misidentified as the senior of the two people in front.

“Kong’er, do you still remember this place? Our clan is hidden in this space. You can finally return home,” Changyang Zu Yeyun said emotionally as tears pooled in her eyes.

Changyang Zu Yunkong looked around at the familiar surroundings with mixed emotions. He said, “I can finally return home. I can finally return home. Never did I think that there would be a time where I can return home.”

Changyang Zu Yunxiao could not help but reveal a smile as he looked at their emotions. He quickly pulled out a medallion and a beam of light shot out from it. The light directly collided with the space several hundred meters away.

The space there trembled violently, before it gradually cracked open to reveal a thirty-meter-tall gate. Through the gate, simple structures could be seen.

That was the location that the Changyang clan of the ten protector clans resided.

“Yeyun, Kong’er, let’s go in.” Changyang Zu Yunxiao immediately led the two of them into the clan.

A giant, ten-meter-long sword currently stood in the dirt of the forbidden grounds behind the clan. It shone with a bright, divine light and radiated with a powerful sword Qi. It seemed like a condescending supreme ruler.

The sword was surrounded by an extremely powerful barrier. The barrier completely enveloped the sword, fully locking its vast presence within.

However, no one noticed that in the very moment Changyang Zu Yunxiao opened the clan’s gate, the sword had actually trembled by an undetectable amount, despite not having moved even a millimeter for hundreds of years.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao’s family entered the clan that resided in this separate space. As soon as they stepped in, an azure-robed old man flew over with lightning speed. He arrived before the three of them in the blink of an eye.

“Yunxiao, you’re finally willing to come back. I had thought you were going to spend your entire life outside,” said the old man. There was nothing special to his voice but he constantly stared at Changyang Zu Yunkong with deep old eyes. He was filled with both surprise and doubt.

“Grandfather, grandson has successfully brought Kong’er back from outside. Kong’er, why don’t you quickly pay your respects to your great grandfather.” Changyang Zu Yunxiao’s voice was filled with emotion.

The old man was Changyang Zu Xiao. He was the most senior member of the Zu faction in the Changyang clan. Although he was a great elder like Changyang Zu Yunxiao, the difference in their age was around a millennia. Changyang Zu Yunxiao was a descendant of his.

“What did you say? H-he’s Kong’er?” Changyang Zu Xiao was filled with shock as he stared blankly at the old Changyang Zu Yunkong.

Changyang Zu Yunkong took a step forward. Just as he was about to pay his respects to Changyang Zu Xiao, a supreme sword Qi suddenly erupted from the very depths of the clan. The entire space was greatly affected, beginning to tremble violently. Pitch-black spatial cracks began to crisscross in the sky, as if the entire region faced the threat of collapsing.

Changyang Zu Xiao suddenly raised his head and stared toward the depths of the clan. Currently, his deep eyes shone with a bright light as he growled, “Crap, the Emperor Armament has begun to react violently. Yunxiao, come with me to suppress the armament or the entire space is going to collapse.”

Changyang Zu Xiao transformed into a streak of light, shooting

toward the forbidden grounds at the rear of the clan. At the same time, the other great elders all made their way to the forbidden grounds as well. All of them were extremely grim.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao did nothing. He stood there stock-still as he stared blankly in that direction. He murmured, “Why, why is this happening? The Emperor Armament has existed for several hundreds of thousands of years but this has never happened before. Why has it awakened violently twice in less than two thousand years? And in those two time...” Changyang Zu Yunxiao stopped talking and looked toward Changyang Zu Yunkong. His emotions were mixed.

Changyang Zu Yeyun’s expression also became miserable as tears glimmered in her eyes. She said painfully, “Why would the Emperor Armament suddenly react violently as soon as Kong’er has returned? I-is it perhaps really as the clansmen described it all those years ago? That Kong’er is really a calamity to the clan, that his existence will only bring disasters to the clan?”

The trembling of the space became even more violent. All the members of the clan were greatly alarmed as they stopped their cultivation to look at what was happening in the forbidden grounds.

“Crap, the Emperor Armament has almost broken free. Everyone at Saint Ruler has rushed over to help. Yunxiao, why don’t you come?” Changyang Zu Xiao voice boomed from within the forbidden ground. It was filled with a sense of urgency.

Changyang Zu Yunkong stared fixedly in the direction of the

forbidden grounds. The light in his eyes flickered as he revealed a doubtful expression.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao's face was filled with pain. He slowly grabbed Changyang Zu Yunkong's shoulder and said remorsefully, "Kong'er, let's back out." He left the Changyang clan's space with Changyang Zu Yunkong.

The moment they left the space, the Emperor Armament that had moved violently in the forbidden grounds gradually calmed down, before quieted down completely. It was as if nothing had even occurred in the first place.

All the members of the Changyang clan could not help but relax slightly now that the Emperor Armament had calmed down once again. Only Changyang Zu Yeyun and Changyang Zu Yunxiao were filled with absolute grief, unable to cheer up no matter what.

The great elders all walked out from the forbidden grounds, covered in sweat. Every single one of them was still in a state of shock. They were unable to suppress the armament even when they worked together earlier and once the Emperor Armament broke free, the space would have been destroyed. They all struggled to imagine just how catastrophic it would have been for the clan.

"Weird. The Emperor Armament has never behaved like this before, so why has it behaved violently twice recently? The first time was because a clansman trespassed the forbidden grounds, so why has it happened this time?" A great elder asked doubtfully.

Changyang Zu Xiao seemed to think of something when he heard that. His expression changed immediately as he cried out involuntarily, "Perhaps it's because..."

"Perhaps it's because what? Changyang Zu Xiao, do you know the reason why the Emperor Armament's suddenly behaved so violently?" A great elder immediately asked. The rest of them all looked toward Changyang Zu Xiao.

The light in Changyang Zu Xiao's eyes flickered uneasily. He said nothing, directly heading toward the entrance of the clan.

The other great elders all looked at each other, before following behind him closely.

They left the clan together and when they arrived outside, they saw Changyang Zu Yunxiao, Changyang Zu Yeyun and Changyang Zu Yunkong at first glance. They recognized Changyang Zu Yunkong's identity very quickly.

"Yunkong, so it's you! I finally understand why the Emperor Armament suddenly began to behave so violently when everything was well. It's all because of you," a great elder growled. His complexion was not good.

"In all these years, the Emperor Armament has only behaved so violently twice. The first time was because you trespassed the forbidden grounds and disturbed it, while the second time was because you entered the clan today.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yeyun's expressions became extremely ugly. They were filled with pain.

“Perhaps the clansmen are right, that Changyang Zu Yunkong is a calamity of the Changyang clan? That he'll only bring disaster to the clan? As soon as he steps into the clan, he faces the rejection of the Emperor Armament and as soon as it breaks free, it'll be an apocalyptic disaster for the clan,” said another great elder. His gaze toward Changyang Zu Yunkong immediately became rather hostile.

“Sigh.” Changyang Zu Xiao exhaled deeply. His face was filled with helplessness as he said, “Kong'er, you can never step back into the clan again.”

Chapter 911: The Beast God Continent Gathers Near the Sea Realm

Changyang Zu Xiao's words were like an imperial edict. It removed all possibilities of Changyang Zu Yunkong ever stepping back into the clan, which made Changyang Zu Yeyun and Changyang Zu Yunxiao pale in that instance.

This was because they knew that from now onward, their son could never enter the clan ever again.

Changyang Zu Yunkong did not seem to hear what Changyang Zu Xiao's words. He stared blankly at the forbidden grounds in the depths of the clan while his face was filled with confusion.

"Great elders, please remove the seal in Kong'er's head, as you have promised," said Changyang Zu Yeyun as she endured the pain in her heart.

"Hm? He has actually broken through to Saint Ruler. How's that possible?" A great elder said in surprised when he finally discovered that Changyang Zu Yunkong had broken through to Saint Ruler.

Afterward, Changyang Zu Yunkong narrated how he had managed to break through. The great elders' doubts disappeared when they learned that he had actually used a stalk of hundred-thousand-year Dragon's Saliva to temporarily suppress the seal's power.

“Kong’er may not be able to enter the clan but he’s still a member of our clan. Let’s work together and remove the seal in his head,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao said depressingly.

“Since he has already become a Saint Ruler, there’s no need for us to worry that he’ll pass away from age for now. In my opinion, we should leave the seal in his head for now and remove it when he brings back his descendant Changyang Xiangtian. That way, he’ll be redeeming himself and he’ll be able to give an explanation to the tens of thousand clan members. After all, he has caused quite the trouble by agitating the Emperor Armament with his return,” Changyang Qing Yun muttered.

The expressions of Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yeyun abruptly changed when they heard that. Even Changyang Zu Xiao’s expression became rather ugly.

“Elder Yun, I don’t think that would be great. Last time in Lore City, we had dismissed Kong’er’s punishment before the other protector clans. Now that the punishment is gone, why can’t we remove the seal in Kong’er’s head? Do you know that the seal’s existence will prevent him from strengthening? Do you know how big of an obstruction it is to his cultivation?” Changyang Zu Yunxiao growled.

“Elder Yun, I also feel like we should remove Kong’er’s seal,” Changyang Zu Xiao said as well. The seal had originally been placed down by the seven on them, so they needed all seven of them to remove it as well.

“Everyone, I wonder what your opinions on this matter are.”

Changyang Qing Yun looked toward the others.

“I agree with elder Yun...”

“I also agree with elder Yun...”

...

After a period of silence, all the other great elders voiced their opinions. They actually all agreed with Changyang Qing Yun’s suggestion.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao’s face immediately sunk. He became absolutely furious.

“Since everyone else agrees with me, we’ll leave it at that. The day we remove the seal in his head will come when he brings back Changyang Xiangtian,” said Changyang Qing Yun with a smile. Afterward, he left with the other elders.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Xiao floated in the air with sunken expressions. They were enraged, while Changyang Zu Yeyun sobbed by herself. She had originally thought that the great elders would remove the seal in his head immediately as soon as she brought Changyang Zu Yunkong back but never did she think it would end up like this.

“They’ve gone overboard.” Changyang Zu Yunxiao clenched his fists tightly. He was utterly enraged, to the point where he had

even begun to tremble slightly.

Changyang Zu Xiao sighed deeply. He was filled with helplessness as he exhaled. “It’s all because of the Winged Tiger God...”

In the end, Changyang Zu Yunkong’s seal was not removed nor could he return to the clan. Under these circumstances, all he could do was return to Lore City and stay there as the esteemed and respected ancestor of the Changyang clan.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yeyun did not return to the clan either after their disappointment. They chose to stay in Lore City with their son.

In the blink of an eye, half a year passed. Jian Chen currently sat on a small mountain completely formed from grand quality crystal coins in a secret room below the Turtle clan. The sword spirits hovered above his head, assisting Jian Chen with the refinement of the coins into the purest energy possible.

The grand quality crystal coins were all condensed from extremely pure water-attributed energy of the world. They possessed similar effects to monster cores and were able to increase Jian Chen’s rate of cultivation.

These crystal coins were all obtained by Jian Chen in exchange for an opportunity to enter the Octoterra Divine Hall. Each Octoterra Map fragment could let in twenty people and Jian Chen had already let the Sea Goddess Hall take ten of them. The other ten completely belonged to him. Nubis, Xie Wang and him would

only take up three spots, so he put the other seven spots on sale. He exchanged the spots for some of the things he needed.

For these opportunities, the only two Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler elders in the Turtle clan came looking for Jian Chen. They wished to obtain a chance to enter the divine hall but no matter what they said, they got nothing from Jian Chen. This was because the two of them were under the second and third elder, a part of the group that had initially opposed Jian Chen's succession as ruler. Jian Chen obviously would not waste any valuable spots on these people. He was more willing to exchange them for things that he needed himself.

Jian Chen did not even consider bribing them because he felt like he had no need to do that at all. He did not come to the Turtle clan to actually become some ruler but to complete the grand elder's final wishes.

The seven spots were all sold off in a mere three months. Jian Chen used three of the spots to exchange for vast quantities of grand quality crystal coins, while he used the other four to exchange for four materials used to forge the Azulet swords.

After so many years of exhaustive search, Jian Chen had already collected more than ten of the materials. He only lacked four of them but he already had an idea for one of the four. It was the Heaven's Soulstone from the Yama Hall of the three great assassination organizations.

"I'll definitely be paying a visit to Yama Hall after I become powerful enough," thought Jian Chen.

At the same time, a vast and powerful presence suddenly emerged from the ninety-eighth floor of the Beast God Hall. It was like the gradual awakening of a primordial beast, radiating with a terrifying pressure. It caused the weather to change and the entire continent was affected. All the magical beasts trembled helplessly on the ground, while great fear and dread appeared in their eyes.

In an instant, all ninety-seven other people cultivating in the hall opened their eyes. They all looked toward the ninety-eighth floor, some happy while others down.

“Kaiser’s actually broken through. Now, our disparity in strength is becoming greater and greater,” murmured a ruddy old man as he raised his head on the ninety-seventh floor to look at the ninety-eighth floor. He frowned slightly.

He was one of the three emperors of the Beast God Continent, Saint Emperor of the Peng clan, Cangqiong.”

On the ninety-sixth floor, tiger king Lankyros suddenly rose from the ground. A smile formed on his face. “Five years have elapsed. Kaiser is finally coming out of seclusion.”

A burly, three-meter-tall man emerged slowly from the ninety-eighth floor of the hall. His appearance did not stand out at all but his eyes were extremely sharp, like drawn swords. Just his gaze gave people the feeling that it could pierce through steel. It was that shocking. It would have been frightening if someone stared into his eyes.

A bold aura wrapped around the man. It filled the entire hall, enveloping all ninety-eight floors with his great presence. Just his presence possessed the might to cause the world to tremble.

This man was the ruler of the Beast God Continent. He was undoubtedly the most powerful person on the continent.

“Kaiser, you’ve finally come out,” Lankyros’ voice resounded from outside.

Kaiser strode out of the hall. With his every step, the hall would tremble slightly. If it were not for the fact that the hall had been built solidly, it probably would have been reduced to dust long ago.

“Lankyros, come with me to the Tian Yuan Continent for the Winged Tiger God. Hmph, I’d like to see who’ll be stopping us this time.” Kaiser’s voice was filled with arrogance, as if he looked down on everyone in the world.

“Kaiser, there has been some changes to the situation. Jian Chen’s taken the Winged Tiger God into the sea realm, so it’s no longer on the Tian Yuan Continent anymore,” growled Lankyros.

“The sea realm!” Kaiser frowned slightly when he heard that. After some slight thought, he said, “Then let’s head to the sea realm.” Kaiser then looked toward the ninety-seventh floor and said with a heavy but clear voice, “Cangqiong, come with us to the sea realm for the Winged Tiger God.”

“The Winged Tiger God is the god of the magical beast race. We have no right to interfere with anything the beast god does, unless it faces a life-threatening danger. Otherwise, I will not be interfering with anything relating to the beast god,” Cangqiong’s ancient voice boomed from the ninety-seventh floor.

Kaiser’s eyes became slightly cold but he said nothing. He departed the continent with Lankyros, two-thirds of all the experts in the hall, and all the experts in their factions. They proceeded toward the sea realm.

Even though the Beast God Continent was extremely far away from the sea realm, it was nothing to Kaiser and Lankyros who were both Saint Emperors. They directly ripped open space and formed a Space Gate, traversing tens of millions of kilometers with a single step. They arrived in the sky above the sea realm.

Thousands of experts who were at least Saint Ruler gathered in the sky. They radiated with a terrifying might that caused the water below to sink by ten meters.

Kaiser floated above condescendingly and stared down at the seawater coldly. He growled, “There’s a barrier cast down by the sea goddess in the ancient times. I wonder how powerful it still is after so many years. Let’s find out today.” With that, Kaiser’s eyes immediately began to glow, narrowing instantly. He grabbed at the empty space and the entire region darkened with his hand. The weather conditions changed with a flip of that hand.

Vast quantities of World Force poured toward his hand, before condensing into a giant, ten-meter-long spear. It shot toward the barrier that encased the entire sea realm with a terrifying force.

Chapter 912: The Sea Goddess Appears

As the number one expert of the Beast God Continent struck out, he immediately attracted the attention of all the people from the Beast God Continent. This included tiger king Lankyros. They all stared fixedly at Kaiser's attack.

The spear condensed from Kaiser's great strength directly tore through space. It shot down into the ocean with an unstoppable force, cracking open the space wherever it passed by.

The spear remained in mid-air. It had not even touched the water, yet its terrifying pressure had pushed all the water to expand in the surroundings, lowering the surface of the water below it.

As the spear touched the water, the water directly disappeared. It revealed a dark hole that directly led to the bottom of the ocean.

At that very moment, a blue pillar of light shot out from the barrier that encased the sea realm. It directly collided with Kaiser's spear.

Boom!

With a great rumble from the sea, the surface of the water began to churn. It abruptly shot up and was actually knocked thousands of meters into the air by the violent energy ripples, unfolding on a magnificent scale.

A blue barrier rose from the depths of the sea. The barrier that protected the entire sea realm expanded to countless times its previous size in that instant and rose above the water. The sea water was actually pushed into the surroundings by the suddenly-rising barrier and caused the surface to begin tossing and turning. It formed a huge wave several hundred meters in height, rippling off in all directions.

“People of the Beast God Continent, leave. The world of my Sea race is not one that you can trespass.” A sound voice resounded from ahead. A blurry figure could be vaguely seen in the huge barrier. The figure was elegant and graceful. It was the figure of a woman.

“Who are you?” Kaiser stared fixedly at the figure that was virtually a part of the barrier. His voice was deep while his expression was grim.

Lankyros’ face sank abruptly. He could actually feel a grand pressure from the figure even though he was a Saint Emperor. The pressure was so great that it shocked him; even before Kaiser, he had never experienced something so great.

“I think you already have the answer as to who I am. I don’t want to make it difficult for you. You can leave. No one can invade the world of my Sea race,” a soft voice rang out again. The woman in the barrier had actually taken a step and had left the barrier. She formed an illusionary figure in the middle of the air that was extremely blurry.

“You’re the sea goddess? You’re not dead yet?” Kaiser’s face sank. He suffered quite the psychological blow when he found out that the sea goddess was not dead yet. This had shocked him greatly.

“Correct. I’m indeed still alive,” the sea goddess said softly.

Kaiser stared fixedly at the illusionary figure and seemed to think of something. His eyes immediately lit up as he sneered, “Sea goddess, since you’re not dead, why haven’t you come out personally and only sent this soul? Perhaps, only your soul remains now?”

“My soul is enough to stop you from entering,” said the sea goddess. Her voice was calm and emotionless.

“Impossible. Even if you had surpassed Saint Emperor, it’s impossible for you to live so long. Sea goddess, if I’ve guessed correctly, then you’ve actually died long ago. Just for some reason, your soul did not disperse and survived till today. Am I right? Too bad, you can’t threaten us at all in the form you are in right now.” A sneer formed on Kaiser’s face. The fear in his heart gradually disappeared.

“The barrier of the sea realm took me a hundred years to cast down. I can use the power of the barrier at will; even if I’m just a soul, you’re not my opponent,” said the sea goddess.

“Is that so?” Kaiser’s lips formed a cold smile. “I’d like to see whether your barrier from all those years ago can withstand an

attack from Lankyros and me.” A powerful presence radiated from his body, which caused the surrounding energy to become violent. Vast quantities of World Force quickly began to gather toward Kaiser.

At the same time, a towering presence began to radiate from Lankyros as well. His two arms immediately began to bulge, ripping through his clothes. They transformed into two golden tiger paws, while invisible World Force gathered around them.

“Do it!” Kaiser shouted. Together with Lankyros, they struck out powerfully and directly surged toward the sea goddess.

The space up ahead immediately became a wall of darkness. The attacks from the two Saint Emperors had shattered and collapsed it.

The attacks directly passed through the sea goddess’ body and struck the barrier behind her forcefully. With a violent rumble, the barrier only rippled. It did not even tremble, easily resisting the attacks from the two Saint Emperors.

Violent ripples of residual energy wreaked havoc in the surroundings. It immediately knocked back the thousand or so Class 7 and Class 8 Magical Beasts from the Beast God Continent.

“It’s useless. Unless you surpass the realm of saints and reach the Origin realm, you won’t be able to break through the barrier I’ve cast down. Even if all three Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent come, it’s useless.” The sea goddess’ voice rang in Kaiser

and Lankyros' ears.

The two of their faces darkened greatly. After a period of silent thought, Lankyros spoke out, "Sea goddess, we have no intentions of invading the sea realm. Our great beast god has appeared in the sea realm. We only want to take him back from the sea realm."

"The rules of my sea realm do not change. Only magical beasts below Class 8 can enter. It doesn't matter who it is, those who are Class 8 and above are forbidden," said the sea goddess.

"Alright, then we'll send in some peak Class 7 Magical Beasts into the sea realm. I hope the sea goddess makes it convenient for us and assists us in finding the beast god. My Beast God Continent will be extremely grateful," Lankyros said emotionlessly.

"The beast god of your continent has nothing to do with me. After your people enter the sea realm, they will be in charge of their fates. I will not be helping you," said the sea goddess.

With that, Kaiser and Lankyros both revealed ugly expressions.

"Also, the person you're searching for isn't as simple as you think. Unless Class 8 Magical Beasts head out personally, you won't be able to handle him at all. You should decide yourselves if you want to send experts into my sea realm." The sea goddess turned around and reentered the barrier after she threw that down. She fused with the barrier once again.

Kaiser clenched his fist tightly as stared coldly at the sea goddess' back. He growled, "There will be a day where I break through the realm of saints and reach that legendary Origin realm. At that time, I'll definitely be smashing through your barrier. Let's go." Kaiser immediately began to return to the Beast God Continent with his experts after he threw that threat down.

The sea goddess' gentle voice rang out in the surroundings once again after their departure. Her voice was filled with reminiscence and pity.

"Do you really think that realm of saints is really that easy to break through? In the ancient times, there were plenty of people who had reached the peak of Saint Emperor but there were only a tiny amount who truly broke through to the Origin realm. Not to mention, it's no longer possible to break through now, unless the world returns to how it was like before in the ancient times."

In the distant north from the Tian Yuan Continent, there was a snow-white world. There were mountains of crystal-like ice formed from the cold as far as the eye could see. The ice radiated with a frigid aura.

The snow and ice never melted there and had already existed for countless years. The climate there was so cold that no ordinary people could endure it. Even Earth Saint Masters would not be able to exist for too long in that climate.

The cold wind whistled like the howls of ghosts. A visible, white gas was constantly blown around by the wind.

The white gas was extreme frigid Qi. It was so powerful that it had reached a startling level. Even Heaven Saint Masters would be frozen up instantly if they came into contact with it and they would never be able to break free again. Only Saint Rulers could withstand it.

This was the arctic, the desolate arctic. Currently, a huge divine hall stood quietly in the depths of it.

The hall was extremely large, over tens of thousands of meters both long and wide. It stood there silently like a sleeping primordial beast. It radiated with a great aura.

Currently, a woman laid quietly on a bed carved from ten-thousand-year profound ice as she was enveloped by an extreme frigid Qi. The woman was completely snow-white; not only were her clothes white, even her long hair and eyelashes were snow-white.

She was Changyang Mingyue, the holy maiden of the Arctic Ice God Hall.

The extreme frigid Qi was slowly absorbed by her. The presence that radiated from her strengthened by a significant amount after she had absorbed the extreme frigid Qi and even the frigid Qi on her thickened.

Changyang Mingyue's long eyelashes trembled gently. She finally opened her eyes slowly and rose up from her bed of ice. She

allowed the terrifying coldness that radiated from the bed to brush up against her thin-looking body.

“Protector Shui,” Changyang Mingyue’s mouth moved slightly as she spoke gently in the empty room.

“This one greets the holy maiden.” An icy voice appeared out of nowhere. A person completely clad in snow-white armor suddenly appeared in the room. She knelt on a single knee courteously. Her body stature was elegant and graceful; although her appearance could not be seen through her helmet, it was not hard to tell that she was a woman.

“Protector Shui, just how long do I need to stay here? I really want to return home and see my family.” Changyang Mingyue seemed lonely. Her heart was filled with attachments.

“Holy Maiden, your Profound Ice Body has yet to awaken completely. You can’t leave the hall right now,” protector Shui said icily and without any emotion. Her eyes were so cold that she seemed like an emotionless, cold-blooded creature.

“Just how long will it take before my Profound Ice Body fully awakens?” Changyang Mingyue asked.

“This one does not know. It will all depend on the holy maiden,” said protector Shui.

“My youngest brother currently faces the pursuit of the ten

protector clans and the Beast God Continent. His life is in constant danger and things have also happened to father. I don't care, I'm going to Lore City immediately." Changyang Mingyue's voice was filled with worry as she directly made her way for the outside.

Protector Shui appeared before Changyang Mingyue out of nowhere and blocked her. She said, "Holy maiden, you can't leave the hall right now."

"Protector Shui, since I'm your holy maiden, you must listen to my orders. I order you to get out of the way immediately. I want to go right now." A sliver of anger appeared on Changyang Mingyue's face.

"This one cannot do that," protector Shui said before slowly backing out.

Changyang Mingyue immediately made her way for the door but as soon as she arrived there, it had been sealed up by an invisible energy. It prevented her from leaving.

"Protector Shui, why do you trap me here?" Changyang Mingyue said furiously. Her voice was filled with panic.

Protector Shui stood outside the door as she stared at Changyang Mingyue. "Holy maiden, before your Profound Ice Body fully awakens, this one cannot let you leave the hall."

"Protector Shui, I beg you. Please, let me out. I really miss home.

I really miss my mother and my younger brother.” Two streaks of tears ran down from Changyang Mingyue’s eyes as they radiated with a certain coldness. Her tone was close to pleading.

Changyang Mingyue knew that in the hall, the protector that stood before her possessed the greatest status. In the hall, she was equivalent to a god.

Protector Shui stared blankly at Changyang Mingyue. She could feel Changyang Mingyue’s pain.

“Holy maiden, you’ve changed. This one remembers that you were not like this before. You never cried over those mortal’s matters.” Protector Shui looked at her with mixed emotions. Afterward, she sighed gently and said, “Holy Maiden, I was ordered to stay here and wait. Only after over three million years did you descend. In this crucial moment, I can’t let anything happen to you. Before your Profound Ice Body awakens, this one definitely will not let you leave. Even if this one has to offend the holy maiden, this one will not change her mind.”

“Don’t worry about your family. They’re all safe and your youngest brother is extremely safe. He has already found refuge in the sea realm, with the sea goddess secretly helping him. He won’t be encountering any dangers. And your father is going to be revived by your brother’s Radiant Artes soon.”

“Really? Protector Shui, is that true? You can sense the circumstance that my family and my brothers are in?” Changyang Mingyue stared at protector Shui as the light in her eyes flickered.

Protector Shui said, “Holy maiden, there’s nothing this one does not know about this world.” With that, she seemed to think of something and the light in her eyes dulled. She thought, “Holy maiden, I hope you can sever your relationship with your brother early. Because in the future, you may end up in conflict and be at each other’s lives.”

Chapter 913: Opening of the Octoterra Divine Hall

In the blink of an eye, the time for the opening of the Octoterra Divine Hall had arrived. Jian Chen, Nubis, and Xie Wang all left the Turtle clan to gather at the Sea Goddess Hall.

Jian Chen still possessed the status of a guest in the Sea Goddess Hall, so he had his area for cultivation. Currently, the three of them sat in the hall as they conversed and discussed about entering the Octoterra Divine Hall.

Nubis had left the saint artifact half a year ago. When they were previously faced with the pursuit of the experts from the Serpent God Hall and Heaven's Spirit Hall, he had burned his vital essence as a price to exceed his maximum speed, which led to severe overconsumption. He stayed in the artifact space for an entire half a year, recovering all his lost vitality from absorbing the old snake's hidden essence. He had also raised his cultivation to the peak of Saint Ruler once again, now only an inch away from Saint King.

“Mo Ji of the Thousand-handed clan greets the ruler of the Turtle clan.” A husky voice rang from outside, heard clearly by the three of them.

With a thought, he released the barrier around the hall and said, “Come in.” Jian Chen had a very deep impression in regards to the Thousand-handed clan.

The Thousand-handed clan was one of the greatest clans of the

sea realm. They were much more powerful than the Taihong clan, with one 16th Star Seasoul Warrior and two 15th Star Seasoul Warriors. They were a famed clan within the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall.

The Thousand-handed clan's original form similar to the centipedes on land. They were extremely long, with a thousand limbs in total. They were good at poisoning people with their venom and possessed a tenacious life force. Even if their bodies were destroyed, they could rebuild their bodies in a very short amount of time as long as their souls remained. It was extremely miraculous.

The Thousand-handed clan was one of the clans that had purchased an opportunity to enter the Octoterra Divine Hall from him.

A black-robed old man walked in from outside. He was skinny, while his face was covered with a thin layer of hairs. He seemed like a monkey but his deep eyes would flash with a cold light from time to time. His eyes were filled with cold-bloodedness and viciousness.

“Mo Ji greets the ruler of the Turtle clan.” The old man clasped his hands at Jian Chen. Although his voice was polite, he did not carry an expression that matched it.

“Please come in, warrior Mo Ji. May I ask if there's anything you need for suddenly coming to find me?” Jian Chen smiled as he said mildly.

Mo Ji sat down beside Jian Chen and smiled. “Ruler, we’ll be entering the Octoterra Divine Hall soon. The divine hall is filled with danger; not only do we have to prepare against the attacks from other people, we have to pay attention to the various killing formations in the hall. We can die very easily with a slip in focus. Mo Ji has come to find the ruler this time actually because Mo Ji wants to team up with the ruler. That way, our chances of staying alive would increase greatly. I wonder how the ruler feels about this.”

Jian Chen frowned slightly when he heard that but after a period of thought, he nodded in agreement.

Mo Ji rejoiced when he gained Jian Chen’s agreement. He then left after conversing slightly with Jian Chen.

“Jian Chen, as long as we’re a little careful, we’re strong enough to rampage in there with our strength. Why did you let him join us?” Nubis asked in confusion.

“This is only temporary and we know nothing about the Octoterra Divine Hall. We’ll be able to get a general idea of it from him,” said Jian Chen with a smile. His eyes flickered as he thought of something.

After Mo Ji had left, another three people came to Jian Chen. They were all experts of various clans that were also entering the hall. All of them were of Ninth Heavenly Layer, with shocking talent and great strength. They all wished to join Jian Chen’s

group and enter the hall together.

Jian Chen did not turn them down because he knew this was all temporary. Cracks would appear in their truce when they came across something enticing.

Additionally, with so many helpers, they would not need to worry about being ganged up on. After all, no one who entered the hall this time would be weak. Not only would they be of the Ninth Heavenly Layer, there would be plenty of talented people who had already comprehended Saint Tier Battle Skills. They could heavily injure Saint Kings, so Jian Chen needed to deal with them carefully.

The three of them spent three days in the hall. After these three days, all the people who were entering the Octoterra Divine Hall gathered in a huge, empty space, before they left the palace under the lead of two hall elders and various experts. They flew toward the location where the three territories bordered one another.

Jian Chen glanced at the surroundings and realized that there were over three hundred people who were coming along as well. Other than the sixty people who were entering the hall, the others were experts of various clans and a few elders of the Sea Goddess Hall.

Of the two hall elders that accompanied them, one of them was the elder Hong that Jian Chen was familiar with. The other person was a blue-dressed lady. She wielded a meter-long staff and her face was obscured by a layer of mist. It was hazy and indistinct.

Although the lady seemed very similar to Atlantis that had initially saved them from the experts of the other two halls, Jian Chen knew that she definitely was not Atlantis but someone else.

After several days of flight, the group arrived at the border. Just as they arrived, the experts from the Heaven's Spirit Hall and the Serpent God Hall just happened to fly over from afar. They had actually all arrived at the same time.

“One year is up. Let's get straight to it. Those in possession of the map fragments, please take them out at the same time and bring them together,” hall elder Hong said.

Immediately, eight people took out the map fragments, before they all walked up to the very front of the group.

Of the eight fragments, the Sea Goddess Hall had a total of four pieces, while the other two halls had two each.

Jian Chen stood together with three other people. He could immediately feel that he was being stared at by several sharp gazes with his keen senses, so he glanced around. He discovered that the two hall elders from both the Serpent God Hall and the Heavens Spirit Hall stared at him darkly. They looked so vicious that they virtually seemed like they wanted to devour him.

Jian Chen remained as usual but he sneered inside. Some time ago, both halls had suffered greatly through his hands. They all had Saint Kings fall and three 16th Star experts had been taken

away by Atlantic of the Sea Goddess Hall. It was embarrassing.

“So the map fragment that belonged to my Hao family has ended up in your hands. Brat, what’s your name and which organization do you belong to? Through what means did you obtain the map fragment?” An old voice boomed from the Heaven’s Spirit Hall’s side. An old man stared at Jian Chen with an ugly expression.

The old man knew very well which clans were in possession of the seven other map fragments. Jian Chen was the only one he did not recognize.

Jian Chen looked toward the direction where the voice came from and immediately recognized the old man as the Saint King of the Hao family, the person that Qing Yixuan had robbed all those days ago.

“I am Jian Chen, ruler of the Turtle clan. I naturally obtained this map fragment from Qing Yixuan.” Jian Chen smiled as he clasped his hands at the Saint King. If this person had not injured Qing Yixuan heavily through his Saint Tier Battle Skill, Jian Chen would not have been able to take the map fragment from her.

The old man’s complexion could not help but recover slightly when he heard that. He laughed aloud. “The rumors said that the map fragment Qing Yixuan had taken from me ended up being stolen by two 14th Star juniors. In the beginning, I didn’t believe it but it looks like it’s all true now. Hmph, never did I think that Qing Yixuan of the eight great human experts would be tripped up by two juniors.”

The gazes from many people toward Jian Chen underwent a weird change, now mixed with quite some admiration. Just the courage to steal from the famed Qing Yixuan as a 14th Star Seasoul Warrior was worthy of respect.

At this moment, elder Hong pointed out. Four strands of energy shot out from his finger, fusing and disappearing into the map fragments. Soon afterward, a ripple of energy surged out from the four palm-sized map pieces, which now glowed with a layer of hazy light.

“Everyone, please undo the seal on the map fragments.” Elder Hong looked toward the people of the other two halls.

Shortly afterward, the hall elders of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall and the Serpent God Hall moved in unison. Two ripples of energy shot out from their fingers and into their map fragments, undoing the seal hidden within.

The other four fragments immediately began to shine with a hazy glow. The light became brighter and brighter, before reaching an extremely dazzling level. They were like suns that illuminated the surroundings.

The eight map fragments slowly flew from their hands, before joining together in the air. A while later, the light gradually receded and a meter-wide square piece of leather could be seen floating in the sky. It then flew toward the territory of the Serpent God Hall with lightning speed.

“The Octoterra Map will lead us to the Octoterra Divine Hall. Follow it!” Someone cried out. Immediately, the people from the other two halls crossed over their borders in pursuit. The three halls had agreed beforehand that they could cross into any hall’s borders during the period of searching for the divine hall.

A group of people pursued the map boldly. It finally stopped in the air above an ancient mountain range after covering hundreds of thousands of kilometers.

Currently, the map radiated with a weird aura as it floated in the air. It caused the surrounding space to tremble gently and become blurry.

“So this is where the Octoterra Emperor hid his divine hall,” murmured the two hall elders of the Serpent God Hall as they raised their heads to look at the sky.

In this moment, an extremely powerful ripple of energy ripped open the space. It formed a huge, black hole and from within it a huge divine hall slowly emerged. The Octoterra Hall had finally descended upon the sea realm.

The divine hall was several thousand meters long and tall. It was completely golden as if it was made of gold and it shone with a dazzling golden light. The divine hall was bewitching.

As the divine hall emerged completely, the black hole above also disappeared. Soon afterward, the map separated into eight pieces

again, falling into the hands of the initial eight people.

“Brother Jian Chen, the most valuable thing in the divine hall other than the Octoterra Emperor’s legacy is this divine hall. Once you enter it, you need to find a way to get to the control center of the hall and obtain it,” elder Hong’s voice boomed in Jian Chen’s ear. He communicated with him through a mental message.

Jian Chen nodded expressionlessly. Afterward, he flew toward the hall that was high up in the sky with the other people who were entering.

Very soon, a hundred and sixty experts entered the hall with the help of the eight map fragments. Meanwhile, the people from the three halls did not leave and instead began to wait patiently outside. They wanted to wait until all of them had come out, to prevent any treasures from being stolen on their return journey.

Chapter 914: Attack of a Beast Horde

The hundred and sixty experts all gathered together within the Octoterra Divine Hall. They stood around in groups, observing the surroundings vigilantly. They all remained cautious of one another.

Jian Chen, Nubis, Xie Wang, and the four others gathered together. They stood in an inconspicuous corner and observed the people around them carefully. At the same time, they examined their surroundings through the corner of their eyes.

They currently stood in an extremely wide hall. It was circular in shape, while the surrounding tunnels lead off in all directions. There were a total of sixteen tunnels and every single one of them was over thirty meters tall. No one knew where they led off to.

“Mo Ji, do you have a map of this place on you?” Jian Chen sent a mental message to the four other people. The map fragments were only the key to the divine hall and did not possess a map of the hall itself. Additionally, the fragments had already disappeared after they had entered the place.

Mo Ji shook his head gently. “It’s said that the Octoterra Emperor remained alone throughout his life with very few friends. When he built this divine hall after becoming an emperor, no one apart from the emperor had entered it back then either. There was never a map of this place that has gone into circulation.”

“It’ll be a test of our luck in the upcoming part of the journey. I

hope we can find the right path,” replied a black-robed young man. He was an expert from a large clan and his name was Da Xin. He was one of the four people who had joined Jian Chen.

Quite a few of the small groups in the surroundings began to move at this moment. They all chose one of the sixteen tunnels and went through with their choice.

Abruptly, muffled sounds began to resound from the surroundings. It was densely packed, like the constant pitter-patter of rain. It occurred in all sixteen tunnels.

This sudden occurrence raised everyone’s vigilance to the maximum. They all made preparations for battle and even the people who were about to depart returned. They all gathered in the hall once again.

A series of densely-packed beast roars reverberated from all sixteen tunnels. Large beasts all flowed from the tunnels, each and every one of them charging at the people viciously.

There were many of these beasts and none of them were weak. They were all at least as strong as Heaven Saint Masters and many of them had already reached the level of Saint Rulers.

“These are all vicious beasts. God dammit, why’re there so many and why’re they all so strong...”

“The Octoterra Emperor actually raised a bunch of vicious beasts

in his divine hall. It'll be troublesome now. All of them have been affected by the hall; they may not possess intelligence but they're much more powerful than ordinary vicious beasts. I hope we don't come across overly powerful ones..."

"There are just too many. We need to work together to kill them all off..."

The peace of the hall was immediately broken and quite a few Saint Rulers called out grimly.

Jian Chen and Nubis both became stern. Nubis' hands immediately became golden, completing his preparations for battle. He growled, "I can already feel the presence of several Class 8 Magical Beasts. There's actually Class 8 ones in the horde."

Strands of Chaotic Force poured out from Jian Chen's chaotic neidan, boosting the defense of the Chaotic Body to the absolute maximum. Afterward, he drew his King Armament from his Space Ring. He fully expanded his presence but it suffered restrictions due to being in the divine hall. He could only expand it to several thousand meters away at maximum and it could not pass through any parts of the structure.

"There are a total of four Class 8 Magical Beasts. Two of them are of the Second Heavenly Layer, the third one is of the Third Heavenly Layer, while the last one is of the Fifth Heavenly Layer," Jian Chen said gruffly. He had already sensed the exact strength of the beasts up ahead through his presence. At the same time, he had discovered that the interior of the hall was humongous, nothing like the few thousand meters tall and long it had seemed from the

outside. The size of the hall as seen from the outside was not its true size.

The beasts surged out from the sixteen tunnels like a flood, meeting the hundred and sixty Saint Rulers very quickly. An intense battle erupted between both sides and violent ripples of energy filled the entire space. However, it failed to break anything.

Nubis was only an inch away from Saint King. Combined with the fact that he was a beast of antiquity, he was not any weaker than ordinary Saint Kings. He charged into the horde of beasts all by himself, constantly impaling them one by one with his hands. He ripped the huge bodies of the beasts to pieces and filled the air with blood and dyed the ground red.

Jian Chen also charged into the beast horde with his King Armament in hand. The sword transformed into a flurry of blurs as they filled the space before him. He chopped through the beasts one by one. Countless heads of the beasts were flung high up into the air, dyeing the sky with blood.

Jian Chen collected monster cores as he killed, getting through several dozen beasts in just a short moment.

He had also collected several dozen Class 6 and Class 7 Monster Cores.

The other people all displayed their abilities as well, slaughtering the Class 6 and Class 7 vicious beasts. Countless corpses immediately blanketed the floor of the hall.

As the number of beasts reduced, the corpses on the floor increased. Meanwhile, all a hundred and sixty people came out unscathed and unharmed.

Roar! At this moment, several deafening roars rang out. The four Class 8 Magical Beasts all attacked, charging directly at the people as blurs.

Over ten Saint Rulers were immediately sent flying by the brutal attacks of the four beasts. They all paled, clearly now quite injured.

“They’re 15th Star vicious beasts! Let’s strike together, everyone!” A loud voice erupted from the crowd and over twenty Saint Rulers immediately took the initiative to charge at one of the Second Heavenly Layer Class 8 Magical Beast, surrounding it and raining it with attacks.

In that moment, everyone devoted themselves to battle. The powerful beasts needed to all be killed off while most of them remained. Otherwise, it would be almost certain death if they came across the beasts all by themselves. This was why all hundred and sixty Saint Rulers worked extremely well together despite coming from different regions.

Jian Chen, Xie Wang, and their four other members of the group kept a Third Heavenly Layer Class 8 beast busy, while Nubis fought the Fifth Heavenly Layer vicious beast with thirty-odd experts on his side. The battle was extremely fierce.

With the King Armament, Jian Chen was as strong as a Third Heavenly Layer Saint King. His sword impaled the neck of the beast with lightning speed, causing it to howl out in pain.

The other people who fought the beast with him all struck out as hard as they could and powerful attacks rained down on it. It caused the beast to become littered with wounds.

However, the beast's defense was extraordinary. The attacks only scathed its skin and failed to injure the beast by a lot.

Jian Chen's eyes became cold and a towering sword intent immediately began to radiate from him. He seemed to have become an imposing divine sword in that moment. He levitated in mid-air as he quickly began to spin. The King Armament embedded in the beast's neck began to spin at a great speed following the motions of Jian Chen's body, constantly expanding the beast's wound like a meat grinder. In the end, Jian Chen directly passed through the wound along with his sword.

The beast howled out powerlessly. A thirty-centimeter hole had already appeared in its not-very-thick neck, leaving only a quarter of its neck still attached to its head.

At this moment, another ray from a blade flashed by. A Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler chopped at the remaining quarter with a machete, severing the head completely and causing it to fly into the air as it sprayed with blood.

Immediately, powerful energies shot from the hands of over ten

Saint Rulers, striking the head in the air and causing it to explode with a boom. The head was blasted apart while a bloody monster core flew out.

Several Saint Rulers immediately tried to take it for themselves but a figure arrived before it with even greater speed. He directly grabbed it; the figure was Jian Chen.

A cold light flashed through the eyes of several Saint Rulers immediately but when they saw that it was Jian Chen, they shut up immediately. The ruler of the Turtle clan was someone who had robbed Qing Yixuan of the eight great human experts and he had even succeeded. No ordinary person could match his courage or strength; they did not want to offend Jian Chen just because of a mere Class 8 Monster Core.

A Third Heavenly Layer Class 8 vicious beast had just died like that in the hands of a few Saint Ruler. Yet, the person who benefited the most from it was Jian Chen, obtaining a Class 8 Monster Core that was rarely seen on the Tian Yuan Continent.

With the death of the beast, the three other Class 8 vicious beasts remained locked in combat with everyone else. The two Second Heavenly Layer beasts were already covered in blood as wounds crisscrossed all over them. They were not going to be lasting much longer.

The final Fifth Heavenly Layer beast remained as tough as ever. There were very few wounds on its body as the ordinary attacks from the Saint Rulers struggled to break through its skin; only Nubis was able to cause relatively deeper wounds.

Bang! Bang! Bang...

With consecutive sounds, several Saint Rulers were knocked into the air by that vicious beast. They all vomited blood, now very heavily injured. It took them quite some time to rise up after being knocked down. They immediately pulled out medicines from their Space Rings to treat their injuries and did not continue the battle.

Bang! With another muffled sound, Nubis was knocked flying by a kick from the beast. He immediately became rather pale.

Jian Chen used the Illusory flash and shooting toward Nubis as a blur. He caught Nubis mid-air and asked in concern, "Are you fine?"

Several of Nubis' ribs were broken; he was quite injured. He endured the agonizing pain as he stood up and said, "That beast is too powerful. Not only is its skin so tough that it's difficult to deal with, it's strength is extremely great too. Jian Chen, you got any more Radiant Spirit Pills? Give me a few."

Jian Chen pulled out a small wooden box and passed it to Nubis without any hesitation. "I have no need for these, so you should keep them. If I'm not with you, use them to treat your wounds."

Nubis directly put the wooden box into his Space Ring without holding back.

“Treat your wounds here fist. I’ll go deal with those two slightly-weaker beasts. I need their monster cores very much.” Jian Chen directly charged at the two Second Heavenly Layer beasts after throwing that down.

Chapter 915: Fight for a Class 8 Monster Core

Currently, the two Second Heavenly Layer Class 8 vicious beasts were covered in blood and close to their deaths. Their attacks had also become weaker and weaker as a result.

“Just some more. They can’t last much longer. They’re almost dead,” called out a Saint Ruler as he hurled a fist that struck the head of one of the beasts forcefully. It jolted the beast’s head violently, cracking its skull.

At this moment, a blur arrived with a flash. Jian Chen used the Illusory Flash to get behind the beast and suddenly swung down with the King Armament that radiated with a destructive aura. It cut into the horrifying wound at the beast’s neck.

Crack! The beast was beheaded by Jian Chen’s strike as large amounts of blood spurted from the remaining stump on its body. It gave off a sharp smell of blood.

With a swing of his hand, Jian Chen stabbed out once again. The King Armament was inserted deeply into the beast’s head and he used the sword to dig out a bloody monster core. Without even wiping it clean, he shoved it into his Space Ring before immediately charging toward the other beast.

A few seconds later, the other beast’s life was ended by Jian Chen as well and so he also obtained its monster core. Jian Chen rejoiced slightly; he had just obtained three Class 8 Monster Cores. This

would have been unimaginable on the Tian Yuan Continent.

“Come deal with this beast. It’s of the 16th Star. We need to finish it off right here and right now or no one would be able to deal with it once we separate. It’ll take us all to our doom.” A Saint Ruler called out for help as he battled the final Class 8 beast. The beast was of the Fifth Heavenly Layer so even though there were over thirty Saint Rulers surrounding and attacking it simultaneously, it was still extremely powerful. It forcefully knocked all the Saint Rulers backward with its own strength.

Immediately, over a hundred Saint Rulers charged up and engaged in a great battle with the final beast. Jian Chen did not just stand around either; he also participated in the slaying of the final vicious beast. The beast was extremely powerful, so they needed to kill it off when there was still a lot of them around. Otherwise, perhaps everyone would die to its claws after they all separated.

Under the attacks from over a hundred Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers, the beast finally produced a howl of regret and collapsed in its own pool of blood. However, there were also over thirty Saint Rulers that had been heavily injured.

The monster core in the beast’s head had become the object of attraction among the crowd. Over twenty Saint Rulers charged up immediately for the head and engaged in a brawl with one another, which directly caused the head to disintegrate. Meanwhile, the monster core hidden deep within it was knocked high up into the sky by the powerful force.

The Saint Rulers all leaped into the air in unison and flying toward the monster core. They all moved extremely fast.

A gleam of light exploded in Jian Chen's eyes and two vague slivers of colored light—one purple and one azure—appeared in his eyes. He grabbed at the empty space, and the monster core immediately changed directions and flew toward him. In the end, Jian Chen caught it firmly.

Over ten of the twenty-odd people immediately gave up once they saw that the person who had obtained it was Jian Chen, ruler of the Turtle clan. However, there were still seven people who charged toward him with killing intent, in an attempt to steal the monster core from him.

Jian Chen's eyes immediately narrowed. Grabbing the monster core tightly with his left hand, the King Armament lashed out with his right. He stabbed out seven times in an instant.

Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding!

With a series of metal clashes, the weapons from all seven people collided with the King Armament in Jian Chen's hand. The weapons struck Jian Chen's sword before being pulled back immediately as all seven people backpedaled hurriedly. All their expressions underwent a drastic change, while their gazes toward Jian Chen were soon filled with deep fear and disbelief.

Jian Chen stood steadily as if his feet were the roots of a tree. He had repelled all seven of them by himself and he seemed to have

done it extremely easily.

This caused all the surrounding people to break into an uproar. In that moment, all of them looked toward Jian Chen with deep dread. It would be extremely unfortunate if they happened to offend such a powerful person in the Octoterra Divine Hall that was isolated from the outside world.

Jian Chen stared coldly at the seven Saint Rulers. He could not help but form a sneer with his lips. “I’d like to see how long you can endure it for.”

Spurt! Spurt! Spurt...

As soon as Jian Chen said that, the seven Saint Rulers all vomited blood. They all became dejected; they had all been injured by the sword Qi from that single clash earlier.

After all, Jian Chen wielded a King Armament; he possessed the strength of a Third Heavenly Layer Saint King. Any casual attack from a Third Heavenly Layer Saint King was not something a Saint Ruler could endure.

All the people present watched on wide-eyed and tongue-tied. The shock in their hearts had reached the absolute maximum.

“Hahaha, the ruler of the Turtle clan sure is extraordinary. I’ve finally been able to witness it today.” Mo Ji laughed aloud as he stepped out from the crowd and arrived directly beside Jian Chen.

He was singing words of praise. Afterward, the three other people stepped out from the crowd and joined Jian Chen as well. They seemed to be indicating to the crowd that they were with the ruler of the Turtle clan.

Jian Chen glanced at the Class 8 Monster Core in his hand and said to the seven people, “Do you still want to fight with me for this monster core?”

“Turtle ruler, sincere apologies. We did not know that it was you who was in possession of the monster core. If we have caused any offense, I hope the turtle ruler can forgive us.” An old man apologized to Jian Chen from the group of seven. His face was earnest.

Jian Chen frowned slightly when he heard that and revealed some slight displeasure. “I don’t like to be called turtle ruler. My name is Jian Chen!”

“Yes, turtle ruler,” the old man replied courteously. He did not dare to defy Jian Chen. Although they were of the same cultivation level, Jian Chen was the ruler of a clan. He would be able to reach the level of a hall elder sooner or later or even surpass that and become an emperor. Let alone the fact that he was afraid of causing any offense himself, even his entire clan would not dare to offend Jian Chen so easily.

However, the old man did not seem to realize what he had said, that he had called Jian Chen ‘turtle ruler’ again.

Jian Chen sighed gently inside. He just could not be bothered with squabbling over these small matters with this old man. After he stored the monster core into his Space Ring, he arrived before Nubis to protect him as he healed.

Now that all the vicious beasts had been killed off, the silent truce between all the people had dissolved. All of them left the area cautiously, staying vigilant of the others.

Everyone knew that there was only a limited number of treasures in the Octoterra Divine Hall. The fewer people there were, the greater chance they would have of obtaining something. As a result, battles could erupt at any moment here; almost all the people present wished for everyone else to die, so that they would be guaranteed to inherit the Octoterra Emperor's legacy and the various treasures within.

A while later, the various groups of people had all disappeared into the sixteen tunnels, which caused the people remaining in the hall to become less and less. In just a short twenty minutes, the entire hall was emptied, only leaving behind Jian Chen's group of seven. A thick smell of blood lingered in the air.

"Jian Chen, let's go as well." Nubis stood up. His wounds had been mostly healed by the Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pills; although it was not a complete recovery, it would no longer affect him greatly.

Jian Chen glanced at the sixteen tunnels and casually picked one. Mo Ji and the three others followed closely behind Jian Chen, Nubis, and Xie Wang.

The divine hall seemed like a maze inside. The tunnels led off in all directions and could be seen almost everywhere. When Jian Chen's group reached the end of their tunnel, they saw many more tunnels that led off to places unknown. The tunnels were like the branches of a tree; each branch would have many smaller branches, while there were even smaller ones of them. It was innumerable and very easily disorientating.

A great beast roar resounded from ahead at this moment. A three-meter-tall Class 7 vicious beast appeared before the group. It stared fixedly at them with its red eyes, before charging toward them.

Jian Chen's eyes immediately lit up when he saw the beast. He did not seem to see it as a powerful opponent but as a valuable Class 7 Monster Core.

"Let me deal with it." Just as Mo Ji was about to charge at the beast, Jian Chen was already one step faster with the King Armament in hand. He beheaded the beast with a single slash and removed its monster core.

The group paid no further attention to the beast's corpse after removing its monster core before continuing on their way.

The group made their way aimlessly through the maze, coming across beasts from time to time. However, all of them were around Class 7, with some even Class 6. Not only did they fail to form any threat to Jian Chen's group, they resulted in a grand harvest for

Jian Chen. He had obtained quite a few monster cores from this.

Just as they passed through a tunnel, their views suddenly opened up. They had come to an extremely large hall.

Jian Chen looked around and his face sank immediately. He had already recognised the hall as the one they had arrived in at the very beginning. They had travelled in a great big circle, actually looping back to where they had started. The only difference was that the mountainous piles of beast corpses had all disappeared.

They were not the first ones to return. There were over forty people scattered everywhere in the hall, conversing with one another currently. They would draw on the floor from time to time analyzing the path they had taken in the maze.

“Crap, we’ve come back again.” Nubis’ expression became rather ugly.

At this very moment, Jian Chen eyes froze. He stared fixedly at the center of the hall. There, he vaguely saw a formation on the floor.

Chapter 916: Leaving the Maze

Jian Chen slowly made his way to the center of the hall as he stared at the formation fixedly.

The circular formation on the ground had a diameter of twenty meters and was in the shape of a pentagram. Countless tiny red lines connected with one another on it, linking up in an extremely complicated and profound manner.

Jian Chen stared at the formation as a sliver of thought appeared on his face. He could remember clearly that when he had first come to the hall, the complicated formation was not present.

“Is this hall perhaps not the one we had originally arrived in but a different one that seems completely the same?” Jian Chen involuntarily guessed inside but he dismissed this thought very quickly. He was certain that this was the same hall he had initially arrived in.

“Hm? There’s a formation here,” another Saint Ruler said in surprise as he too discovered the formation.

All the other Saint Rulers in the hall were drawn over and gathered in the center. They all stared fixedly at the formation as they stood in thought.

“The formation is covered by many of those red lines. Is this perhaps the map to the maze?” said a person as he hypothesized.

“That’s impossible. These red lines form a completely different image to the maze so it can’t be a map.” Someone else dismissed this immediately.

“The formation wasn’t present before. It has only appeared suddenly right now. Perhaps it has something to do with the way out of the maze?” Another person expressed his thoughts.

Everyone became silent. Many of them had thought up to there but they did not have any way to test it.

At this very moment, a loud beast roar reverberated from a tunnel. A vicious beast had just been slaughtered by some Saint Ruler, howling out miserably one last time before its death.

Jian Chen’s eyes lit up. His presence had engulfed the entirety of the formation, so he would be able to sense any changes the formation underwent. Just as the beast had died, he discovered that an additional red line had appeared.

“Does the appearance of this formation have something to do with those beasts?” An idea flashed through Jian Chen’s head.

“When we first entered the divine hall, there wasn’t a formation on the ground. Afterward, we encountered the attacks from a large horde of beasts. After we killed off all of them, their corpses littered the ground and this prevented us from seeing the ground properly. Now that we’ve returned, the corpses have disappeared and there’s now a formation on the floor. Has this formation

appeared because of those beasts?” Jian Chen’s eyes shone as he quickly analyzed the facts.

Suddenly, Jian Chen’s expression changed and he said gruffly, “I know now. This formation should be crucial to how we leave the maze but it’s just been hidden for some reason. We need to use the blood of the beasts to make it appear. For every death, a part of the formation will appear. Once enough beasts have been killed, its entirety will appear. We’ll be able to leave the maze then.”

All the people present became stunned when they heard this, before all staring fixedly at the formation on the ground. They all pondered as they stared at it.

“What evidence do you have to prove what you just said?” A burly, middle-aged man asked Jian Chen.

“Pay close attention to the formation. If I am right, additional red lines will appear when beasts die. These red lines should be a component of the formation and only when they all appear will the formation be complete,” said Jian Chen.

Afterward, no one spoke. They all focused their gazes onto the formation, staring at it fixedly for any changes.

More Saint Ruler entered the hall as they focused on the formation, leading to an increase in the number of people. They immediately noticed the ring of people around the formation as soon as they arrived and they also joined in out of curiosity, all staring at the formation with doubt.

At this moment, another miserable beast howl rang out. Another vicious beast had been killed in the maze.

Just as the beast died, an old man called out from the crowd of people, “Look, another red line has actually appeared.”

“I saw it too. It’s just as he said. Those beasts really are crucial for us to leave here. We need to add to the formation through their blood.”

“Then what’re we waiting for? Let’s go kill those beasts and complete the formation as soon as possible.”

...

All the people called out in surprise and some of them immediately charged into the tunnels impatiently in search of beasts to kill.

Jian Chen’s group did not hesitate either. They casually chose a tunnel and left through it, taking part in the hunt for the beasts. Jian Chen needed the monster cores within the beasts’ bodies very much and any one of them would be a priceless treasure on the Tian Yuan Continent. He needed to collect as much as he could in this rare opportunity.

The beasts in the divine hall were all reared up by the Octoterra Emperor years ago. After so many years of breeding, no one knew

exactly how many there were nor did anyone know how powerful the strongest one was.

Jian Chen's group rampaged in the tunnels, purposefully searching for beasts to hunt. Along the way, they would come across other Saint Rulers from time to time. However, when they noticed that it was Jian Chen, ruler of the Turtle clan, they would reveal deep fear. They would greet Jian Chen enthusiastically before taking a path and leaving. No one dared to offend Jian Chen.

After all, they had all witnessed Jian Chen's strength when he killed the Fifth Heavenly Layer Class 8 vicious beast earlier.

In the blink of an eye, three days had passed. In these three days, Jian Chen constantly shuttled back and forth within the maze, hunting down beasts. In these days of slaughter, countless beasts had been felled by Jian Chen's hands. He collected a great pile of monster cores as a result.

Rumble!

Just as Jian Chen killed off the beast he was dealing with, the entire maze suddenly began to shake violently. In the hall, the complete formation had finally appeared, shining with a dazzling red light that filled the entire hall. In that very moment, the hall had been filled with an extremely powerful energy.

In the next moment, the surrounding walls of the maze slowly began to sink, quickly disappearing into the ground completely. As

they disappeared, it revealed the many experts in the maze.

“The maze has disappeared. That formation really was the way out of the maze,” the experts all cried out happily as they watched the surroundings.

Jian Chen removed the monster core from the beast’s head and then looked around. He discovered that he was now actually in a large square. It was extremely large with an area of several hundred square kilometers. The maze was constructed in this square.

“The divine hall sure is different on the inside compared with the outside. The inside is actually so big; just the square completely exceeds the size of the hall we saw outside.” Nubis sighed emotionally after looking around.

“The hall where we originally appeared in should be the main entrance of the divine hall, while this square should be the first portion of the divine hall. Let’s continue onward,” said Jian Chen, before heading toward the depths.

At the same time, all the other Saint Rulers set out as well. They maintained a certain distance between one another as they slowly made their way into the depths, each filled with caution. In there, not only did they need to stay vigilant of the people around them, they also needed to watch out for dangers from the divine hall itself.

At this very moment, Jian Chen’s eyes froze. He suddenly turned

to one side and saw that a hundred meters away, the space had begun to tremble violently. It had enveloped five Saint Rulers that traveled together, sucking them away.

“Everyone be careful, there are formations here,” people immediately cried out from the surroundings. Everyone’s vigilance rose once again.

Everyone continued their way toward the interior of the divine hall cautiously without paying any more attention to whether the trapped people had survived or not.

It was extremely difficult to detect the hidden formations. For the next period of time, the formations are hidden everywhere all appeared, trapping the Saint Rulers that had triggered them. Even Jian Chen’s group ended up triggering three powerful killing formations but they managed to break through it successfully with the seven of them. They passed through the initial area of the divine hall, reaching the central region.

Many grand halls and pavilions stood in the central region of the hall and there were many perfectly-preserved gardens and ponds.

Flowers bloomed in the garden, giving off a heavy fragrance. Many unknown insects moved among the plants, while quite a few fishes swam about in the ponds. The fragrance of the water lingered in the entire region.

Under the influence of the divine hall, all the organisms, regardless of the various insects or the fishes, had evolved beyond

what they seemed. They all possessed extremely powerful offensive abilities. They had existed for countless years and some of them even radiated with auras akin to Saint Rulers. The energy they used was extremely odd, similar to the energy of the divine hall, which was extremely powerful.

Everyone knew the strength of these organisms, so they maintained a wide distance from them. No one dared to provoke them as they continued forward.

The central region of the hall was like a city crisscrossed with paths. Everyone gradually scattered after arriving here, spreading out in all directions.

Boom! Suddenly, a violent sound rumbled in the distance. A Saint Ruler had attempted to enter a hall. Just as he opened the door, he was knocked into the air by a violent ripple of energy that had surged out from within. Blood sprayed from his mouth without restraint.

However, the door did not close up and remained open.

“Let’s go in and have a look.” A voice rang out and three Saint Rulers immediately entered the hall cautiously. At the same time, blue armor materialized on them, completely condensed from energy.

Noticing the armor on them, an undetectable gleam of light flashed across Jian Chen’s eyes. He had fought Saint Kings many times, which was why he could identify that the three suits of

armor all radiated with a vast presence unique to Saint Kings.

“That’s not their power. There’s a Saint King’s power within them and they used that to condense the armor to protect themselves.” Jian Chen reached an understanding very quickly.

The Saint King’s power clearly would only be used when they faced true danger. Right now, they were entering an unknown hall; the dangers would definitely be much greater than that of the vicious beasts, which was why they had used the power without any hesitation.

Many people outside paid attention to the movements of the three people. Their eyes all flickered with a certain light, hesitating about whether to venture into a hall and see what was inside.

Boom!

At this moment, a violent rumble resounded from within the hall. A powerful energy immediately rippled from the hall, causing the surrounding space to tremble.

Chapter 917: The Octoterra Emperor's Schemes

At this moment, a violent rumble resounded from within the hall. A powerful energy immediately rippled from the hall, causing the surrounding space to tremble.

The hearts of everyone outside sank. They were already expecting that the people who had entered were doomed. The halls really did hide great danger, it was not as peaceful as it seemed.

The hall boomed a few times before quickly returning to peace. Afterward, there was no more activity at all. No one could see what had happened inside due to the Saint Emperor's power in the hall. Even Jian Chen's presence could not pass through the walls.

"Looks like they've fallen here." Similar thoughts flashed through the heads of many people. Afterward, their dread for that hall became denser and denser and they swore to never enter it.

However, a series of footsteps rang out soon afterward. The three people who had entered had actually walked out alive, and each and everyone of them was filled with joy. Clearly, they had found some great things.

Currently, their armors had dulled. It had assisted them in resisting those violent attacks, now greatly consumed of power.

Their appearance immediately drew everyone's attention. They

all stared at the three people in shock and doubt as they revealed expressions of disbelief.

“They’re actually still alive...”

“Just what was there inside...”

Many people asked immediately but they did not get any response. As soon as the three people came out from a hall, they immediately hurried toward another one without any hesitation.

“There must be some good stuff in these halls. We need to go find them. We can’t let others take it before us,” someone said loudly. Afterward, the people all charged toward the surrounding halls in groups without any more worry.

“Let’s go have a look as well.” Jian Chen waved his arm and led the people behind him to a nearby hall.

Violent booms reverberated from everywhere. A few Saint Rulers in the surroundings had already opened the doors to halls as they wore armor condensed from a Saint King’s power. There were also quite a few people who were knocked far away by the powerful energy that had erupted from the halls.

Jian Chen witnessed everything that was happening in the surroundings. He realized that of all the experts that had entered the Octoterra Divine Hall this time, probably everyone had some of a Saint King’s power other than Nubis, Xie Wang, and him. The

Saint Kings had deposited some of their power in them to increase their ability to survive, as once they brought back treasures, the ones that benefitted would be the clan supporting them.

“Looks like there’s also Saint King’s power in Mo Ji and the others. I just wonder how great the power is and what level of cultivation the Saint King possessed when they deposited their power into them.” Jian Chen glanced at the four people behind him from the corner of his eye and secretly raised his awareness.

The seven of them stopped before a hall and stood in silence for a while. Xie Wang spoke from one side, “As soon as the door is open, there’ll be a very powerful attack. It can injure any one of us, so we might as well open it together.”

“Sure, then let’s open it together,” an old man said steadily. He was Gao Da, one of the four people that had joined Jian Chen’s group.

Soon enough, the seven of them opened the door together. Just as it opened, a powerful ripple of energy immediately shot toward them.

They struck out in unison, using their powerful attacks to collide with the ripple of energy.

With a rumble, all seven of them were knocked backward by the energy. They all took a dozen or so steps before stabilizing themselves but were all unharmed.

They entered the hall. The hall was beautifully decorated and although it had already been countless years since it was last opened, it was extremely clean inside and without dust.

Jian Chen glanced around, locking onto the table in the room very quickly. There was a Space Ring, a letter, a thin book, and a stone square board around thirty centimeters in length and width on the table.

The seven of them subconsciously walked toward the room. Abruptly, the space around them began to ripple violently and their surroundings disappeared in that very instant. It turned into a scorching sea of fire that radiated with terrifying heat.

“It’s so hot. This is a formation. We’ve fallen into another formation,” growled Xie Wang. A powerful force immediately exuded from his body, forming a barrier around him to protect him from the heat.

Jian Chen stared at the flames calmly. He felt the terrifying heat and said normally, “This formation is much more powerful than anyone that we’ve encountered before. If I’ve guessed correctly, this formation should be prepared for 15th Star experts.”

“I dislike the heat here very much. Ruler, let’s work together and break through immediately,” Mo Ji said impatiently with a frown. To the Sea race that lived in the ocean, fire was their weakness. There was no member of the Sea race that liked fire.

Jian Chen wielded his King Armament and leaped up high into

the sky. He slashed violently at the space above as his sword radiated with a devastating aura.

This attack was equivalent to a casual strike from a Saint King. It completely exceeded the strength of a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler and immediately caused the formation space to tremble violently as the sword cut through the air, before shattering loudly.

The sea of fire disappeared and the surroundings returned to how it was previously. Jian Chen's single attack had broken through it.

When the four people who had tagged along witnessed this, they immediately became overwhelmed with shock. What they knew was that the Turtle clan was a clan with powerful defense and weak attacks. However, the ruler of the Turtle clan before them right now had displayed a strength that completely dispelled what was said in the legends.

“The ruler's strength really has broadened our horizons, it is incredible for the ruler to be able to break through a formation targeted at 15th Star experts with a single attack,” someone said a few words of praise with a dazzling smile.

Jian Chen remained as usual and said, “This formation may be targeted toward 15th Star experts but it's no longer as strong as it was before after so much time has passed. Otherwise, I definitely wouldn't have been able to break through it so easily. Let's go see exactly what treasures are hiding in this hall.” With that, Jian Chen entered the room with his King Armament in hand. He glanced past the items on the table, before locking onto the stone

board.

Jian Chen extended his hand toward the stone board. His hand sank when he held it; the board did not have a weight that matched its size. It was at least several hundred kilograms in weight. Lifting it would be an extremely arduous task for those with weaker strength.

Jian Chen lifted up the stone board without any difficulty and examined it. There were a few engravings on it but it seemed incomplete. It was impossible to determine what it was. However, Jian Chen could feel a pressure from it that seemed to originate from the world. The pressure was filled with surging battle intent.

Jian Chen sensed the pressure carefully. For some reason, he felt familiar with the pressure as if he had felt it somewhere before.

Suddenly, an idea flashed through Jian Chen's head. He growled, "This is a fragment of a Tian Level Saint Technique." Saint techniques were how the people of the sea realm referred to battle skills, where they split them into the four levels of Tian, Di, Xuan and Huang. Tian Level Saint Techniques were Saint Tier Battle Skills on the Tian Yuan Continent.

All the other people stared at the stone board in Jian Chen's hand with burning interest when they heard that. However, they became disappointed soon after. Xie Wang sighed and said, "It's a pity that it's incomplete. It's useless."

"Even when complete, Tian Level Saint Techniques are

extremely difficult to comprehend. There are even many 16th Star experts who have failed to grasp one. That's even more impossible with the one incomplete right now. If we don't collect all the pieces, this fragment will remain useless," Mo Ji said with a sigh as well.

Jian Chen lowered his head in thought. He could still remember clearly that when he had assisted the Gesun Kingdom in repelling the four kingdom coalition all those years ago, he had once cleared out a kingdom's treasury. In there, he had surprisingly found a fragment of a Saint Tier Battle Skill.

However, that fragment clearly did not match up with the one that they had just found as the two were different battle skills.

Afterward, Jian Chen examined the three other items. The Space Ring was filled with large quantities of grand quality crystal coins, reaching into the tens of millions. There were also several monster cores besides the coins, ranging from Class 5 to Class 7. There was even a Class 8 Monster Core.

An incomplete cultivation method was recorded inside the thin book. It was only a small part of it.

The letter contained the Octoterra Emperor's comprehension of his cultivation as well as some matters regarding the latter part of his life. It too was incomplete.

"Other than the Space Ring, the other three objects are all incomplete. They're basically trash. This Octoterra Emperor sure

likes to mess with people.” Nubis could not help but curse.

Jian Chen paid no attention to Nubis’ grumbling and looked toward the others. He asked, “How do you want to split these items? Does anyone have any good suggestions?”

Mo Ji and the three others glanced at each other when they heard that. One of them then spoke a suggestion, “The ruler’s strength is extraordinary and will be more capable of protecting these items. As a result, I would recommend placing the objects in the ruler’s possession for now. We can discuss how we split it in detail after we’ve left the hall.”

“I agree with this suggestion...”

Everyone else agreed to this suggestion and Jian Chen accepted it as well. He put everything away into a separate Space Ring.

They checked through the hall once again. They had virtually flipped the entire hall upside down but they found nothing else. They then left the area.

They entered another hall that had not been entered yet as soon as they got out. Breaking through a formation, they successfully obtained what was stored inside.

However, the things inside were all exactly the same. There was a Space Ring that contained a small fortune, an incomplete letter, an incomplete cultivation method and a small fragment of the Saint

Tier Battle Skill.

Afterward, they entered a third hall. They obtained the exact same objects as before. It seemed like everything in each hall was the same.

“Looks like the Octoterra Emperor has divided the items into countless pieces and placed them in each hall. You would need to obtain all the other pieces to get the whole item. The Octoterra Emperor actually wants us to kill each other.” Jian Chen’s face sank as he reached an understanding of the Octoterra Emperor’s intentions very quickly.

Of the items the Octoterra Emperor had left behind, everything could make people drool regardless if it was the incomplete Saint Tier Battle Skill, his comprehensions, his understandings regarding cultivation or his cultivation method. Even 16th Star experts would find it to be an irresistible enticement. Jian Chen could already expect that there would be a brutal massacre between the hundred and sixty experts that had entered the divine hall.

Chapter 918: A Barrier's Obstruction (One)

“We’ve entered a total of four halls and all the items in them are exactly the same. I’m pretty sure that the other halls will have the same items. Looks like only by gathering items from all the halls will you get the complete Tian Level Saint Technique, cultivation method, and comprehension of cultivation from the Octoterra Emperor,” Nubis murmured as he too had thought of this. His eyes flickered a few times, vaguely revealing a vicious light. Clearly, he had already thought about what he needed to do.

A gleam of light flashed across Mo Ji’s eyes when he saw Jian Chen and Nubis’ expressions. “Ruler, we might as well just gather all the other parts. They’re all invaluable treasures. The Tian Level Saint Technique in particular; other than the three halls, no one else in the vast sea realm has possession of any. If the ruler is able to return to the Turtle clan with the complete technique, it will definitely cause the clan’s strength to skyrocket.”

Mo Ji was hit with Xie Wang’s retort as soon as he finished speaking. “Are you crazy? We only have seven people including you and me. Do you want us to fight with over a hundred 14th Star experts that are no weaker than us? Plus, since they’re able to enter this place, they’re definitely all people of talent. Every single person will possess extremely strong strength in battle. And who knows, they might be hiding powerful trump cards. You never know, someone might have grasped a Tian Level Saint Technique. They’ll be very difficult to handle.”

Mo Ji stared straight at Xie Wang and said confidently, “It’s not like you haven’t seen the ruler’s strength. Do you really believe they’re the ruler’s opponent? It’s a piece of cake if the ruler wants

to kill them. So what if they know Tian Level Saint Techniques? They won't have the time to cast it at all."

"Jian Chen, what do you think?" Nubis looked toward Jian Chen in thought, clearly wanting to listen to his decision.

Jian Chen shook his head. "Let's not worry over this for now. We're still in the central region of the divine hall, so there's still a long way to go. Also, I believe that the objects toward the end will be even more valuable. We don't need to fall out with everyone over these small things and fight each other to the death. Alright, let's stop this here and let's go."

With that, Jian Chen directly exited the hall. No one had realized that an undetectable sliver of disappointment had appeared in Mo Ji's eyes.

At this moment, almost all the other halls had been emptied out by others. All the doors were wide open, while whatever that was inside had been taken away. Many Saint Rulers stood around cautiously with their groups in the surroundings, each and every one of them filled with vigilance. They clearly had discovered the secret of the halls as well.

"Everyone, may I ask if the items you've obtained from each hall are the exact same? That they are a fragment of a Tian Level Saint Technique, the Octoterra Emperor's comprehension in cultivation, the Octoterra Emperor's cultivation method and a Space Ring?" At this very moment, a heavy voice rang out. It echoed through the entire region and everyone heard it clearly.

The speaker was a burly middle-aged man. He was bare-chested, revealing his powerful muscles and he wore shorts underneath. His attire was extremely simple but he radiated with a wild presence. He seemed like a brutal, feral beast.

The surroundings fell into a silence. The people who recognized this man revealed expressions of fear. The man was a renowned expert of the Heaven's Spirit Hall. His name was Thysnich, a genius of a large clan as well as a ruler of that clan. In just a thousand years of cultivation, he had reached the peak of the 14th Star and had even grasped a Tian Level Saint Technique that he could cast proficiently. He was extremely powerful. Very few people dared to provoke him.

There was even a rumor in the sea realm that Thysnich had recently been practicing a wondrous ruler technique that delayed his cultivation. Otherwise, he probably would have reached the 15th Star long ago.

Any ruler possessed talent that was no weaker than beasts of antiquity. They were destined to become as powerful as hall elders in the future or even emperors. They could not be underestimated.

Thysnich slowly scanned the surrounding people with a sharp glare, causing many of them to hide their expressions. He laughed and said, "Everyone, I guess many of you understand that this is a scheme of the Octoterra Emperor. He has split the item into many pieces and placed them in different halls for us to obtain, with intentions of making us kill each other."

Thysnich paused then continued, “Correct, I need to say that the Tian Level Battle Skill, the Octoterra Emperor’s cultivation method, and his knowledge and experiences of cultivation are treasures you can’t just go looking for but don’t forget that we’ve only reached the center of the hall. I believe there will be even more precious treasures toward the depths, so there’s no need for us to fight to the death over these objects before us and give up on the other treasure in the depths as a result.”

As soon as the people heard his words, many of them had a change of heart. They immediately understood and the hostile aura from everyone decreased slightly.

“Looks like we’re not going to end up fighting,” Nubis said from behind Jian Chen with a slightly disappointed tone. He seemed to only be eager for everyone to start fighting.

“Let’s go,” murmured Jian Chen. They passed through the many halls and walked toward the depths. He did not worry at all over the Saint Tier Battle Skill fragments, pieces of cultivation method, or the Octoterra Emperor’s experience in cultivation. Currently, everyone was in the sealed divine hall. As long as no one could find the way to get out, no one could leave. He would have his chance to collect all the pieces and fragments later on.

Jian Chen’s group was the first to leave. They made their way unhurriedly down the wide path among the halls, immediately drawing the attention of many people in the surroundings. Everyone present was still wavering in a mental stalemate, so anyone who dared to leave confidently at this moment was naturally very attention-catching.

“It’s that terrifying turtle ruler.” All the people revealed a silver of extreme fear when they recognized that the person at the very front was Jian Chen. Before, when they hunted the vicious beasts, Jian Chen had repelled seven experts in one stroke and had even heavily injured them. This shocked everyone.

From that moment onward, everyone’s gaze toward Jian Chen underwent an overwhelming change. Who was it that said that members of the Turtle clan had better defense and weak attacks? The appearance of this Turtle clan ruler had completely overthrown their prior knowledge of the clan.

Thysnich stared deeply at Jian Chen’s back as a sliver of hostility appeared in the depths of his eyes. He thought, “Ruler of the Turtle clan, you will become a powerful opponent of mine. We will end up fighting sooner or later. I just wonder if you’re stronger or am I on another level?” There was only one legacy of the Octoterra Emperor. It was destined to only be obtained by a single person of the hundred and sixty. The divine hall definitely would be dyed with the blood of Saint Rulers for this legacy.

There were many other famed experts besides Thysnich among the people who had entered the hall. Although they were not as well known as Thysnich, they possessed many hidden trump cards, none of which would be easily dealt with. Virtually all of them had come for the legacy, so if they wanted to obtain it, they needed to eliminate the strongest competitors first.

Undoubtedly, Jian Chen and Thysnich were the top competitors to them.

Unknowingly, the outstanding Jian Chen and the renowned Thysnich had already become the thorns in many people's backsides. They were two great targets that needed to be eliminated.

The other experts all left with various thoughts and feelings after Jian Chen's departure. They all made way for the depths of the Octoterra Divine Hall.

There were various formations hidden in the divine hall but none of them were more powerful than the ones on Dragon Island. With the corrosion of time, none of them were as powerful as they had once been before. Jian Chen's group blazed through the obstacles, breaking through many formations and barriers. They finally arrived at the very depths of the divine hall.

A huge hall stood in the very depths of the divine hall. It had a total of nine floors, while each floor was over thirty meters tall. Jian Chen's group arrived before it, lifting their heads from the front entrance to gaze at how grand it was. Suddenly, they all experienced a false impression. Weirdly enough, they felt as if the hall was a world. It represented a sky, resonating with the earth from afar. It was filled with a vast presence.

More and more people gathered outside the hall. The other experts had come as well and many were in a horrible shape, clearly quite tormented by the formations. There was barely anyone who remained uninjured. However, no one had lost their lives.

Along the way, they had obtained a pitiful amount of things. Other than some monster cores they had obtained from killing the vicious beasts earlier, everything they found in the halls was incomplete and useless.

“This hall should be the core of the divine hall. This definitely would be the place that the Octoterra Emperor once lived so there would be quite some treasures inside.”

“There are definitely quite a few treasures the Octoterra Emperor has left behind but we’ve only seen a bare minimum along the way. I think the treasures must all be in the hall.”

“The Octoterra Emperor’s legacy must be inside. It must be much more dangerous inside as well.”

Everyone participated in gossip, all staring at the hall with gazes of burning greed. Once they obtained the legacy of the Octoterra Emperor, they would be destined to become an emperor. This was something irresistible to all of them.

Although everyone felt extremely impatient, no one moved. Everyone wanted to inherit the legacy but no one wanted to be the one leading the way. Unknown danger lurked before them, so it was extremely likely for the person who entered first to die first as well.

Jian Chen did not move either. Instead, he stood there and inspected every part of the hall. He expanded his presence to his maximum but it could only expand to less than a thousand meters

away. It could not pass through the structure and could only observe slightly more than the naked eye.

Chapter 919: A Barrier's Obstruction (Two)

Jian Chen did not move either. Instead, he stood there and inspected every part of the hall. He expanded his presence to his maximum but it could only expand to less than a thousand meters away. It could not pass through the structure and could only observe slightly more than the naked eye.

A while later, Jian Chen seemed to discover something. A faint smile formed on his lips and he walked forward without any hesitation.

His movements immediately drew the attention of everyone. They all stared at him fixedly, wanting to use him to test the path ahead. At the same time, they charged up their power, ready to rush in at any moment.

Jian Chen walked slowly, approaching the grand hall a step at a time. When he reached a hundred meters from the hall, a powerful ripple of energy immediately appeared from below and a blue barrier quickly rose up. It formed a circular shape, enveloping the hall inside and blocking Jian Chen outside.

“There’s actually a barrier protecting the hall!” cried out people from the crowd. All of them were filled with joy. This was just evidence that the hall definitely stored extraordinary treasures.

Jian Chen stabbed at the barrier with his King Armament but it did not even tremble. Its defense was unimaginably powerful.

Jian Chen's face sank slightly as his eyes flickered a bit. The innate ability of the Winged Tiger God flashed across his mind before he cried out, "This barrier is extremely powerful. It can't be broken through by just a single person. Everyone, why don't we work together to break it?"

"We need to break this barrier if we want to enter the hall. I, Thysnich, agree with the ruler of the Turtle clan's suggestion. I am willing to chip in a portion of my strength to break the barrier." Thysnich was the first one to speak his thoughts.

Afterward, the other people all agreed to participate. They reached an agreement between everyone very quickly.

Vast ripples of energy surged from them. In that moment, they all began to move, charging up a powerful strike to break through the barrier together. No one was excluded.

With a signal, over a hundred experts struck out with powerful blows. Over a hundred ripples of powerful energy shot from their hands in unison and collided forcefully with the barrier.

With a boom, the violent residual energy formed a terrifying storm as it wreaked havoc in the surroundings. It knocked all them backward and no one was able to keep a stable footing.

The blue barrier around the hall rippled gently as if a pebble had been tossed into a calm lake. It returned to how its previous state very quickly. The attacks from over a hundred Saint Rulers could only have such a tiny effect on the barrier.

They all became stern when they saw this. The strength of the barrier had far exceeded anything they had expected, almost to a level where they refused to believe its strength.

“That Octoterra Emperor’s too great of a bastard for leaving behind such a strong barrier. Even 15th Star experts would find it very difficult to break through, let alone us,” some people cursed involuntarily.

“The way out should be in the hall as well. That means if we can’t enter it, we can’t leave. Does the Octoterra Emperor intend to trap us all here until our deaths?”

“What does the Octoterra Emperor want? Only peak 14th Star experts can enter his divine hall, yet he’s made the barrier so tough. He clearly doesn’t want us to enter. Does he really want to trap us here forever?”

All the people revealed extremely ugly expressions as they cursed furiously.

Jian Chen frowned in thought before speaking aloud, “Calm down, everyone. The strength of this barrier exceeds our imaginations so if we want to break through it, we can’t hold back at all. Why don’t we try once again but this time with our full strength and see if we can break through it or not?”

Currently, that was their only hope. Everyone immediately agreed and began moving together. Terrifying ripples of energy

began to radiate from each and every person, this time several folds more powerful than before. Everyone was virtually using their strongest attack now, striking out with holding back anything. An extremely frightening stream of energy forcefully struck the barrier.

As it was the full powered attack from over a hundred Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers, it was so powerful that it could even slay Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings. However, the results were the same as before; the barrier only trembled slightly and had easily resisted the terrifying attack.

This time, everyone's faces sunk to a dark hue. The Octoterra Divine Hall was completely closed, so only by entering the hall ahead would there be a chance of leaving. If they could not break through the barrier, they would be stuck there.

A forceful light flickered through Thysnich's eyes. He called out, "Let's do it again. I hope no one holds back anything. Those who can use Tian Level Saint Techniques, use them! And that power in your bodies, use that too! If we can't break through the barrier, none of us will be able to leave."

A great aura immediately radiated from Thysnich. Following it closely, a terrifying pressure descended from the sky, through the obstructions of the divine hall and filling up the entire space. Air stopped flowing while everything fell silent. Time seemed to have stopped.

Thysnich had been forced to use his Tian Level Saint Technique.

Many Saint Rulers present also revealed determined expressions when they saw what Thysnich was doing. They no longer bothered with any hiding, unleashing their greatest trump cards. Immediately, over twenty terrifying pressures descended from the sky.

Over twenty Tian Level Saint Techniques were being cast in unison. The pressure from was enough to make the sky to tremble; even within the Octoterra Divine Hall, space was greatly affected as it distorted.

The other Saint Rulers all experienced a stifling sensation; the pressure made breathing difficult. Over twenty Tian Level Saint Techniques were cast in unison. The sea realm had never experienced something so grand.

Jian Chen's heart shivered. Tian Level Saint Techniques were extremely difficult to comprehend, to the point that even some Saint Kings could not use any. He never thought that there would actually be over twenty people out of the hundred and sixty that had entered who could use them. This had far exceeded anything he had expected.

The saint techniques were charged up very quickly. In that moment, all the other experts did not bother to hold back anymore either. They all used their trump cards, using their Saint King's power if they had any and charging up their strongest attacks if they did not have any Saint King's power.

Jian Chen did not sit around either. His King Armament shone with a dazzling dark light as destructive energy coiled around the weapon. It radiated with a chilling aura.

“Attack!”

As Thysnich yelled out, everyone struck out together. The Tian Level Saint Techniques and over a hundred strands of Saint King’s power coiled together into a dragon, colliding forcefully against the barrier with devastating strength.

Boom!

With a deafening sound, the attacks collided with the barrier, causing it to shake violently. However, it stabilized very quickly once again and did not shatter. The attacks from all of them immediately transformed into a violent storm of energy, shooting back and colliding violently with them in the end.

All the people were knocked into the air by this rebound of energy. Many became heavily injured as blood spurted from their mouths, dying the air red. If it were not for the fact that the barrier had absorbed a large portion of the attacks, probably no one would still be alive.

They were all knocked thousands of meters away before falling onto the ground in a horrible condition. They were all pale-faced, while Jian Chen and Nubis were not exceptions to this either. Both were injured by the terrifying energy. However, Jian Chen was protected by his Chaotic Body, so he was better off than everyone

else. All he suffered were some insignificant scrapes.

However, everyone became stunned when they saw how the barrier was completely fine. They all became despaired. Over twenty Tian Level Saint Techniques and attacks from over a hundred experts had failed to break the barrier. The barrier's strength had completely overthrown what they had expected. It just was not something they could break through.

Roar!

Suddenly, loud beast roars rang out in the surroundings and the ground soon began to tremble gently. The figures of countless vicious beasts had appeared from all directions and they all charged at the people with blood-shot eyes. They were innumerable, far more than the horde they had initially encountered.

“God dammit, these beasts just have to come when we’re all injured, don’t they? And there are so many. How are we going to deal with them?”

“Perhaps we need to use a similar method to how we escaped the maze to enter the hall? That we need to use the blood of these vicious beasts to complete a formation?”

“There’s no time. Everyone focus on healing or we’ll all die in the mouths of these beasts.”

Everyone immediately began to take their respective medicines and pills, using every moment to heal their wounds and recover their consumed energy. Virtually every person present belonged to a large organization, so the medicines they used were all very renowned through the sea realm and very valuable. Some of them were even on par with Radiant Spirit Pills. Their complexions took a turn for the better as soon as they consumed the medicines. It was unable to allow them to achieve a full recovery in such a short amount of time but at least it had stabilized and reduced their wounds.

The surrounding horde of beasts was packed together densely and extremely numerous. Soon enough, all the Saint Rulers were surrounded by the tide-like beast horde, while another bloody slaughter erupted once again.

All the beasts ranged between Class 5 and Class 7, with some Class 8 beasts sandwiched in between. It pressured everyone greatly, injuring quite a few people in a short time. With no other choice, those people could only use the sparsely-remaining Saint King's power to condense another suit of armor as they took pills and medicines like candy.

Jian Chen, Nubis, and Xie Wang all participated in the slaughter of the beasts with everything they had. They were dyed in blood, making it difficult to tell whether they were person or beast. Nubis' hands were golden, constantly stabbing beast after beast. He would use his poison to suppress the beasts first and then tear them into pieces. From the tips of his fingers, golden threads would shoot out from time to time, tunneling into the heads of Class 5 and Class 6 Magical Beasts. It would kill them in one stroke and take their monster cores.

The King Armament in Jian Chen's hand constantly danced about, enveloping the surroundings with blurs and ending the lives of the beasts mercilessly. All the Class 5 and Class 6 beasts could not even withstand a single blow from his sword, falling from just a single strike. Only Class 7 Magical Beasts could last for some time but they too would not be able to avoid death in the end.

Thysnich roared out angrily as he constantly bisected beasts with the two blades in his hands. He had already formed a path completely forged from beast corpses behind him.

Chapter 920: Hanging by a Thread

Thysnich was also covered in blood. Despite his powerful strength, he struggled to remain unscathed when faced with the attacks of so many beasts at the same level of cultivation. His burly body was covered with tooth marks and slashes from the beasts' claws, while he had already been dyed red by blood. It was unknown whether this was his own blood or the beasts'.

Nubis was also covered in injuries, becoming bloody all over as well. Perhaps only Jian Chen remained unharmed out of all hundred and sixty experts. The defense of Jian Chen's Chaotic Body was so great that ordinary Class 7 vicious beasts were unable to cause him any harm, their sharp claws, and teeth unable to pierce his skin. Only the beasts beyond Class 7 could pose some threat to him but Jian Chen would kill them off as soon as possible whenever he discovered any.

Xie Wang, Mo Ji, and the others stuck closely to Jian Chen and Nubis' back. They were relatively weak compared to Jian Chen and Nubis, so they struggled very much to fend off the attacks from so many beasts. As a result, they too were littered with injuries.

Battle cries resounded everywhere, while the violent rumblings from the collision of energy constantly rang out. Violent energy ripples wreaked havoc throughout the entire hall and the ground was dyed red with blood. There was so much blood that a small pool had basically been formed.

Suddenly, the amount of blood on the ground began to decrease rapidly. It sank into the ground quickly, before it all flowed toward

the hall in the barrier.

No one noticed this.

At the same time, an extremely powerful soul rippled through the hall as if a great, sleeping spirit was slowly awakening.

The rippling of the soul was blocked by the barrier so it did not make it out. None of the experts fighting outside could detect it.

“Twenty thousand years. People have finally come in. Kill, kill, kill to your heart’s content. Let the blood dye this divine hall red...” A hazy voice sounded in the empty hall. It was impossible to tell whether it was male or female but it was filled with malevolence.

No one knew about the weird phenomenon inside the hall. The experts fought with the thousands of beasts for three whole days before finally killing off all of them. Countless Class 7 beasts had died in their hands, while even the number of dead Class 8 beasts reached over twenty. However, they were all below the Fifth Heavenly Layer.

Currently, the ground was littered with beast corpses. Over a hundred experts sat on top of the corpses as they breathed heavily; trying to catch their breaths. Their faces were filled with exhaustion. They were covered with terrifying wounds and were currently in a horrendous shape.

The battle was extremely intense. There were many more beasts this time and they were all much more powerful than the horde they had encountered at the start. They had also struck exactly when they were all heavily injured, taking them by surprise. From that battle, almost everyone had expended all of the Saint King's power stored within them, while barely any medicines and pills were left.

Over forty experts had died in the battle. They had all fallen to the claws of the Class 8 beasts, leaving a little over a hundred alive. If it were not for the armors condensed from the Saint King's power among the people alive, they probably would have fallen long ago and be dead by now.

Jian Chen was in the best condition out of them all. Although he had been injured by Class 8 Magical Beasts, he could recover automatically without any medicines thanks to his Chaotic Body's powerful regeneration. Currently, he worked at leisure through the mountainous piles of corpses to collect monster cores.

Thysnich sat cross-legged on the corpse of a Class 8 Magical Beast as he recovered silently. He stared at the busy Jian Chen as he said emotionlessly, "The ruler of the Turtle clan sure has great defense. I've witnessed it today."

Jian Chen raised his head to glance at Thysnich after hearing that but said nothing. He then continued his collection of monster cores; these monster cores seemed to be more important than leaving to Jian Chen.

At this moment, Jian Chen seemed to realize something. He froze

as he cried out, “The blood on the ground has actually all disappeared.”

When they heard this, all the remaining experts immediately flipped through the corpses as they ignored their wounds. They uncovered the tough ground after kicking aside a few dead bodies.

The ground was extremely dry. Other than a few pieces of vicious beasts, there was no blood at all, not a single trace.

“Odd. Where’d all the blood from the beasts go? There’s no formation on the ground either. Is it different to escaping from the maze?” said someone in confusion. His voice was very weak.

“Look everyone. There’s no blood in the bodies of the beasts either,” cried out another person. With that, a few people immediately chopped up a few beast corpses. As expected, they found that all the blood had disappeared, without even a droplet remaining.

Jian Chen’s expression changed. He immediately thought back to when he was removing the monster cores from the heads of the corpses. He did not realize it then but thinking carefully now, he actually did not see any blood either.

“Look, their blood has run dry too,” someone else cried out. An old man carried the corpse of a Sea race expert as his face was filled with shock.

All of their faces darkened severely. This was so odd that it had exceeded their knowledge. No one knew whether this event was good or bad.

“If my guess is right, the blood should have all been sucked away by the divine hall,” an old man hypothesised after a while. That was the only way to explain everything that had happened.

“But why does the divine hall have to suck away the blood?” A few confused voices rang out. They could not work it out no matter how hard they thought.

At this very moment, the ground trembled gently once more. Heavy steps rang out from the distance as several vast presences filled the entire sky.

This sudden activity caused the relaxed experts to raise their awareness. When they looked over in the direction that the activity originated from, each and every one of them became pale. Five beasts, all over thirty meters in height, slowly made their way toward them. Each beast radiated with a terrifying aura, all at the 16th Star. They were all of the Fifth Heavenly Layer or greater.

“This bloody Octoterra Divine Hall. Why’re there so many beasts in here? Now we’re done for, we’re doomed.” Every person became despaired. Even at their peak, they would not be able to defeat the five 16th Star beasts, let alone now when they were all exhausted. They did not even have the power to deal with a single one, much less five.

Jian Chen also became grim. His eyes flickered as he secretly ordered the artifact spirit to awaken the white tiger within the saint artifact. If the situation took an irrecoverable turn for the worst, he would use the white tiger to pass through the barrier.

The white tiger's ability to ignore all formations and barriers was Jian Chen's greatest trump card. Unless he was forced into a situation with no other choices, he definitely did not want to reveal the white tiger before all these people.

"Jian Chen, what do we do? Those five vicious beasts are not magical beasts we can handle. If we stay here, there'll only be death. Why don't we enter the artifact space?" Nubis sent a mental message to Jian Chen. His voice was stern.

Jian Chen stared fixedly at the five beasts as an idea suddenly flashed through his head. He called out, "Everyone, we need to get through the barrier if we want to live. These beasts don't possess any intelligence. If we use them correctly, we can completely rely on their strengths to break through the barrier."

Everyone's eyes lit up when they heard this. Thysnich turned toward Jian Chen and growled, "Ruler, how much confidence in success do you have?"

"Do you have any other better ways then?" Jian Chen countered with a question.

"Alright, since we're going to die anyway, let's try it. This is the only way we can live," boldly said a middle-aged man that was

covered in blood. He acted like he had reached the end of his life, about to make one last struggle.

“Alright, ruler of the Turtle clan. I’ll believe you once. I wonder what you would like us to do?” Thysnich said. He thought secretly, “If he can break the barrier, then that would be for the best. Otherwise, I can only use this power to break through for myself.”

Jian Chen said with a deep voice, “We need to split up into two groups. Those who can use Tian Level Saint Techniques will form one. They will cast their techniques simultaneously, while the second group will stand before the barrier and attract the beast’s attention. We need to get the beasts to attack us with their strongest strikes, before immediately dodging out of the way and attacking the barrier as well. When the attacks from the beasts hit the barrier, the first group will immediately strike it with their Tian Level Saint Techniques as well. I believe that over twenty Tian Level Saint Techniques along with attacks from five 16th Star beasts will be enough to break through the barrier.”

Everyone could not help but secretly nod when they heard Jian Chen’s plan, agreeing to it in their hearts. They immediately moved in accordance and all the people who could use Tian Level Saint Techniques gathered together. They took large quantities of medicines that recovered their energy, before beginning to charge up their Tian Level Saint Techniques.

The remaining people stood in a formation, firing off powerful attacks after each other at the beasts that rapidly drew closer.

With the violent booms, the five beasts were immediately

enveloped by several dozen powerful ripples of energy. Although the attacks struggled to cause them any harm, it deeply aggravated them.

The five beasts all produced deafening roars, charging toward the people wildly.

The distance between the two groups rapidly decreased. However, just when the beasts were about to collide with the people, everyone dodged to the sides as fast as they could at the same time.

Boom! The five beasts collided heavily with the barrier, producing a violent rumble. At the same time, everyone's attacks and the Tian Level Saint Techniques landed heavily on the barrier with an aura of destruction. The violent ripples of energy shook up the void, knocking everyone into the air. They all spurted blood wildly, worsening their injuries.

No one paid attention to their wounds. Instead, they all stared unblinkingly at the barrier. It shook violently, before a ten-meter-wide crack finally appeared. It began to close up slowly.

Everyone's eyes lit up with joy. Without any hesitation, they climbed to their feet as fast as they could and charged recklessly at the crack. The crack was closing up slowly and it would completely recover in a short time. Everyone grasped every moment to charge at the crack. This was their only hope for survival.

Jian Chen was the least injured, so he was the fastest as well.

Grabbing Nubis and Xie Wang by the shoulders, he used the Illusory Flash. He left behind a blur and traversed several hundred meters through the crack.

Afterward, the other experts elbowed their ways into the crack as well. However, there was not time for everyone to enter as the barrier healed up very quickly. It blocked the slower, heavily-injured people outside and they were consumed by the beasts in the end.

Chapter 921: A Piece of Divine Quality Crystal

Boom! Boom! Boom...

The five vicious beasts did not stop after tearing the people outside to shreds. They constantly rammed the barrier, wanting to kill off all the people hiding inside.

The five beasts were all of the Fifth and Sixth Heavenly Layer, so their attacks were extremely powerful. Every strike would make the barrier tremble violently but it still would not be enough to break through it.

Everyone finally relaxed slightly when they saw this and their beating hearts finally calmed down. Their backs were all drenched in cold sweat. If they had been a little slower before, they would have ended up just like the people outside.

Now, close to a third of the hundred and sixty experts had died. The lucky survivors did not leave. Instead, they sat down inside the barrier to heal. No one was certain about the upcoming dangers and they did not have the power to deal with anything that would happen in their current state.

Jian Chen, Nubis, Xie Wang, and the four others all gathered together, recovering their energy at the same time. Every single one of them had exerted a great amount of energy in the past three days of beast-slaughtering. They had basically survived the three days by depending on their medicines.

“Sigh, it’s a pity that the incomplete items the Octoterra Emperor left behind are still with them outside. If we can’t gather their Space Rings, it’ll be impossible to complete the cultivation method, Tian Level Saint Technique, and the comprehensions of cultivation left behind by the emperor.” An old man stared at the distant corpses outside the barrier regretfully. His face was filled with pity.

Jian Chen glanced at the Space Rings outside the barrier when he heard that. A light in his eyes flickered as he hesitated over whether to get Xiao Bai to pass through the barrier and retrieve them.

“This barrier was cast down by a Saint Emperor all those years ago and it still possesses a great strength. I wonder if Xiao Bai can pass through it successfully or not.” Jian Chen could not make up his mind in that moment but he gave up in the end after hesitating for a while.

“Elder Hong’s told me before that other than the legacy of the Octoterra Emperor, there’s also the divine hall. Only by reaching the core of the divine hall can I control it. I need to find a way to get there and then take the entire place.” Jian Chen’s gaze became steeled as he thought of that.

Several days later, some of them finally made a full recovery. They regained their healthy glow, continuing into the hall energetically. Jian Chen did not stay either, bringing in Nubis and Xie Wang who were still recovering.

Seeing how the trio had left, Mo Ji and the other three hesitated slightly as they were still in recovery. They ended up giving up on the idea of continuing to heal, standing up and following Jian Chen in.

The number of people near the barrier immediately halved with the departures. However, there were still several dozen experts who remained where they were, healing silently. They did not intend on leaving before they were fully healed because even if they came across any treasures, they would not possess the ability to fight for it.

Jian Chen kept a low profile and traveled in the center of the group, while Thysnich walked at the very front. He had more Saint King's power than anyone else as he had not run out even after the three days of battle with the beasts. He was currently clad in extremely-tough armor that had been condensed from the energy in order to prevent any ambushes as he traveled.

It was extremely quiet as they made their way. Everyone climbed the stairs, finally arriving before the main entrance of a huge hall. Then they came to a halt together.

“Everyone, let's push open the hall's door together,” Thysnich said to the people behind him. His gaze paused slightly when he glanced over at Jian Chen but he moved it very quickly.

Everyone nodded silently, before forming an energy barrier around them. They began to push the door together.

With a screeching sound, the heavy door was slowly pushed open by everyone. It was not like the halls from the center region where they were struck by a powerful gust of energy.

It was slightly dark inside but it was well-decorated. It was filled with precious pieces of art and thus seemed extremely extravagant. The experts all quietly observed the circumstances within the hall before finally stepping over the high door sill after a while. They began to search quickly.

“This is the furs from a Class 8 Magical Beast from the Tian Yuan Continent. It’s extremely precious but I never thought it would be used as a rug,” cried out someone. He currently stared at a large, white rug with an expression of happiness and he soon put the entire piece into his Space Ring.

“This is rarely-seen spiritual wood. It can accelerate the speed at which energy of the world gathers but who would think that it would be made into a chair? If I cultivate while sitting on it, it should increase my speed drastically,” another expert said as he pointed at the seats on the two sides of the hall. He quickly began to store them away in his Space Ring.

Many people immediately began to fight over the chairs made completely from spiritual wood. Over ten people immediately began to grab the seats in fear that they would not get any and everyone ended up with one or two of them.

“I grabbed this chair first. Are you trying to take it from me?”

“What do you mean you grabbed it first? I obviously laid my hand on it before you.”

Two people began arguing as they each grabbed an armrest of a chair. No one gave in, so they began to fight very quickly.

No one paid any attention to them. They continued their search. Suddenly, Jian Chen’s eyes narrowed as his gaze landed on a huge, ten-meter-tall throne up ahead. It was completely blue in color as it shone with a hazy light. He could tell with a single glance that it was clearly extraordinary.

Jian Chen could clearly feel an extremely powerful energy hidden in the throne. It was extremely pure; although it was the same water-attributed energy as the grand quality crystal coins, it was just too pure. The difference between the two was like the disparity between a Class 5 Monster Core and a Class 7 Monster Core.

“Oh my sea goddess, what did I just see? Heavens, that’s unbelievable. I can actually see a divine quality crystal.” A cry rang out. It was an old man that he stared unblinkingly at the throne. His excitement caused his face to become flushed bright red as greed poured from his eyes.

“There’s a divine quality crystal. There’s actually a divine quality crystal.”

“My god, it really is a divine quality crystal. I’ve never even heard of such a huge piece.”

...

More and more people noticed the throne with the hazy glow as they all cried out. Their voices were filled with shock and disbelief, which was soon replaced by greed.

“It really is a piece of divine quality crystal. The throne is completely forged from divine quality crystal. This Octoterra Emperor sure is extravagant.” Thysnich’s eyes were also filled with greed. Divine quality crystals superseded grand quality crystal; the water-attributed energy within them was extremely pure. They could only be found by luck and only existed in legends. Many people could live their entire life without even seeing a single one. The piece before them was so large that it possessed an inestimable value.

Everyone struggled to resist the enticement of the crystal, all charging forward, wanting to take it for themselves.

The person closest to the throne had already arrived at it before everyone else. Just as he extended his hand out to touch it, a trident shot out from his side, forcing him to draw his hand back.

In the blink of an eye, a chaotic battle erupted in the palace. For this piece of divine quality crystal, a large battle between everyone had erupted for the first time. The violent energy rampaged in the hall but it failed to destroy anything.

Thysnich also took part in the battle. He was extremely powerful,

knocking people back one after another with his two blades; arriving before the crystal very quickly. No one was his opponent. However, just as he wanted to extend his hand to put the throne into his Space Ring, Jian Chen, who had only been watching from afar, finally struck out.

Wielding his King Armament, he radiated with a towering sword Qi, as if he had become a sword. He was the sword, while the sword was him.

Whoosh!

Jian Chen left behind a blur and shot past all the others with unbelievable speed, arriving before the crystal. Shining with a dark light, the King Armament stabbed toward Thysnich's arm that approached the throne with a devastating aura.

Thysnich had always secretly kept an eye out for Jian Chen's movements. To him, only the ruler of the Turtle clan could pressure him greatly. Now that he saw that Jian Chen had moved, a sliver of cold light flashed across his eyes. He pulled back his arm, before chopping as hard as he could at Jian Chen with both his blades after a battle cry.

The King Armament collided with Thysnich's blades and a powerful ripple of energy immediately erupted. Their weapons seemed to be glued to one another, stuck tightly and unmoving. Only waves of powerful energy were sent out from the point where their weapons touched.

They stared deeply into each other's narrowed eyes. Jian Chen remained emotionless and cool, clearly still calm. On the other hand, Thysnich was grim and his face had become extremely dark. Sandwiched between was a vague sliver of shock.

“Argh!”

It did not remain like that for long. Thysnich violently roared out and an even more terrifying energy surged from his body. Through the two blades in his hand, it slammed forcefully into Jian Chen's King Armament.

Boom!

The stalemate was finally broken with a loud sound and both of them were knocked backward by the violent energy.

Jian Chen stabilized himself several meters away and drew back his sword. He stared coldly at Thysnich.

Thysnich glared back at Jian Chen in a similar fashion. However, his breath was slightly ragged, while his complexion had become quite ugly.

“Ruler of the Turtle clan, your strength has completely exceeded my expectations,” growled Thysnich. From the single clash, he now knew that he definitely could not be Jian Chen's opponent.

With a King Armament, Jian Chen was as strong as a Saint King

of the Third Heavenly Layer. Even though Thysnich was also very powerful, he did not possess the power to fight a Third Heavenly Layer Saint King. As a result, he suffered an utter defeat when he clashed with Jian Chen.

At this moment, the giant crystal throne suddenly disappeared. When Jian Chen and Thysnich fought, someone had utilized the throne to mask themselves, approaching it silently from one side. They had stored the throne in their Space Ring and immediately fled into the distance excitedly.

Chapter 922: Treasury

At this moment, the giant crystal throne suddenly disappeared. When Jian Chen and Thysnich fought, someone had utilized the throne to mask themselves, approaching it silently from one side. They had stored the throne in their Space Ring and immediately fled into the distance excitedly.

A sharp killing intent flashed through Jian Chen's eyes. With the Illusory Flash, he became a lightning-fast blur and caught up with the person. Jian Chen's sword suddenly stabbed out, piercing through the person's back.

The person roared out as the grand power of a Saint King surged from his body. It quickly formed a suit of armor on him, while a portion of the power condensed into an eight-centimeter-wide energy ball in his left hand. It radiated with terrifying power.

"Ruler of the Turtle clan, if you're going to keep pressuring me, I'll die with you today," the person yelled as he attempted to threaten Jian Chen with the ball of energy.

However, Jian Chen completely ignored his threats. He stabbed at the armor with his King Armament.

Ding!

The collision between the weapon and the armor led to the screeching of steel and a powerful force blew the person away. It covered his armor with cracks, before it disintegrated with a loud

sound.

The person fell heavily several dozen meters away. He was stunned when he saw that his armor had completely shattered. He knew exactly how powerful the defense of the armor was as it had been condensed from the power of a Saint King. It could even remain unscathed after resisting the attacks from several Class 7 beasts, yet it had shattered under a single strike from Jian Chen. He was filled with disbelief.

“Impossible. The Turtle clan has strong defense but weak attack. The ruler is clearly only at the peak of the 14th Star, so why’s he so strong?” The person could not help but be astounded. But at this very moment, a blur flashed in front of him. Jian Chen had arrived and stabbed out with his King Armament that radiated with dark light and an aura of destruction.

“You asked for it, ruler of the Turtle clan.” Determination surged on the person’s face. With a swing of his hand, he tossed the condensed energy.

Jian Chen adapted his form; the King Armament changed directions and stabbed toward the ball of energy instead.

Boom!

The Saint King’s power was dispersed by Jian Chen’s attack, leading to an eruption of violent energy that struck Jian Chen heavily.

Jian Chen flew backward uncontrollably, now slightly injured. However, it was nothing that could affect him.

His gaze became icy. This was something he would only show when killing intent surged in his heart. Leaping heavily from the ground, he used the Illusory Flash to continue his charge at the old man.

This time, the old man no longer had any power to resist Jian Chen. All he could do was watch as Jian Chen drew near.

Shwt! The center of the old man's eyebrows was pierced, allowing the sword to impale his head and wipe out his soul. Jian Chen smoothly removed the old man's Space Ring from his hand and checked through it. Only then did he relax slightly after confirmed that the crystal was inside. Jian Chen had already made up his mind about the crystal when he first caught a glance of it.

Suddenly, Jian Chen's face sank. He could feel several presences locking tightly onto him. Over ten people had already surrounded him, each staring at him viciously.

Jian Chen's arm jolted and the King Armament immediately began to radiate with a dark light. Its devastating aura filled the entire room, directly pressuring the people around him. It was extremely overbearing.

"If you still want the crystal, come at me." Jian Chen pointed his sword at the sky as he spoke with a frigid voice. He flowed with a condescending aura, as if the people around him were nothing.

“Ruler of the Turtle clan, we don’t want to become your enemies but it’s such a large piece of crystal. It’s a little unreasonable if you take all of it. Why don’t you take it out and split it up among everyone? After all, we all found it with you,” a black-robed old man said with a deep voice. He was very fearful of Jian Chen but the enticement of the divine quality crystal was just too great. Also, there were so many people present, so he believed that if they all worked together, the ruler of the Turtle clan would not be able to fight them all no matter how powerful he was.

Jian Chen raised the Space Ring high up in the air with his left hand and said, “The crystal is right here. If you want it, come take it.”

“Ruler, you are indeed very strong. That is an irrefutable truth but are you confident enough to take on my Tian Level Saint Technique?” said a young man arrogantly. He was one of the people who possessed a Tian Level Saint Technique.

Wind began to whistle as soon as the young man finished what he had to say. Jian Chen then appeared before him with lightning speed, stabbing out at the center of his eyebrows without any hesitation.

The young man was astounded. He had never expected that Jian Chen would take the initiative to attack. Saint King’s power immediately surged out in an attempt to block Jian Chen’s sudden attack.

However, Jian Chen's sword was countless times faster than before. The sword seemed to overcome the laws of space and surpass the restriction of time, stabbing out with an unbelievable speed as a streak of light.

Shwt!

The young man did not have the time to condense his armor at all. The King Armament had stabbed through his head with dumbfounding speed, wiping out his soul.

“What a fast strike!”

Cries rang out from the surroundings. Everyone's expressions changed, they were all stunned by the speed that Jian Chen had displayed. It was just too fast. They would end up in a similar circumstance if they had been caught off guard and faced the sword instead.

And this was how a peak Saint Ruler who knew a Tian Level Saint Technique passed away.

Everyone's gazes toward Jian Chen experienced a change while their fear for him skyrocketed. He was definitely a terrifying opponent.

Jian Chen slowly drew his King Armament from the head and said coldly, “So what if you know a Tian Level Saint Technique? Before me, you don't even have the chance to use it.”

The hall fell into a silence. Everyone stared at Jian Chen without saying anything at all.

Thysnich stared at Jian Chen from afar as his gaze flickered. A sharp sliver of killing intent was hidden in the depths of his eyes and he thought, “Ruler of the Turtle clan, you are indeed very strong but you will still die by my hand in the end.”

Jian Chen slowly glanced past everyone with a sharp glare. “Since no one wants to fight for it anymore, this piece of crystal is now mine.” Jian Chen put the Space Ring away before continuing his search around the hall.

The nervous atmosphere in the hall was immediately dispelled by Jian Chen’s actions. Everyone gave up on the idea of fighting Jian Chen for the crystal, continuing their search for other treasures in the hall.

The blood drained very quickly from the two experts that had died in Jian Chen’s hands, sucked away by the ground without leaving a single mark. Although everyone saw this happen, no one could find any reason. As they could not think of why even after deep thought, they tossed the matter aside and no longer paid attention to the weird phenomenon.

Afterward, the people searched through the first floor of the palace for half a day. They took away many precious treasures, virtually emptying the first floor of everything it had. Only when they got everything did they move onto the first floor.

The second floor also possessed many extremely valuable and rare items, which were quickly all taken away by the people.

At this very moment, a loud rumble rang out from afar combined with the rippling of a powerful energy. The commotion attracted the attention of many people, causing them all to go up and investigate in curiosity. In the end, they arrived before a huge stone door and above the door was a single, powerfully-written word—Treasury!

“This must be where a large number of treasures are stored,” someone cried out. He was filled with excitement.

“There’s no mechanism to open the stone door. Looks like our only way in is by smashing it. Let’s break it together,” someone suggested. Immediately, several experts began to attack the door together.

Within the booms, several Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers struck the door together. However, it remained unharmed, without even a crack.

“The door has been tempered by the energy of the palace and has become extraordinarily tough. There’s only the possibility of breaking through if we all strike together.”

“What’s everyone hesitating for? Everything inside must be treasures. There might even be divine quality crystals. Let’s all open the door together.”

...

Several people used enticing words to motivate the entire group. They had all come here for the treasures of the Octoterra Divine Hall, so they reached an agreement very quickly. They all struck out at the door, including even Jian Chen and Nubis.

With a deafening sound, the combined attacks from several dozen experts struck the door. However, it remained without a scratch.

“Let’s use our Tian Level Saint Techniques,” someone immediately yelled out, before beginning to charge up his saint technique.

Seeing how someone had already begun to charge up their Tian Level Saint Technique, the others all began to hesitate but a few joined him very quickly. They began to cast their saint techniques together.

The Tian Level Saint Techniques charged up very quickly and they all struck out at the same time, colliding with the door with lightning speed. At the same time, the other experts did not stand around either; they struck out with their most powerful blows, cooperating with the Tian Level Saint Techniques to break the stone door.

Boom!

An even more powerful sound rang out as the powerful force swept in all directions. It knocked everyone backward.

The stone door trembled violently as clouds of dust fell from it. A tiny crack had appeared on its surface.

“Let’s continue our attacks. We can break the door if we do it a few more times,” someone said loudly. Afterward, everyone struck the door together once again, while the number of people who had used Tian Level Saint Techniques increased to eighteen.

Everyone used all they had to break down the stone door to obtain the treasure inside.

Chapter 923: The Blood Demon Emperor

Over fifty Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers struck the stone door with their full power once again. This time, several had used Tian Level Saint Techniques, which lead to the immediate descent of a terrifying pressure which filled up the entire space.

Boom!

The attacks and saint techniques forcefully struck the stone door at virtually the same time. Violent energy ripples erupted, knocking everyone back once again.

No one could retain their footing when facing such violent gusts of energy.

A while later, a meter-long crack could be seen on the tough stone door after the gusts of energy had slowly dispersed in the hall.

“The door is too tough. If we continue like this, it’ll take at least a few days before we break through it,” said someone as they sighed grimly.

“The treasures inside much be invaluable if there’s such a tough door obstructing entry. Let’s do it a few times. We’ll be able to break through it,” someone immediately began to encourage the others as he did not want to give up.

“Let’s rest for a while first before continuing.”

Afterward, all of them began to meditate in the surroundings to recover their energy. The people who cast the Tian Level Saint Techniques needed to do this in particular, as they had exerted greatly every time they cast the technique. Additionally, since they were faced with a situation where they needed to be on guard against any sudden attacks, they did not dare to cast it consecutively. They needed some time to retain their combat ability.

Afterward, everyone continued their attacks at the door. Almost all of them used their most powerful attacks, fully utilizing their abilities to strike the door with Tian Level Saint Techniques. Meanwhile, the people who cast the saint techniques increase beyond twenty. All those who could use it were participating now.

The stone door constantly weakened each time it was struck by the wild flurry of attacks. It finally disintegrated after several days, revealing a long passageway.

Jian Chen, Nubis, and Xie Wang entered the treasury cautiously with the group. Mo Ji and the three others followed behind. All of them maintained a certain level of vigilance.

The space ahead opened up after they passed through the long passageway they arrived in an extremely large space, which seemed very much like a storage room. Large piles of items were stacked messily inside.

As everyone slowly glanced past the items, they revealed deep joy and greed in their eyes. In the very center was a mountainous pile of crystal coins. They shone with a dazzling light and were of a great quality. They were innumerable.

Among the pile of crystal coins were some fist-sized divine quality crystals that radiated with a powerful and pure water attribute energy. The surroundings were chock-full of metal shelves forged from essence metal, and tables made from spiritual wood. A total of over a dozen weapons of various sizes laid on the shelves, while each and every one of them shone brightly and radiated with powerful ripples of energies. Meanwhile, the wooden tables were covered with various books, small sealed wooden boxes, and pieces of divine quality crystal.

The crystals could be as small as fists or as large as heads. They all glistened charmingly and there were lots of them.

All of them, without any exceptions, focused their gazes on the large pile of coins and crystals. Their eyes were filled with greed; perhaps they did not view the coins too importantly but none of them could resist the temptation of the crystals.

Jian Chen glanced past everything. The wealth stored in here also caused his heart to beat with excitement but his gaze was not stuck to the crystals. Instead, he stared fixedly at the various weapons on the shelves. His eyes were filled with unconcealable joy.

“Ruler Armaments. There’s actually so many Ruler Armaments.” Jian Chen screamed in his heart. To him, Ruler Armaments were

worth much more than the divine quality crystals. If he brought them back to the Tian Yuan Continent and gave the weapons to the Flame Mercenaries, their strength would increase abruptly.

Whoosh!

With the sound of wind, countless people charged toward the crystals and boxes on the wooden tables uncontrollably. No one actually paid any attention to the Ruler Armaments.

Ruler Armaments were an irrefutable treasure on the Tian Yuan Continent but to the Sea race, they were worth far less than divine quality crystals, despite still retaining some value. As a result, all the people of the Sea race focused their attention on the crystals while no one paid any mind to the Ruler Armaments, or even the King Armaments.

Jian Chen, Nubis, Xie Wang, and the four others did not show any hesitations either, all charging at the huge piles of treasures as they fought over them in a flurry. However, Jian Chen did not go for the crystals and the unknown treasures and instead went for the metal racks. He quickly stored away all the Ruler Armaments, before participating in the fight for the crystals.

Under the rapid collection of several dozen people, all the crystals and treasures were finally cleared out. All that was left was the mountainous pile of crystal coins. All of them revealed unconcealable joy and excitement, as they all had benefitted greatly.

Jian Chen's harvest was extremely great as well. Not only had he obtained Ruler Armaments, he had also grabbed several dozen crystals along with the wooden boxes that stored things he did not know of.

“With so many divine quality crystals and high class monster cores, my Chaotic Body should be able to break through to the third layer very quickly,” Jian Chen thought. At the same time, he made up his mind. He would go into seclusion as soon as he got out; he planned to pour all his efforts into breaking through to the third layer.

“There's actually a letter from the Octoterra Emperor here,” someone cried out. A person had already opened the box and inside laid a palm-sized folded piece of paper.

“I actually have the diary of the Psalmic Emperor,” someone else cried out. This time, it was Thysnich. He currently carried a book in his hand, while his expression was filled with astonishment and disbelief.

“What! The Psalmic Emperor's diary had actually appeared...”

“Is it the Psalmic Emperor who passed on thirty thousand years ago? Why would his diary end up in the hands of the Octoterra Emperor...”

“It's said that the Psalmic Emperor was a legendary figure even more ancient than the Octoterra Emperor. When it was the Psalmic Emperor's era, the Octoterra Emperor had not even

appeared yet. Did the Octoterra Emperor obtain the Psalmic Emperor's things..."

Everyone began to discuss as they all felt extremely surprised. Soon afterward, more and more people opened their wooden boxes.

"Argh!" Suddenly there was a howl. An old man tossed and turned on the floor as he clutched his head in agony, while his wooden box had also fallen down. A blood-red book lay to his side, which seemed rather demonic.

This sudden change to the situation attracted many people's attention. They all stared at the old man, while glancing at the book from time to time. They were all strewn between doubt and surprise.

"What the hell is that book? How is it that powerful? Let me see." A middle-aged, grey-robed man casually picked up the book. However, as soon as he came into contact with it, his expression changed abruptly and he immediately tossed the book afar. He too clutched his head and howled in agony.

Many people became stern when they saw this. They all stared at the book on the floor, no one daring to touch it.

At this moment, the old man's pain finally lessened slightly. He stared at the blood-red book in horrification and said with a trembling voice, "T-t- that's actually the Blood Demon Emperor's cultivation manual. There's still the Qi of slaughter from the Blood

Demon Emperor on it. My soul has been injured by it.”

Many people revealed doubtful expressions when they heard the title Blood Demon Emperor. Clearly, many of them had not heard of this title.

A sliver of light flashed across Thysnich’s eyes as he cried out, “What did you say? The Blood Demon Emperor—are you certain it’s the Blood Demon Emperor?” Thysnich’s heart began to churn. He had read about the Blood Demon Emperor’s legacy from some ancient records in his clan.

The Blood Demon Emperor was a supreme expert that existed fifty thousand years ago. It was said that he had reached the 18th Star and was extremely terrifying. He was the strongest in the sea realm, much more powerful than the three hall masters.

The Blood Demon Emperor purely cultivated slaughter. He was drenched with bloodthirstiness. He was the epicenter of a storm of blood within the sea realm all those years ago, ending the lives of countless 14th Star Seasoul Experts and even several 15th and 16th Star Seasoul Warriors. He was named as the demon king of slaughter.

In that age, there were people who wondered if he would even attack ordinary people if it were not for the worry of Celestial Decay. This was because slaughter was what he cultivated; only by constantly committing slaughter could he become more powerful.

However, in the end, the three halls could no longer endure his

actions. All three hall masters moved out together, embroiling in a grand battle in outer space with him. In the end, he fell to the hands of the three hall masters.

However, the three halls had also paid a heavy price because of this. The hall masters of the Sea Goddess Hall and the Serpent God Hall were heavily injured, while the hall master of the Heaven Spirit Hall had been slain by him. The position of hall master in the Heaven Spirit Hall ended up remaining empty for a thousand years because of that. It shocked the entire sea realm.

...

As Thysnich narrated the Blood Demon Emperor's legacy, all the people present were astonished to the point that they become speechless. No one dared to touch the book anymore but they all stared fixedly at it as their hearts beat heavily.

This was the cultivation method of the Blood Demon Emperor. If someone obtained it, they would be able to cultivate the Blood Demon Emperor's supreme method. Just how enticing was this? However, it was a pity that the residual Qi of slaughter was left behind by the Blood Demon Emperor, so no one dared to take the risk and touch it. It would be extremely difficult to recover once their souls were damaged and it was highly likely that it would leave behind eternal consequences, preventing people from breaking through for the rest of their lives.

Everyone fell into a deathly silence. They all stared at the book left behind by the Blood Demon Emperor as their hearts were filled with pity.

It was so tempting before them, yet they did not have the power to obtain it. Everyone became filled with regret but they could do nothing.

Chapter 924: Emperor Armament

“Are we supposed to just abandon the cultivation method of the Blood Demon Emperor like this and let such a rare opportunity slip by?” said a person regretfully.

“I dare not to touch the objects of the Blood Demon Emperor. Whoever wants it, feel free to take it.” The speaker was Thysnich this time. He knew the infamy of the Blood Demon Emperor very well. Qi of slaughter from the Blood Demon Emperor still lingered on the book; let alone him, even a few Saint Kings would not want to touch it so easily.

After all, the Blood Demon Emperor was an 18th Star Seasoul Warrior when he was still alive. He had only been killed when the three hall masters had worked together and they had even paid a heavy price.

Jian Chen stared fixedly at the book as his eyes flickered. His expression fluctuated, before he finally made his way toward the book slowly after a while of hesitation.

“Jian Chen, what are you doing? You can’t touch that book.” Nubis immediately stopped Jian Chen and attempted to persuade him.

“Don’t worry, I’ll be fine,” Jian Chen said softly. His feet did not stop.

Nubis hesitated slightly when he saw how determined Jian Chen

was and gave in about stopping him. He followed behind Jian Chen quietly; Nubis would stop him immediately if he faced any dangers.

The surrounding people all immediately focused on Jian Chen. They wanted to see if the extraordinary ruler of the Turtle clan could endure the Qi of slaughter within it and obtain the cultivation method of the Blood Demon Emperor.

Jian Chen arrived before it grimly, before extending his hand slowly toward the book.

In that moment, everyone stared at Jian Chen's hand as it rapidly approached the book on the ground. They observed unblinkingly.

Finally, Jian Chen's hand came into contact with the book under the gaze of several dozen experts. His body shook violently as he immediately felt an extremely powerful killing intent enter his body through his fingers. It turned into a bone-chillingly frigid energy as it made its way through his body and drew rapidly closer to his head.

The killing intent was just too powerful. Before it, Jian Chen felt like he was an ant facing a mountain, unable to even consider retaliation. It seemed like just the killing intent was enough to wipe out his soul.

Jian Chen was utterly shocked. The Blood Demon Emperor was just too powerful. Just a sliver of Qi deposited in the book possessed such terrifying power. Jian Chen was absolutely certain

that even Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings could be heavily injured before the killing intent.

Rumble!

The killing intent traveled extremely quickly, worming into Jian Chen's brain and sea of consciousness in the blink of an eye. Immediately, a violent rumble roared through Jian Chen's head. In that moment, his entire sea of consciousness had been completely blanketed by a thick layer of bloody mist. The mist contained a great killing intent, as if it was about to forcefully shake his sea of consciousness into pieces.

“What powerful killing intent!” The artifact spirit's voice rang out in Jian Chen's head. The golden tower floating in his sea of consciousness suddenly became several thousand meters tall, radiating with a bright, golden light to protect Jian Chen's soul.

At the same time, the sword spirits that were absorbing the Multicolored stone moved as well. Purple and azure lights filled up his entire sea of consciousness as two swords appeared indistinctly, chopping at the bloody mist.

As the two swords chopped down, an indescribable aura suddenly appeared. It was the traces of the omnipresent, the laws of the world. The surrounding space trembled violently and fell into chaos. Suddenly, a vast sea of stars appeared; the starry sky was filled with battle cries as countless immortals warred in this unknown region of space. Every strike from them possessed the power to destroy worlds, turning countless planets in the surroundings to dust.

Following it, two humongous swords, one purple and one azure, flew out from the void. They charged at the group of immortals with devastating auras, immediately causing the space to become scattered with flesh and blood. Countless powerful immortals were felled by the swords and their golden blood filled up the void. Every drop of blood contained terrifyingly great power, enough to kill off Saint Kings, while the corpses of immortals littered the entire space.

The saint artifact began to tremble violently. The artifact spirit hiding within witnessed this clearly, now filled with terror. The bloody mist in Jian Chen's sea of consciousness seemed to be terrified as well, violently shrinking before retreating with speed even greater than it had come in with. It returned into the book and disappeared.

“Fortunately this Qi of slaughter possessed a certain level of intelligence or we really wouldn't have been able to do anything. Master, it's best if you don't touch these objects in the future. It's very dangerous,” the sword spirit's voices rang out in Jian Chen's head.

Just earlier, the sword spirits did not use absolute strength to repel the Qi of slaughter but had instead displayed an image through its abilities. It formed a great deterrence, driving away the Qi.

This could not be used on people and was only effective against spiritual bodies such as the artifact spirit and the intelligent Qi of slaughter. This was because the Azulet swords themselves were

extremely high level spirits; even though they were weak now, they had a natural ability to suppress similar existences.

The Qi of slaughter disappeared back into the book. It had been frightened away and it was now hiding. It had developed a fear for Jian Chen.

This time, Jian Chen was no longer faced with any obstructions, allowing him to examine the book normally. His expression was mixed with doubt and surprise.

Jian Chen had once met the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect. He was extremely familiar with the powerful Baleful Yin Force present on them. Earlier, he could feel that the Qi of slaughter hidden in the book seemed to be almost the same type of energy. It was just that the Qi was much more powerful than the Baleful Yin Force but they seemed to be of the same origin. Jian Chen was astonished by this.

All the people who watched on became tongue-tied when they saw Jian Chen hold the book normally. They all stared at him in disbelief, before directing their attention to the book itself. They all revealed gazes full of greed.

“Ruler of the Turtle clan, has the Qi of slaughter hidden inside disappeared?” Someone asked involuntarily.

“There can’t be a lot of Qi left behind by the Blood Demon Emperor. After injuring two people, it must be all gone now. The ruler of the Turtle clan is just luck, getting the book just when all

the Qi of slaughter ran out,” said a skinny old man.

“That’s probably the case. Ruler of the Turtle clan, that book was obtained by me and the Qi hidden inside was all consumed with my injured soul as the price. Can you return the book to me?” pleaded the old man who had first touched the book. Although he knew that this amounted to almost nothing, he still wanted to try as he was unwilling to accept it.

Jian Chen glanced at the old man before tossing the book onto the ground straightforwardly. He said normally, “If you want it, then take it.”

All the people who wanted to steal it immediately froze when they saw Jian Chen throw the cultivation method on the ground so easily. They felt like something was off.

However, the old man was not able to remain so calm. He immediately ravished with joy as he saw how easily Jian Chen had returned the cultivation method to him, bending down to pick it up.

“Argh!” However, as soon as he touched the book, he howled out in agony. His soul was injured once again by the Qi of slaughter, deepening his wounds.

All the people in the surroundings sucked in a breath when they saw this. They all secretly celebrated that they had not gone ahead with their plan of stealing it, as the person crying out right now would have otherwise been them instead.

Jian Chen looked around coldly. “Feel free to take it, whoever wants the Blood Demon Emperor’s cultivation method. I won’t obstruct you.” Jian Chen had nothing to fear. He had seen just how powerful the Qi of slaughter was and he knew that there was probably no one present other than himself that could overcome the Qi of slaughter.

Even the artifact spirit could only block the Qi of slaughter, unable to fend it off. As a result, even if the people present possessed defensive treasures, they would not be able to protect themselves.

“Looks like the cultivation method of the Blood Demon Emperor belongs to the ruler of the Turtle clan,” smiled Mo Ji who stood behind Jian Chen. A powerful sliver of envy was present in the depths of his eyes.

“Since no one has any interest in the cultivation method, I’ll take it.” Jian Chen picked up the book once again. He put it away in his Space Ring as if nothing had happened, completely unaffected by the Qi of slaughter.

The Qi of slaughter had already been frightened by the sword spirits in Jian Chen’s sea of consciousness, so it no longer dared to attack Jian Chen again.

Everyone cleared out the objects in the treasury, before continuing to the next floor of the hall. As soon as they stepped on the third floor, they were hit in the face by a towering sword Qi,

which caused everyone to experience a prickling pain. Even the air seemed to be contaminated by this sword Qi, becoming sharp.

In the center of the hall stood a huge, thirty-meter-tall sword. It stood inside a dry well as it radiated with a vast pressure. There was also a vaguely condescending aura, as if the sword was the supreme ruler of the world.

The sword was a straight sword that had been magnified dozens of times. Although the sword was sixty centimeters wide, it would only have a width of two fingers if it was a regular size.

“This is an Emperor Armament.” Jian Chen’s eyes shone with a resplendent light. His heart began to beat uncontrollably. He had never seen an Emperor Armament but he had already determined what it was the moment he caught a glance of the huge sword.

Chapter 925: A Chaotic Battle

“My god, what a big sword. Just weapon is that?”

“How is this sword so big? I’ve never even heard, much less seen, such a big sword in my entire life.”

“It’s a big sword. Who’s able to use it?”

“This sword is not simple. I can actually feel a powerful sword Qi that makes my heart tremble.”

There was nothing else on the third floor of the hall other than the huge sword. The sword stood there like a ruler, so it naturally attracted everyone’s attention. They all stared at it as they discussed with one another, everyone filled with shock.

Almost all of them knew about Ruler Armaments but probably only a few could recognize King Armaments. However, barely anyone knew about Emperor Armaments as they were just too rare.

Even on the Tian Yuan Continent, there were not many Saint Rulers who knew about Emperor Armaments, let alone the sea realm that lacked humans.

“Jian Chen, do you think that’s a legendary Emperor Armament?” Nubis asked from beside him as he stared at the weapon with deep shock. He had never seen an Emperor

Armament before but there were records of it in his inherited memories.

Jian Chen nodded slightly as he stared at the Emperor Armament with a burning gaze. The desire to take it for himself became more and more powerful in his heart. He had never experienced so much desire over a single object in his entire life.

“I must obtain this Emperor Armament,” Jian Chen thought as his gaze became exceptionally determined.

“I know what this is. It’s actually an Emperor Armament.” Suddenly, Thysnich called out. His eyes were filled with disbelief, clearly recognizing it as well.

“Emperor Armament? What Emperor Armament? I’ve never heard of anything like that,” an old man beside Thysnich said in suspicion. He was curious.

Thysnich sucked in a deep breath and said slowly, “I’ve only learned of the Emperor Armament from my inherited memories. Emperor Armaments are the weapons stored within human emperors. They’re extremely powerful and possess devastating powers. When a human emperor passes away in meditation, they leave behind the weapon within them.”

“What!? Was this huge sword left behind by a human emperor?”

“Then doesn’t that mean the sword represents the death of a

human emperor?”

“My god, this is actually the weapon of a human emperor. If I can use it, then I’ll have no fear even if I face up against 15th Star experts.”

Everyone fell into an uproar. A weapon left behind by a human emperor was enough to make all of them go green with greed. Even though members of the Sea race could not use human weapons for some reason, its worth and value were beyond suspicion.

Suddenly, Thysnich turned to Jian Chen and his eyes instantly narrowed. He said, “Ruler of the Turtle clan, first you took that throne completely made out of divine quality crystal and then you obtained the cultivation method of the Blood Demon Emperor. You’ve obtained far better things than us, so I hope you don’t take part in the fight for the Emperor Armament.”

Jian Chen stared coldly at him when he heard that and said emotionlessly, “Do you really think that the Emperor Armament would be that easy to take? If you have the power, go ahead, go take it.” Jian Chen could not help but imagine the scene when he had obtained his King Armament. King Armaments were left behind by Saint Kings and were much weaker than Emperor Armaments. However, when he had placed his hand onto it, he needed to push his Chaotic Body to its utmost limits in defense or he would have been injured by the King Armament. This was even more so in this case with the Emperor Armament.

Even Jian Chen was not certain that he could touch it with his current strength. Otherwise, he would be injured even with the

defense of his Chaotic Body.

Swish! At this moment, several experts shot toward the Emperor Armament as they could no longer resist the temptation.

A cold light flashed through Thysnich's eyes as he roared furiously, "You're looking to die!" His two blades immediately materialized in his hands as he chased after the people with killing intent.

Although Thysnich was very powerful, there were quite a few experts hidden in the group as well; many people did not fear him. Additionally, faced with the enticement of the Emperor Armament, their fear for Thysnich had been completely reduced to the lowest level possible. As a result, the Saint Rulers who had charged at the weapon turned a deaf ear to Thysnich's words and instead sped up.

Many people's hearts could not help but beat with excitement when they saw that people had already begun the seizure of the Emperor Armament; they could not help but participate as well. Even Xie Wang, Mo Ji, and the three others struggled to remain calm.

However, Jian Chen and Nubis stood there coolly with no intentions of interfering. Nonetheless, they still stared fixedly at the weapon.

Finally, a few people approached it. However, in that very moment, a formation quickly materialized on the ground and

began to flicker with a dazzling red light. An invisible energy immediately filled the region, obstructing all of them from approaching the weapon.

The people who had drawn close to the Emperor Armament almost went mad. Just when they were about to obtain it, they encountered something like this at the crucial moment. They felt like there was a great treasure right before them but they just could not grab it no matter what they did. They were unwilling to just accept it like this.

Boom! Boom! Boom...

Violent sounds rang out in the empty hall. The people currently attacked the invisible force with all they had in spite, wanting to break through and obtain the weapon for themselves.

However, they were unable to advance past the invisible force no matter how hard they tried. It seemed to be like an extremely tough wall, keeping them out and preventing them from taking even a step closer.

Thysnich's eyes also narrowed when he saw this. He subconsciously stopped as he stared at the Emperor Armament with a frown, before his face darkened very quickly. He growled, "I didn't think the Emperor Armament would be sealed up and that the condition for breaking the seal would be so harsh. Looks like we need to pay a heavy price for the Emperor Armament."

Jian Chen slowly walked toward the weapon. As he approached

it, a row of words appeared in his sight. He too darkened slightly when he scanned past the words as a cold light now flickered in his eyes.

“An Emperor Armament is sealed here. If you want to break the seal, you need the lives of forty-nine experts.”

The was what the row of words said.

The other people all gathered there and they all saw the row of words carved on the ground. All their expressions changed, before they immediately dispersed in all directions. They became even more cautious.

The atmosphere of the hall immediately became tense.

At this very moment, a series of rapid footsteps rang out. At the entrance of the floor, several dozen more people had come. They were all people who had stayed at the barrier to heal and had finally made a full recovery after the past few days.

When they saw the thirty-meter-long sword, they became stunned but learned about the Emperor Armament and the information regarding the release of its seal very quickly. They immediately became cautious, gathering in groups to observe the surroundings vigilantly.

“The Emperor Armament actually needs the lives of forty-nine people to be released. The Octoterra Emperor clearly wants us to

kill each other...”

“Perhaps the Octoterra Emperor is using this to pick the most powerful person out of all of us and get them to inherit the emperor’s legacy?”

That was what some people guessed. However, what they said immediately caused the eyes of everyone to light up, believing it to be more and more plausible.

Perhaps, this really was the method that the Octoterra Emperor wanted to use to choose his successor.

“The legacy of the Octoterra Emperor belongs to me. I might as well use this opportunity to eliminate some people and prevent them from interfering in the future.” A cold light flickered through Thysnich’s eyes. He immediately chopped toward the person closest to him with his two blades.

“Thysnich, what are you doing?” The person’s expression changed drastically and they immediately shot backward. At the same time, he drew his own weapon in retaliation.

Thysnich was a ruler, so his strength in battle was extremely great. Although he was still a Saint Ruler of the Ninth Heavenly Layer, he was no weaker than a First Heavenly Layer Saint King or maybe even one at the Second Heavenly Layer. In just a few bouts, he killed off the person he fought and wiped out his soul.

With his death, the person's blood immediately disappeared into the ground. At the same time, one of the forty-nine inscriptions that formed the hexagram binding the Emperor Armament broke apart.

"I will be taking the Emperor Armament. I'll kill whoever gets in the way." Jian Chen's eyes also flashed with a cold light. He immediately drew his King Armament from his Space Ring before charging at five people who stood together.

Nubis naturally did not fall behind after Jian Chen had moved as he had been tempted long ago. His hands immediately became golden as he charged off in excitement.

Jian Chen's sword turned into closely-packed blurs, enveloping the five people. Even though the five of them fought as if their lives depended on it, they were still not Jian Chen's opponents. They came in contact with the King Armament a few times and soon became heavily injured as they constantly backpedaled in retreat. However, before they could even stabilize themselves, the center of their eyebrows was impaled by a stroke, wiping out their souls.

Jian Chen removed their Space Rings along the way before charging at someone else.

Nubis' eyes burned with battle intent as he battled two people with his bare fists. His hands were laced with potent poison, while golden threads would shoot out from time to time. He heavily injured the two of them in the blink of an eye, before wiping out their souls by stabbing them through their foreheads with his

threads.

In the blink of an eye, close to ten people had died in the hall. Their blood would disappear into the ground following their deaths, while an inscription in the hexagram would break too.

The hall plunged into a chaotic battle, while the silent agreement of peace between them had already been broken. They all began to fight for different purposes, plenty because of vengeance and the hostility between clans. They all used this situation to resolve their animosity.

Besides this ,there was also a few people who fought to steal the treasures of others. The hall fell into chaos. People who still possessed some Saint King's power condensed their armors, while those who had run out formed barriers from their own powers, blocking a portion of the attacks.

Chapter 926: The Seal Undone

A vast pressure suddenly appeared. Someone had begun to charge up their Tian Level Saint Technique, while his three opponents were kept busy by his companions. This created precious time for his saint technique.

The saint technique completed its initial charge up very quickly and rapidly locked onto the three people. Afterward, it directly turned the three people into dust as it was released with a devastating pressure, causing blood to rain.

Deaths rapidly increased in the intense slaughter. Tian Level Saint Techniques were cast again and again, quickly leading to the deaths of over thirty experts, together with the dispersion of their souls. There were even more people injured.

“The ruler of the Turtle clan and Thysnich are too powerful. They’re the hardest to deal with. Let’s all work together to attack them. We need to eliminate them,” Immediately, many people directed their focus to Jian Chen and Thysnich.

“You’re right. We need to eliminate them first or the Octoterra Emperor’s legacy will end up with one of them.”

“For the legacy, we will eliminate the ruler of the Turtle clan and eliminate Thysnich.”

More and more people began to chant. No one was stupid; they knew that if they wanted to obtain the legacy successfully, they

needed to eliminate these two strongest opponents.

Immediately, over forty experts charged toward Jian Chen and Thysnich as killing intent flowed from them. Four others stayed away from the fight and charged up their saint techniques, also targeting Jian Chen and Thysnich.

“You’re all looking to die! Mo Ji, you four go deal with those people casting Tian Level Saint Techniques. Keep them busy!” Nubis called out as killing intent swelled in his eyes. He spat out a mouthful of venomous gas, enveloping around a radius of a hundred meters around Jian Chen. The gas was extremely corrosive, affecting everyone in the region. They all needed to devote a portion of their strength to resist the gas, so it affected the total amount of power they could use.

On the other hand, Jian Chen possessed the Ten Thousand Immunity, which was especially effective against the venom of Silver Striped Golden Snakes. As a result, he was fine and completely unaffected despite being in the center of the region.

Mo Ji and the three others did not interfere. They were in a rather poor condition from battles earlier, so they currently gathered in a place afar as they watched everything unfold. They did not listen to Nubis and go deal with the four people casting saint techniques.

Jian Chen’s eyes became icy as the dark light from the King Armament illuminated the surroundings. With a devastating power, he finished off the three people right before him then he turned into a blur and charged into the group. He used the Illusory

Flash to quickly make way toward the location where the saint techniques were charging up.

At the same time, Thysnich also rushed out from his encirclement, quickly shooting toward two of the four people.

Tian Level Saint Techniques were a great threat, whether it was Jian Chen or Thysnich. They needed to prevent it as soon as possible.

Two people targeted Jian Chen, while the other two targeted Thysnich. This was why the division of labor between Jian Chen and Thysnich was extremely clear-cut. They only needed to eliminate the people threatening them.

The expressions of the four people changed slightly when they saw Jian Chen and Thysnich rushing at them. Saint King's power immediately surged from their bodies and condensed into a suit of armor as they shot back. They wanted to increase their distance from Jian Chen and Thysnich.

“You sure are sick of living if you dare to cast saint techniques at me.” Thysnich had already approached his two targets as the two blades in his hands transformed into streaks of magnificent light that chopped toward the two people.

At the same time, Jian Chen had also approached his targets. His King Armament turned into streaks of black light as he stabbed at the foreheads of the two people.

Thysnich's blades landed on both people. One of them was knocked backward and his saint technique was forcefully disrupted, while the other person was chopped in half. However, he did not bleed and his severed body quickly turned into stone.

"It's actually the Stone Puppet technique of the Rock Python clan," growled Thysnich. He looked forward and saw that the person he had supposedly cut in half appear in perfect shape over a thousand meters away. The person did not stop the casting of his Tian Level Saint Technique either, reaching the end of the process. A vast pressure immediately descended from the sky, locking tightly onto Thysnich.

On the other side, Jian Chen's King Armament stabbed toward the foreheads of the other two people. His attacks were akin to those from a Third Heavenly Layer Saint King so they directly shattered the condensed armors. Without even giving them the time to react, he stabbed out two more times with lightning speed, piercing their foreheads and wiping out their souls.

Jian Chen took their Space Rings from their fingers and put them away without even looking at the contents. He then looked toward the hexagram for the Emperor Armament and found that forty of the forty-nine inscriptions were now gone. All he needed to do was to kill another nine people and the seal would be released.

Jian Chen did not hurry off to do just that and instead turned to Thysnich. Now that the saint technique had been completely charged up, he wanted to see just how Thysnich was going to endure it. Jian Chen had witnessed exactly how powerful a Tian Level Saint Technique was from a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint

Ruler long ago. It was powerful enough to even heavily injure a Second Heavenly Layer Saint King or even kill them off.

“Even if Thysnich survives this time, he’ll be heavily injured. He won’t be able to pose any threat to us anymore. We’ll work together and finish him off after he gets injured. With one less powerful opponent, there’ll be a great decrease in the pressure when we fight over the legacy later on.” This was what many people thought. Their gazes toward Thysnich indicated that they took pleasure in his demise.

Thysnich’s eyes were cold as he stared emotionlessly at the Tian Level Saint Technique. Right now, he was no longer able to cast his own Tian Level Saint Technique in resistance. He sneered, “Did you really think that a Tian Level Saint Technique can kill me? You underestimate me too much. I’ll show you how I break your saint technique.” Surging Saint King’s power flowed from his body; it was so great that its appearance immediately filled the entire hall with a terrifying pressure. It was suffocating by its energy alone.

“This is a power deposited into Thysnich’s body by a hall elder. Thysnich actually still hides such a powerful energy...”

“How is that possible? Thysnich actually hides such a powerful energy...”

“So Thysnich was always hiding his strength. This is probably his greatest trump card...”

Discussions broke out among the people. They all stared at Thysnich sternly. He had plenty of cards to play with thanks to the power from a hall elder. If they did not exhaust this power of his, no one could threaten him.

“This is at least from a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King. I just wonder how much of it he has.” Jian Chen became uneasy as he stared at Thysnich.

A great and pure power permeated Thysnich’s surroundings. Using his mind, he quickly condensed a meter-wide ball of energy before him. He then shot it toward the person with the Tian Level Saint Technique.

At the same time, the person cast his saint technique. A huge halberd appeared, shooting toward Thysnich with lightning speed and a destructive aura.

Boom!

The Saint King’s power collided with the Tian Level Saint Technique, immediately producing an intense boom. The violent energy wreaked havoc in the surroundings, knocking both of them backward.

A suit of armor had already materialized on Thysnich. He was already completely out of ordinary Saint King’s power, so the armor had been condensed from the Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King’s power. He used the armor to resist the violent ripples of energy. At the same time, he pointed out with a finger and a streak

of Saint King's power shot out and headed directly for the person who had attacked him.

The other person had been knocked backward by the energy ripples and was still unable to stabilize himself. His armor was condensed from an ordinary Saint King's power and had already dulled. It was now almost completely consumed. He did not have the ability to resist the stronger power from Thysnich at all.

Shwt! His forehead was impaled and the power entered his mind, before erupting. It blasted his head into pieces and directly dispersed his soul.

One more of the remaining nine inscriptions disappeared from the hexagram. There was only eight remaining now.

A vicious sliver of light flashed across Thysnich's eyes. He paid no heed to the corpse's Space Ring and slowly turned to the group afar. His face was filled with great levels of killing intent as he called out, "Since you want to kill me, I will definitely not let you go." Thysnich turned into a flash, charging toward the group with lightning speed. He actually planned to take on so many people all by himself.

However, he had the protection from the power of a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King. Attacks from ordinary experts could do nothing to him.

In the blink of an eye, another eight people died in Thysnich's hands. All eight inscriptions in the hexagram disappeared as well.

Rumble!

Suddenly, an extremely tremendous sword Qi appeared. It bodily filled up the entire region, even causing the entire palace to shake.

This sudden change disrupted Thysnich's slaughter. In that moment, everyone looked toward the origin of the sound; they all saw the Emperor Armament slowly rising from the well, levitating in mid-air as it radiated with a condescending aura as if it was the supreme ruler.

“The seal on the Emperor Armament has been released...”

“Go take the weapon quickly...”

Everyone called out in excitement. Ignoring any battles, they all moved as fast as they could toward the Emperor Armament. Their eyes were feverish from the temptation. They knew too little about Emperor Armaments and believed that they could be obtained in the same way as Ruler Armaments. They thought that it would belong to whoever's hands it fell into.

Chapter 927: Battle for the Emperor Armament

Even though many of them had become rash due to the Emperor Armament, there was still a few people who did not participate in the rush and instead watched from afar. Jian Chen, Nubis, and Xie Wang were some of these people. Meanwhile, Mo Ji and the other three were of the former, having charged over long ago.

Nubis stared coldly at Mo Ji's group as they ran toward the Emperor Armament. He gently said, "The four of them are nothing good. We better stay vigilant."

Jian Chen nodded slightly but said nothing.

At this very moment, something happened. The Emperor Armament suddenly began to glow with a blinding light and actually began attacking despite having no one controlling it. It shot toward the people as a streak of light with unbelievable speed.

Three Saint Rulers failed to react, which allowed the Emperor Armament to rush through them. They were split in half down the nose and their souls were destroyed before they could even howl in agony.

The Emperor Armament continued onward without any decrease in force. It headed toward the walls of the hall, before colliding heavily against it.

Boom!

With a deafening noise, the entire hall began to tremble violently, while everyone inside almost fell over due to the loss of balance.

They all finally calmed down from their rashness, staring at the Emperor Armament in shock and disbelief. None of them had thought that this weapon without a user would actually fly by itself and would actually possess such terrifying power. It could make the entire hall shake from just a collision.

Boom! Boom! Boom...

The Emperor Armament constantly slammed against the wall of the hall, causing the entire place to tremble and rumble constantly. However, it was unable to create any damage. It still possessed a great force but it was still far from a Saint Emperor's power after all. It could shake the hall but not destroy it.

"It wants to escape," Jian Chen muttered as he stared fixedly at the Emperor Armament's actions.

"Perhaps the weapon has intelligence?" Nubis asked in curiosity. He was filled with disbelief.

"I don't know but I have heard of some rumors regarding Ruler Armaments. As long as experts who have reached the Ninth Heavenly Layer as Saint Rulers pass away from age, they will leave

behind their Saint Weapon. It will contain a shred of their three vital energies. They hope to be revived someday in the future,” Jian Chen said gruffly.

Nubis’ eyes narrowed. “Jian Chen, are you saying that the reason why the Emperor Armament possesses intelligence is because the Saint Emperor soul inside is acting up? The Saint Emperor is not dead?”

Jian Chen shook his head. He crossed his hands behind him as he stared unblinkingly at the Emperor Armament. “I’m not sure, but the power of the Emperor Armament is already beyond anything I can control, unless my strength increases.” Jian Chen’s expression suddenly changed when he reached there. The Emperor Armament was currently shooting toward where they stood with a sharp and powerful sword Qi.

“Be careful, dodge it,” Jian Chen cried out. He had already become a blur, moving into the distance. Meanwhile, Nubis and Xie Wang did not tarry behind either. They had always paid attention to the Emperor Armament and they dodged to both sides at the same time.

Boom! The Emperor Armament smashed heavily into where they stood before and its wild energy sent all three of them into the air.

“Argh! My arm!” Xie Wang howled out in pain. The Emperor Armament had shot over too quickly and his dodge had been a little slow. His entire left arm had been severed and blood sprayed like a fountain from his severed limb.

The Emperor Armament did not continue its attacks at the three of them. It immediately shot into the sky again, colliding heavily with the high roof of the hall, before turning around and shooting at the ground again. This time, it targeted the experts that stood scattered in the surroundings.

“Run!” Each and every person paled in fright, using their various fleeing techniques in an attempt to escape from the weapon’s attack range. However, the Emperor Armament was just too big so it possessed an even greater range for attack. Another expert failed to dodge in time and died to the weapon.

The Emperor Armament was like a headless fly, rampaging within the hall. It wanted to break through the hall and leave, so it behaved extremely rashly. However, all the people in the hall suffered from its aimless attacks and were left in horrible conditions as they dodged. Very soon, several more people died to its blade, while more than ten people had been injured by it too.

Thysnich stared fixedly at the Emperor Armament with a stern expression. Surging Saint King’s power rushed out from within him once again, forming a suit of armor to cover every inch of his body. Only his eyes remained uncovered. His arms were covered particularly well; the armor was even thicker there.

Thysnich leaped up and arrived near the hilt of the Emperor Armament. He directly opened his arms, hugging the thick hilt tightly in an attempt to subdue the Emperor Armament.

The Emperor Armament suddenly went quiet, before a powerful sword Qi exploded from within it. The sword Qi turned into a dazzling white light that enveloped Thysnich. Only a series of scratching sounds could be heard as it immediately covered Thysnich's armor with slashes all over. The defense of the armor was constantly eaten away.

Thysnich was unwilling to accept this. With a violent roar, the Saint King's power poured out from his body unceasingly, making up for any consumption of the armor's energy. A Space Ring appeared in his hand. He wanted to force the Emperor Armament into it.

The Emperor Armament immediately began to resist, refusing to enter the Space Ring. No matter how Thysnich tried, the Emperor Armament could not be stored into the Space Ring.

Unable to break free from Thysnich's grasp, the Emperor Armament rampaged in the hall as it dragged Thysnich along. It constantly rammed against the surroundings and tremendous force jolted through Thysnich. The agony tortured him greatly. If it were not for the armor, his organs would have probably turned to dust long ago. However, even though that was the case, it did not make the process any better for Thysnich.

Many experts also suffered grievous wounds. Many people fled in all directions, forced into a horrible condition by the Emperor Armament. The casualties were heavy, with less than twenty people alive now. Moreover, at least half of them were injured.

The consumption of Thysnich's Saint King's power was

extremely severe, to the point that he could not last much longer. He released his grasp of the hilt regretfully.

However, the weapon did not stop because of that. It continued to rampage in the hall, constantly slamming against the surroundings and producing deafening booms. It caused the entire hall to shake with no signs of stopping.

“My god, this Emperor Armament has gone crazy,” Nubis arrived before Jian Chen and swore as he breathed heavily while staring at the rampaging Emperor Armament. The weapon had left a bone-deep wound on his back.

Jian Chen stood silently as he carefully observed the Emperor Armament. He opened his hand and a golden streak of light immediately shot out from the center of his forehead, falling into his palm as a tiny golden tower.

All he could do now was use the saint artifact to subdue the Emperor Armament. The sword spirits did not have the power right to confront it now. If the Emperor Armament had a spirit, it naturally could be overwhelmed by the sword spirits. However, Jian Chen knew very well that this was impossible. There was an extremely high possibility that it had the soul of a Saint Emperor.

At this moment, the Emperor Armament turned around and shot toward Jian Chen once again.

Nubis produced a weird cry. He was unwilling to hesitate at all and dodged immediately. However, Jian Chen did not choose to

dodge this time. Instead, he stood there like nothing was happening, waiting for the arrival of the Emperor Armament.

When the Emperor Armament was ten meters away from Jian Chen, a white light suddenly appeared. Jian Chen had already notified the artifact spirit to open the main entrance of the saint artifact. As soon as the Emperor Armament struck the white light, it disappeared. It had been sucked away into the artifact space.

“Nubis, guard the saint artifact well!” Jian Chen sent a mental message to Nubis before he entered the space as well.

Within the artifact space, the long prepared artifact spirit battled the Emperor Armament mid-air. The artifact spirit was the absolute ruler of the artifact space, a legitimate Saint Emperor. Although the Emperor Armament was very powerful, it was still a weapon in the end. As such, how could it face up against the artifact spirit? It was subdued by the artifact spirit with much effort. Currently, it was pinned down by a giant hand materialized by the artifact spirit and was unable to break free no matter how it struggled.

In the blink of an eye, the domineering Emperor Armament had unknowingly entered the artifact space, falling into the hands of the artifact spirit.

The artifact spirit suppressed the Emperor Armament with the artifact's power and stopped it from struggling. Afterward, he arrived before Jian Chen and said courteously, “Master, this one has suppressed the Emperor Armament. However, the Emperor Armament is very powerful, so it is unlikely that master can

control it with master's current strength.

Jian Chen did not mind at all. He was filled with excitement as he said, "No worries. I'll be able to use it very quickly. Once I break through to the third layer of the Chaotic Body, I'll have the power to use it. I just wonder how great my battle ability will become when combined with the Emperor Armament after I reach the third layer." Jian Chen was filled with anticipation. At the same time, he secretly swore that he would make the Chaotic Body breakthrough as fast as possible once he left the Octoterra Divine Hall.

"Artifact spirit, I'll keep the Emperor Armament here and leave it in your care. I will be leaving first." Jian Chen was not willing to stay in the artifact space for very long as the dangers outside were still present. As a result, he left very soon.

When he left the saint artifact, all he saw was the experts who were fortunate enough to survive encircling Nubis and Jian Chen under Thysnich's lead. They were all hostile.

Jian Chen had expected this so he was not surprised at all when he saw this scene. He first took the saint artifact from Nubis' hands calmly, then looked toward Xie Wang. He said, "Xie Wang, don't resist. I'm taking you into the artifact space. Your missing limb can be healed there." Immediately, a milky-white light rushed out from the saint artifact and enveloped Xie Wang.

Xie Wang did not resist and was immediately taken away by the artifact's powers. The saint artifact then became a streak of golden light, disappearing into Jian Chen's forehead.

All the others, including Thysnich, became stunned when they saw this. They stared at Jian Chen's forehead in interest as their faces became filled with disbelief.

They had never seen or imagined that items could be stored in someone's head. It was such a big tower as well; they all could not help but grow curious when they saw this. They wondered how such a big, golden tower could burrow into someone's forehead.

What they saw had completely overthrown their prior knowledge.

"Ruler of the Turtle clan, what's that little golden tower? It's so miraculous." Thysnich stared fixedly at Jian Chen as he asked curiously. A sliver of greed hid in the depths of his eyes.

"Thysnich, I wonder what you all intend to do?" Jian Chen glared at all of them. He did not reply to Thysnich's question and instead rebuked coldly.

Thysnich was slightly angered when he heard this. He growled, "Ruler of the Turtle clan, I really want to ask you some questions. Not only did you take away the huge, invaluable divine quality crystal on the first floor, you even obtained the Blood Demon Emperor's cultivation method on the second floor. You reaped far greater benefits than all of us and now on the third floor, you've actually shamelessly taken away the Emperor Armament. Haven't you gone overboard?" Thysnich's tone could not help but become hostile toward the end.

For the Emperor Armament, he had paid a huge price. The amount of Saint King's power wasted pained his heart. It was not the power of an ordinary Saint King but power from an expert on par with hall elders. It was extremely precious. However, not only had he failed to obtain the Emperor Armament after paying such a great price, it had even ended up in Jian Chen's hands. How was it possible for him to not be angry?

Jian Chen's face darkened as he immediately glared at Thysnich. He said coldly, "Thysnich, please speak carefully. You do not possess the ability to subdue the Emperor Armament, so you can blame yourself for being too weak. You can't lay the blame on others. Are you saying that no one else can take it if you can't have it?"

Thysnich's face darkened as he stared back at Jian Chen without fear. He gnashed his teeth. "Alright, it was me who didn't have the power to subdue the Emperor Armament. However, ruler of the Turtle clan, let me give you some advice. I hope you don't regret this in the future; it's impossible to enjoy some treasures so easily."

Jian Chen's lips curled into a scornful smile. "I never regret my actions. But Thysnich, I need to warn you as well. It's best if you don't threaten me or do you believe that you'll become like those corpses as well, never to be able to leave the hall?" Jian Chen's voice was filled with powerful killing intent. He had already made up his mind to end Thysnich's life.

Thysnich's eyes narrowed as he snorted coldly. He said nothing in response and instead turned around and left. He made his way

toward the fourth floor, while his eyes were now filled with frigidness, “Ruler of the Turtle clan, let’s see how everything plays out. You still don’t know who’s going to end up as the corpse.”

With Thysnich’s departure, the other people all left as well. They all maintained a certain distance between each other as they made their way toward the fourth floor. Only Mo Ji and two other people were left in the end; one of them had been slain by the Emperor Armament.

“Ruler, Thysnich is not a simple person. You need to be careful,” Mo Ji said purposefully with a tone of concern. He acted like he was worried about Jian Chen.

Jian Chen only nodded his head in response to Mo Ji’s act of concern. He did not say anything more. Calling Nubis, he too continued on his way to the fourth floor.

Mo Ji and the two others looked at each other. They could naturally feel that Jian Chen’s treatment of them had undergone some minute changes. The three of them hesitated slightly, before following Jian Chen quietly to the fourth floor.

“Hmph, that Thysnich sure is arrogant. If it weren’t for the fact that there are fewer and fewer people now and we still might need them for any future barriers, I, the great Nubis, would’ve finished them off long ago,” said Nubis as he gnashed along the way.

“That Thysnich is not a simple person. I feel like he’s still hiding some powerful trump cards. It’s best if we are careful,” warned

Jian Chen.

Chapter 928: Eighth Floor of the Hall

Jian Chen and Nubis continued to the fourth floor of the palace, while Mo Ji and the other two followed closely behind them. They could sense that Jian Chen and Nubis now treated them differently. Mo Ji's group constantly attempted to explain what had happened before.

They arrived on the fourth floor very quickly but discovered that it was actually empty. Meanwhile, Thysnich's group was nowhere to be seen.

“There's nothing here. Let's continue to the fifth floor,” Jian Chen said calmly after glancing around. They then continued their way to the fifth floor and did not meet any obstructions along the way. There were no formations or barriers at all.

The hall had a total of nine floors, yet the fifth one was empty. Jian Chen's group continued onward carefully, passing through the sixth and seventh floors and arriving on the eighth smoothly.

The eighth floor seemed empty as well. However, some regions of space here actually seemed hazy—signs of formations being triggered. Through the hazy space, they could vaguely see some trapped people.

All of them were trapped within the formation's space, including Thysnich. Thirty meters in front, there was even the corpse of a person that died to the formations. His blood had run dry as well, sucked away by the hall.

“Be careful, there are formations here.” Jian Chen’s group could not help but slow down when they saw this. They stared grimly ahead.

“The formations are very powerful, much more powerful than the ones we came across before. It’s best that we don’t separate from one another, since we might not be able to break through it by ourselves. We can work together,” Jian Chen said gruffly, before advancing forward cautiously.

The formations in the hall were extremely profound. Although they had weakened greatly with the corrosion of time, a few high-leveled ones still possessed great power.

There was only one way from the eighth floor to the ninth and that was to pass through the countless barriers. There was no other way. Even flying would not work.

Formations were hidden everywhere on the eighth floor and could catch people off-guard. After taking ten steps, Jian Chen’s group suddenly became ensnared in one.

At the same time, violent booms resounded. A hundred meters ahead, Thysnich and the others had broken through the one that had trapped them, resulting in their appearance.

As soon as Thysnich escaped, he noticed that Jian Chen’s group had also become ensnared. A cold sliver of killing intent immediately flashed across his eyes as he thought, “Ruler of the

Turtle clan, I'll let these formations chip away at some of your strength. I will definitely not be letting you leave this place alive. The cultivation method of the Blood Demon Emperor, the Emperor Armament from a human emperor and that golden tower hidden in your head will all become mine. No one has the right to fight over things with me. The day of your death will arrive once I get the legacy of the Octoterra Emperor."

Thysnich continued onward with the others that he had reached a tacit understanding with, falling into another formation very quickly.

Although Thysnich had once been everyone's enemy, there were no eternal foes in the world, only eternal benefits. Under such circumstances, he decided to work together with the others once again, just to reach the ninth floor.

There were only less than twenty people left of the hundred and sixty that had entered initially and many of them were wounded as well. There were three groups in total who made their way through the eighth floor; another one besides Jian Chen and Thysnich's groups. They too had fallen into a formation, strenuously trying to break through it.

As they advanced, the formations became more and more powerful. All three groups used everything they had to break through the formations because they all believe that the Octoterra Emperor's legacy would be on the ninth floor, and that whoever got there first would be able to obtain it.

As a result, all three groups devoted every moment of their time

to break through the formations. They feared that they would be overtaken by the other two groups.

Two whole days passed. Although Jian Chen's group had relatively fewer people and came at a later time, they possessed Jian Chen and Nubis, two people who could stand on equal ground with Saint Kings. As a result, they were slightly faster than the other two groups, now completely caught up.

Right now, the three groups had all arrived at the center of the eighth floor. They were still half way from the ninth floor.

The other two groups secretly panicked when they saw Jian Chen's group catch up to the first group. They immediately sped up, both wanting to be first.

The formations constantly became stronger toward the end, causing everyone to move slower and slower. At the very beginning, they only needed a single attack together but now they all needed to put in a tremendous effort and use everything they had.

Boom!

Another powerful formation was broken through, revealing Jian Chen's group.

Jian Chen had his King Armament in hand. It shone brightly with a dark light, while a thick layer of Chaotic Force coiled

around it, radiating with a devastating aura.

Behind Jian Chen was Nubis, Mo Ji, and the two others. They all seemed exhausted and greatly drained after breaking through so many formations.

“The formations are constantly becoming stronger. Do you still think we’ll be able to break the ones at the end?” Nubis said gruffly with a stern expression. Virtually all the formations they came across were ensnaring or killing formations; ensnaring ones could be dealt with when they came across them but they would be in danger whenever they came across powerful killing formations.

Jian Chen did not even look at the two other groups behind. He lowered his head in thought for some time, before continuing onward with his group. They fell into another formation after taking ten steps.

The eighth floor of the hall was basically a floor of formations. The numbers were unimaginable; no matter which direction they walked in, they would fall into one in less than ten steps.

Jian Chen had considered using the white tiger’s powers to directly pass through to the ninth floor after being faced with these endless formations. However, his impressions of the divine hall had changed greatly after all the things he had encountered after coming in. A thought always lingered in his head, that the Octoterra Divine Hall was definitely not as simple as it seemed. Perhaps there was no legacy on the eighth floor, just another unknown danger waiting for them.

As a result, Jian Chen gave up on the idea of using Xiao Bai. Instead, he chose to use a slower method, spending energy to break through the formations like everyone else.

In the blink of an eye, another three days passed. Everyone moved at an extremely slow rate in these three days. They had not even traversed a third of the remaining half.

Every time Jian Chen's group broke through a formation, they needed to stop there and recover their exerted power. Even Nubis was no longer an exception; only Jian Chen remain energetic without any signs of weakness.

Although Jian Chen had already faced many battles, the Chaotic Force within him could support him for a very long time as long as he did not use it like last time in the City of God. This was because each strand of Chaotic Force contained an extremely powerful energy, so his energy would be consumed much more slowly in comparison to ordinary people.

The strength and depth of Chaotic Force could not be measured using ordinary forces. It was the supreme force in the world; nothing could compare to it in the universe.

The problem was that Jian Chen's Chaotic Force right now was not the true Chaotic Force. The Chaotic Body had been divided into eighteen layers by the sword spirits and his Chaotic Force would transform as he reached each layer. Only when he reached the eighteenth layer would it become true Chaotic Force; only at

that time would its strength be fully displayed.

The other people only used a single day to recover under the support of ordinary pills. They continued on their way, breaking through formations.

Right now, Thysnich was one step faster than everyone else. He took high-level pills, so he recovered his energy faster than everyone else.

Time passed quickly and three months passed in the blink of an eye. Jian Chen's group finally completed the remaining journey. They finally stood at the entrance of the ninth floor.

They were all in horrible shapes. Their clothes were tattered while their faces were pale and haggard. They seemed like beggars and this also applied to Jian Chen.

The other people besides Jian Chen were wounded as well. They had walked on the edge of death several times with their lives on a thread.

Thysnich and the other group emerged at the same time. They were in horrible shapes too; their tattered clothes matted with blood. Clearly, they had suffered in the formations and there had been a decrease of people in both groups. Some had died to the formations.

“Ruler of the Turtle clan, above is where the legacy of the

Octoterra Emperor lies. Only one person can inherit it but I just wonder who it will end up with in the end,” Thysnich said emotionlessly to Jian Chen, before glancing coldly at all the others in the surroundings.

He knew that the unity between everyone was only till they reached the end successfully. As soon as they faced the legacy of the Octoterra Emperor, they would all become enemies without any remorse.

However, Thysnich only viewed one person importantly among all the people, and that was Jian Chen. He did not care about the others.

Jian Chen said nothing, also glancing past everyone but this time perhaps subconsciously. To him, no one standing here was ordinary. No one could be underestimated for making it here. Although many of them were not renowned, that was because they hid purposefully. Perhaps, there were other people no weaker than Thysnich among them, just not as dazzling and famed as Thysnich.

This was especially applicable to the third group. Without someone like Thysnich as their leader, they had actually managed to make it here with the same speed. This made them even more complicated than they seemed. They were all of the Ninth Heavenly Layer but no one knew just how many people had yet to reveal their trump cards.

Chapter 929: Baleful Yin Force

The three groups did not begin fighting. They stood at the entrance to the ninth floor at the same time, examining it before continuing onward. Each person was filled with vigilance; not only did they have to guard against the dangers from the hall, they also needed to guard against everyone else. No one dared to be careless.

They climbed the long staircase and finally arrived on the ninth floor. However, they all became dumbfounded as it was not a majestic hall like they had imagined. Instead, there were nine dark tunnels that led off to who knows where.

Everyone could not help but come to a stop. They stared at the dark tunnel with frowns, while lights flickered in their eyes. This had completely exceeded their expectations.

“Can we only reach the true ninth floor by passing through these tunnels?” An old man from the third group guessed.

Jian Chen grimly scanned all nine tunnels, before fully expanding his presence. He wanted to see what was inside each one.

However, Jian Chen’s presence suffered even greater suppressions here. He could only expand it to a radius of less than a hundred meters of his sight.

“We’ve already come here. There’s no path back now. It doesn’t matter whether you want the legacy or you want to leave, you all

need to advance past the ninth floor. Nubis, let's choose a tunnel," Jian Chen said gruffly.

Nubis nodded. "That's all we can do now that everything's like this."

Soon afterward, Jian Chen casually chose a tunnel and left with Nubis and the three other people that followed them.

As Jian Chen's group disappeared down a tunnel, the two other groups also chose their own. Their groups remained together without separating.

The tunnels seemed like bottlenecks—although their entrances were not very big, they contained something entirely different. Jian Chen's group actually arrived in a huge space after passing through their tunnel. The space was circular and about a kilometer wide.

Nine huge pillars stood in the surroundings. They were completely red and glowed with a demonic red light, spinning around the empty space.

Boom!

Suddenly, the huge stone door behind them slammed close with a rumble. The stone door was made of the same material as the door of the treasury on the second floor so it was terrifyingly tough.

Their hearts all sank, they all felt an ill omen.

Suddenly, a powerful energy began to ripple. The surrounding stone pillars began to shine with dazzling streaks of light that crossed mid-air. It formed a blood-red barrier around the entire region; there was no other color except red. It made them feel like they had entered another space.

“This is an extremely powerful formation and it’s a killing formation,” growled Nubis. He was extremely stern. His hands immediately became golden as he made preparations for battle.

Jian Chen also became grim. The King Armament was already in his hands. He could feel the terror of this killing formation. From its influence alone, he could tell that it had far exceeded the power of any formation on the eighth floor.

Suddenly, they heard a wave break. In the air, a red ocean descended as if it was completely composed of blood, turning the space into a sea of blood.

The liquid constantly churned, tossed, and turned. It was like the tempestuous sea. Jian Chen and the others could even hear the howls of countless vengeful spirits. They formed horrendous ghostly faces, biting at the group with their bloody mouths. It was hair-raising.

A faint layer of bloody mist floated slowly toward them, quickly enveloping them. The bloody mist could injure their souls. It immediately invaded their minds as soon as they drew close and

caught them off-guard.

They immediately experienced a sharp pain in their heads and their heads began to whirl. Their minds had become slightly clouded now.

“This is Baleful Yin Force!” Jian Chen cried out. He was filled with disbelief. It was actually completely the same as the Baleful Yin Force he felt from the four protectors of the Bloodsword sect.

Jian Chen had come to an understanding toward the Baleful Yin Force on the Tian Yuan Continent. Apparently, it was a special energy formed from slaughter and no one could use this energy other than the Bloodsword sect of the three great assassination organizations.

Baleful Yin Force could affect the consciousness of people. There was no way to defend against it; the only choice a victim had was to endure it. It was said that if the Baleful Yin Force was powerful enough, it could directly disperse the souls of its victim. It was extremely powerful.

“Baleful Yin Force is only cultivated by the assassins of the Bloodsword sect. Why would it be here?” Jian Chen constantly asked himself. He was greatly perturbed. After all, this was the Octoterra Divine Hall, the place where the Octoterra Emperor used to live. Yet, there was actually Baleful Yin Force in the formations here. Perhaps the Octoterra Emperor also possessed this power?

Fortunately, the Baleful Yin Force was not powerful enough to

disperse their souls directly. At most, it would only affect them slightly and cut away some of their strength.

Suddenly, the sea of blood began to churn even more violently. It slowly formed a blood-red, hundred-meter-tall giant who possessed a great, imposing manner.

The giant's face was unclear but as it stood there, it seemed to be reaching from the earth to the heavens. It radiated with a great pressure as if it was God.

At this moment, the giant moved. He extended a finger toward Jian Chen's finger. With that, the giant's arm constantly grew longer while the finger itself expanded in size. It grew to several hundred meters in length, before shooting toward them.

Jian Chen's King Armament radiated with a dark light as energy filled the entire space with devastating aura. Nubis' hands glowed with a dazzling goldenly light, while powerful energy constantly churned. Mo Ji and the other two had all pulled out their weapons as well. No one held anything back, striking the huge finger together with their most powerful attacks.

Boom!

The attacks from the five collided with the giant's finger. Violent energy erupted, wreaking havoc in the entire space.

The giant's finger paused slightly and came to a halt. Everyone

flew backward without exception and became pale. Nubis and the others even vomited blood violently, now heavily injured. Meanwhile, some blood flowed from the corner of Jian Chen's lips, he was heavily wounded as well.

The five of them shot back by several dozen meters before colliding with the edge of the barrier. Blood immediately spurted violently from their mouths again.

Jian Chen climbed to his feet with a leap and stared at the blood-red giant in astoundment. He was extremely stern.

The giant's strength had far exceeded what they anticipated. Jian Chen was certain that it was at least at the Fifth Heavenly Layer of Saint King or even the Sixth. It definitely was not something they could deal with.

“God dammit. This formation is too powerful. It actually materialized such a powerful thing. How do we fight it?” Nubis stood up as he swore, immediately pulling out a large handful of Class 6 Radiant Spirit Pills and wolfing them down.

Mo Ji and the other two pulled out jade bottles from their Space Rings. A jade-green pill rolled out from their bottles at the same time and they took it as they winced in pain.

Their pills were clearly much more powerful than the Radiant Spirit Pills. Their complexions immediately took a turn for the better with unbelievable speed, they were actually healing much faster than Nubis.

A vast pressure appeared from ahead and the red giant began to move once again. Its finger shot toward them with a terrifying force just like before.

Despair filled the eyes of Mo Ji and the three others. The giant was just too powerful; they could not fend off a second strike right now as they were still injured.

Jian Chen stared fixedly at the giant finger as it rapidly drew closer. Suddenly, a golden streak of light shot from the center of his forehead and the saint artifact appeared in his hand. He immediately opened an entry to it and a towering sword Qi radiated from within. The Emperor Armament which was trapped inside flew out, colliding with the finger as soon as it appeared.

With a boom, the giant finger was destroyed by the Emperor Armament's attack. It scattered into the sea of blood. However, in the next moment, most of the blood flowed toward the giant. It fused into the giant's body.

The giant's arm regrew. In that moment, its attention became focused on the Emperor Armament and its giant red hand directly grabbed at it.

The Emperor Armament raged. It radiated a powerful sword Qi radiated and chopped off the giant's hand mid-air.

However, the giant was indestructible. Its missing limb immediately transformed into a pool of blood and fused with its

body, allowing it to be regrown.

“I hope the Emperor Armament can destroy the blood giant.” Nubis was elated. The flames of hope seemed to be ignited within him and the others.

The Emperor Armament, however, surprised them with what it did next. It did not bother with the blood giant anymore, directly flying to the edge of the formation and chopping at the space there. It carved a huge gap, before fleeing through it.

The five of them were stunned but they soon returned to their senses. They charged at the gap, pushing their speeds to the utmost limits.

With the help of his secret techniques, Nubis charged in front. He was the first one to leave, followed by Mo Ji's trio. Jian Chen had been relatively further from the gap, so he was last.

Chapter 930: Assassins of the Serpent God Hall

The five of them were stunned but they soon returned to their senses. They charged at the gap, pushing their speeds to the utmost limits.

With the help of his secret techniques, Nubis charged in front. He was the first one to leave, followed by Mo Ji's trio. Jian Chen had been relatively further from the gap, so he was last.

The blood-red giant that had materialized in the formation space was at least as strong as a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King, it was not something they could fend off. If they remained there, there would only be death, yet the Emperor Armament had now punched a hole through the formation. It naturally became the target where everyone fled toward as they all knew that perhaps that was the only way they could survive.

As a result, they all moved as fast as they could.

“Emperor Armament, don't you dare run away. I've subdued you once, so I can subdue you again.” Jian Chen turned into a blur, rushing toward the gap with lightning speed.

Jian Chen had been forced to let out the Emperor Armament. Right now, probably only the Emperor Armament could fend off the blood giant. However, he had never expected the outcome to be like this. The blood giant was indeed not the Emperor Armament's opponent but the Emperor Armament did not behave as Jian Chen

had wished. It did not kill the blood giant. Instead, it cut through the formation and fled.

Jian Chen's head was filled with thoughts of the Emperor Armament. Now that it had fled, he felt extremely worried. He knew that maybe a sliver of its owner's presence existed within it, so it possessed a certain level of intelligence. After suffering from the saint artifact before, it would definitely take precautions against it. It would definitely not be as easy this time to suck it into the artifact space.

Very quickly, the trio arrived before the gap. Jian Chen was less than ten meters behind them but just when they were about to pass through, a cold sliver of light flashed across their eyes in unison. They suddenly all turned around and each struck Jian Chen with a palm strike.

Although the three of them were still injured, the power of their three strikes could not be ignored. They quickly surged toward Jian Chen.

Right now, Jian Chen was distracted by the thoughts of the Emperor Armament and did not expect that Mo Ji and the other two would attack him at this very moment. When he managed to react, the three attacks had already arrived before him.

Jian Chen's face changed abruptly. A cold light shone in his eyes as he barely managed to lash out with his King Armament. It collided with the three attacks.

With a rumble, the violent ripples of energy knocked against Jian Chen, causing him to come to a stop. Afterward, he was knocked backward uncontrollably, only coming to a halt several hundred meters away.

The gap made by the Emperor Armament quickly closed up. Jian Chen could clearly see the three of them standing outside and sneering back at him through the gap.

Jian Chen's face darkened greatly as killing intent filled his heart. It radiated outward uncontrollably, causing the surrounding temperature to drop drastically. The gap had closed up very quickly. Jian Chen was now without a way out.

“Mo Ji, I will definitely kill you all,” Jian Chen said coldly. His icy voice seemed to come from a god of death and was heard clearly by them. The gap closed completely as soon as Jian Chen finished his words, trapping him inside.

The originally spacious outside area was enveloped by a blood-red cover. There was only an extremely narrow tunnel, where Mo Ji's group and Nubis currently stood.

Nubis saw everything that had happened just then. His face instantly sank, while a vast killing intent poured from his body. It surged toward the sky.

“You actually dare to attack Jian Chen. I, the great Nubis, will tear you all to shreds.” Nubis' eyes became bloodshot as his golden hands immediately reached toward the trio.

In that moment, Mo Ji and the other two seemed like completely different people. They all knew just how powerful Nubis was but they viewed his attack as nothing. Their eyes were filled with scorn.

A vast power rushed from them, quickly condensing into suits of armors that protected them.

Nubis' hands were unable to break through their armors. All it did was make them take a few steps back.

“This is a Saint King's power. Didn't you use it all up already? How do you still have more?” Nubis was shocked. He immediately became stern.

The three of them immediately sneered when they heard this. One of them said, “Used all of it up? Hehe, that's just to trick you. Nubis, the powers on the three of us may not be from hall elder level experts but they're still from 16th Star experts. Do you think you can break through them with just your power?”

Nubis replied coldly, “Do you think you'll be able to obtain the Octoterra Emperor's legacy just like that? You can't forget that there's Thysnich other than Jian Chen. Without Jian Chen, you won't be able to win against Thysnich with just your Saint King's power.”

“Who said we wanted the legacy?” Mo Ji stared at Nubis and jeered, “Our final target is not the legacy but to kill the three of

you. If it weren't for the fact that our clans might get dragged in if we did it before so many people, we would've acted long ago. But isn't it convenient now? We can use this formation to finish off Jian Chen, saving us some energy. Our remaining power will be enough to finish you off."

"What! You came here to kill us?" Nubis was shocked as this had completely surpassed his expectations.

"Correct. You offended the Serpent God Hall. Did you really think you would be safe and sound hiding in the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall?" Mo Ji said.

"So that's it. You're people of the Serpent God Hall." Nubis suddenly reached an understanding.

"We're not people of the Serpent God Hall, just people recruited by the Serpent God Hall. Nubis, since you know everything now, it's about time we send you off." Cold battle intent appeared in their eyes as immense Saint King's power rushed from their bodies. It was shaped into three sea creatures that howled furiously, charging toward Nubis.

This was not their own power but the Saint King's power deposited by a 16th Star expert. Its power was tremendous.

Nubis became stern, turning around to flee. Although he was confident in himself, he did not believe he could endure such tremendous attacks.

A casual strike from a 16th Star expert was enough to heavily injure him. If he took on three of them, he would only be barely alive if he did not die.

Most importantly, he had no clue just how strong the expert who deposited his power into the three of them was. Was he of the Fifth Heavenly Layer or the Eighth Heavenly Layer? Maybe even of the Ninth Heavenly Layer?

However, no matter how Nubis fled, the attacks caught up very quickly. Nubis also decided to risk everything when he saw how he could not escape. Roaring at the sky, two lights—one gold and one silver—emerged from within him. The lights quickly turned into densely-packed scales that covered every inch of his body. Flames of two different colors burned on his scales, becoming more vigorous as they burnt. His scales began to bulge at an unbelievable rate.

Nubis revealed an expression of pain as he roared through gritted teeth, “Inherited secret technique, Explosion of Gold and Silver Scales!” This was a self-mutilating attack, blowing up the scales all over him to injure the surrounding people. Not only was this attack extremely powerful, it was laced with venom as well.

However, the price to cast this secret technique was just too great. Not only would it be a big blow to his essence, he would lose all his protective scales. He would need to endure decades or even centuries of agonizing pain to slowly recover his essence, before shedding his skin and regrowing his scales.

“Nubis, I’m here. Stop!” Jian Chen’s voice appeared in Nubis’

head at that very moment.

Nubis' eyes lit up and he subconsciously stopped his secret technique. A golden light began to glow before him and a golden tower sailed through the air. It shielded him.

The golden tower was ten meters tall and two meters wide. It landed heavily on the ground, causing it to tremble gently.

Boom! The three attacks directly collided with it but the two remained still. The tower had blocked the three attacks for Nubis and he had emerged completely unscathed.

A great tiger roar soon boomed out. With a white flash, an awe-inspiring white tiger had appeared behind the trio.

The white tiger was three meters long and possessed wings on its back. As it stood there, a certain pressure immediately began to descend upon the surroundings. It was like the ruler of the world and its condescending aura was even denser than a Saint Emperor's.

A figure sat on the back of the tiger and to no surprise, it was Jian Chen.

Mo Ji's group looked at Jian Chen behind them and their eyes bulged immediately. They were overwhelmed with disbelief.

“Jian Chen, you've escaped! How is that possible...”

“You charged out from the formation?! Did you break through it...”

“Impossible, the gap from the Emperor Armament had completely closed up! How could you have come out...”

All three of them exclaimed in surprise as their complexions became extremely ugly.

Chapter 931: The Octoterra Emperor (One)

Mo Ji's group looked at Jian Chen behind them and their eyes bulged immediately. They were overwhelmed with disbelief.

“Jian Chen, you've escaped! How is that possible...”

“You charged out from the formation?! Did you break through it...”

“Impossible, the gap from the Emperor Armament had completely closed up! How could you have come out...”

All three of them exclaimed in surprise as their complexions became extremely ugly.

Jian Chen sat awe-inspiringly on the white tiger's back with his King Armament in hand. He stared coldly at the trio as intense killing intent poured from him without restraint.

“Although I knew you would do this sooner or later, I never expected you to be assassins sent by the Serpent God Hall,” Jian Chen said coldly. He missed none of the words the three of them had said earlier.

Before in the Sea Goddess Hall, the trio had purposefully wanted to enter the Octoterra Divine Hall with Jian Chen because they had planned this long ago. Their intentions were to approach Jian Chen and then complete the mission given by Serpent God Hall.

They were going to eliminate Jian Chen, Nubis, and Xie Wang when the perfect opportunity arose.

For the three of them to eliminate Jian Chen's group, the experts of the Serpent God Hall were even willing to pay a great price to fill them up with Saint King's power. They had hidden the 16th Star Saint King's power very well, only revealing it in the moment before.

As for the fourth person who had joined Jian Chen's group, he had joined purely out of chance. However, he had already died.

Although Jian Chen surprised the trio greatly by breaking out of the formation, they calmed down very quickly as they were still Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings after all. Their faces were immediately filled with killing intent as one of them sneered, "Jian Chen, you sure are lucky to survive even after falling into such a powerful formation. Since the formation hasn't killed you, let the three of us do the deed instead. You must die today."

Tremendous Saint King's power rushed from the three of them and immediately condensed into the shapes of sea beasts. They charged at Jian Chen as they roared furiously.

This time, they had clearly used more Saint King's power than before. A stupendous pressure immediately descended on Jian Chen as the three beasts shot through the air. Even Jian Chen found it suffocating.

Jian Chen was grim. This was not the first time he faced up

against the attacks from a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King, so he was extremely familiar with the power they used. Additionally, he could tell from the attacks that the person who had given them the power had definitely surpassed the Fifth Heavenly Layer. Although they were not on the level of hall elders, they were not far off.

Jian Chen did not dare to face such powerful attacks head-on. Patting the tiger's back gently with his left hand, it actually leaped into the blood-red cover to its side as if it had received some instructions. They had entered the formation once again.

The Saint King's power passed through the location where Jian Chen previously stood, colliding heavily with the wall behind.

Boom!

The entire hall trembled slightly. Their attacks could shake the hall, so it could be inferred that these attacks were roughly just as powerful as the ownerless Emperor Armament.

A white figure appeared behind the trio. Jian Chen had left the formation once again with the help of the white tiger, arriving soundlessly behind the three of them.

Jian Chen leaped off the white tiger's back without any hesitation and rushed at Mo Ji's group. He stabbed out three times with his King Armament that shone with a dark light from the Chaotic Force.

Ding! Ding! Ding!

Before they could react, the three stabs struck the back of their heads accurately. However, they were covered in a layer of condensed armor and their heads were not an exception to its protection. Jian Chen's strike had failed to harm them.

The force from the weapon caused them to stumble a few steps forward, while a tiny crack had already appeared on the back of their condensed helmets.

Jian Chen failed to break through the protection with a single strike but he managed to damage it quite heavily.

Jian Chen did not stop. His arm jolted violently and he continued to stab out. The King Armament became a flurry of blurs, enveloping the three of them.

With a series of closely-packed sounds, Jian Chen struck the three of them over a dozen times in an instant with his rain-like attacks. Web-like cracks appeared on their armors and quickly spread.

The expressions of the trio changed. Saint King's power surged from within them immediately. They wanted to use it to face up against Jian Chen again.

Jian Chen knew just how terrifying this power was, so he did not fight back at all. With a gesture of his hand, the ten-meter-tall

saint artifact immediately flew up from behind to block the three attacks.

Their strikes that could even shake the palace slammed into the artifact but it did not even tremble. It resisted the attacks without the slightest effort.

“I’d like to see just how much power you have left,” Jian Chen said coldly. Afterward, he continued his wild flurry of attacks with the saint artifact occasionally shielding him.

The power within the three of them quickly disappeared under their rapid consumption. They had lost their ability to contend against Jian Chen without the Saint King’s power, so they were felled very quickly. All of their souls were wiped out by Jian Chen.

With their deaths, the blood within them was quickly sucked away by the hall. They soon became shriveled corpses.

Jian Chen removed their Space Rings, while the saint artifact also shrank and flew into his hand. Jian Chen arrived before the white tiger and gently petted its snow-white fur. He said, “Xiao Bai, it’s too dangerous here. You should return to the artifact space and work hard on powering up.”

In this recent period of time, the white tiger had always been consuming heavenly resources, so its strength had increased extremely quickly. It was already a Class 6 Magical Beast, as strong as a Fifth Cycle Heaven Saint Master. It grew at a startling speed.

After all, only a few years had passed since it was born.

The white tiger did not resist, returning to the artifact space after a deep growl.

Jian Chen arrived before Nubis and asked with concern as he stared at his rather-pale face, “You fine?”

Nubis stared darkly at the corpses and gnashed his teeth. “I never thought they’d be assassins sent by the Serpent God Hall. Jian Chen, it’s fortunate that you made it on time. Otherwise, I, the great Nubis, would have been skinned alive.”

Jian Chen chuckled when he heard that. He looked around, before locking onto a door nearby. A meter-wide hole was present in it.

“The Emperor Armament should have left through there. That should be the way to the Octoterra Emperor’s legacy as well. Let’s go,” said Jian Chen, before making his way there with Nubis.

Jian Chen did not let Xie Wang out. With his current strength, he was only useful when they had first entered the divine hall. Now that they had reached the end, the dangers were far greater than before. Not only would Xie Wang be of absolutely no help, he could even drag them down or even end up dying.

Jian Chen and Nubis made their way through the broken door and arrived in a long passageway.

The passageway was dark, curvy, and narrow. Jian Chen and Nubis walked through it cautiously and silently. The passageway then opened up after they were several kilometers in.

Before them was a beautifully-decorated hall. It was extremely spacious, several hundred meters in both length and width. It was a total mess and fragments of various ornaments were littered carelessly in the surroundings. They all showed the marks of time. A huge battle seemed to have erupted there very long ago.

Jian Chen looked around, before coming to a stop very quickly. Five figures stood a hundred meters in front of the pair.

“How did they get here so fast?” Nubis also discovered them. He was astounded.

These five were from the two other groups. To no surprise, Thysnich was one of them. He had actually arrived before Jian Chen.

The five of them had also discovered Jian Chen, all glancing over and staring fixedly at the two of them.

“Ruler of the Turtle clan, you’ve come a little slow,” Thysnich said emotionlessly to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen and Nubis made their way over the countless fragments to the others and said, “I thought we had come here first

but it looks like we're actually the last ones now." They stopped twenty meters away as they constantly glanced and observed the each other.

"Ruler of the Turtle clan, I originally thought that only the two of us would be able to reach here. But I have miscalculated. There's not just the two of us. There are some friends who had always concealed their strength," Thysnich said coldly as he stared at the four other people.

There were two old men, one old woman, and a middle-aged man. They all seemed extremely ordinary, unable to catch anyone's attention.

Chapter 932: The Octoterra Emperor (Two)

The middle-aged man belonged to the same group as Thysnich. He had always kept his strength well-concealed and had maintained an extremely low profile. As a result, he had not been discovered by Thysnich, even after spending so much time beside him.

Thysnich glared past the other people, before staring toward the depths of the hall. His eyes burned with interest.

A huge sculpture stood in the depths. It was a sculpture of a middle-aged man and it seemed extremely life-like, like a real person. He was filled with charm. Standing there, he seemed completely like a part of the surroundings, without any difference.

Staring at the sculpture, all of them unconsciously felt as if a tremendous pressure had entered their souls. It was like they were prostrating themselves to it.

“Is this the Octoterra Emperor?” Jian Chen struggled to remain calm as he stared at the sculpture.

However, Jian Chen soon remembered the advice from hall elder Hong of the Sea Goddess Hall. He then looked around as he thought, “Elder Hong said that other than the legacy, this divine hall is the most valuable item present. As long as I can find the control center, I can control this divine hall. So where is it?”

“Jian Chen, why isn’t the Emperor Armament here? Where’d it

go?” Suddenly, Jian Chen heard Nubis’ mental message.

Jian Chen became slightly stunned. A sliver of light flashed across his eyes and he looked around carefully. He actually found no traces of the Emperor Armament.

“How is it like this? We clearly went through the door broken by the Emperor Armament to get here, so why are there no traces of it?” Jian Chen thought. He felt uneasy.

At this moment, Thysnich spoke, “If I’ve guessed correctly, the Octoterra Emperor’s legacy must be in that sculpture, because that’s the only thing that’s completely intact. But there are seven people here, while only one person can obtain the legacy. Does anyone have any good idea to deal with this problem?”

Everyone’s eyes immediately began to flicker in thought as they heard this. They looked around cautiously to prevent anyone from catching them off guard.

No one was not enticed by the Octoterra Emperor’s legacy. They had all exhausted such great efforts to get here. How could they just give up so easily now?

The hall immediately fell into a deathly silence. The seven of them stood there silently as the atmosphere became suffocating. A slight killing intent gradually permeated the entire hall.

“Allow me to check whether the legacy is in the sculpture at all.”

The suffocating atmosphere was finally broken. The old woman pointed out and some Saint King's power immediately shot out and struck the sculpture forcefully.

No one stopped her. Instead, they all stared intently at the sculpture. They were unsure if the sculpture was left behind by the Octoterra Emperor all those years ago or if it contained the legacy at all. They all wanted to borrow the old woman to test the truth of the sculpture.

Boom!

The sculpture was more fragile than they had imagined. The power easily shattered the sculpture, causing stones to fly everywhere.

Everyone became disappointed when they saw that. They no longer believed that the sculpture would contain the Octoterra Emperor's legacy seeing how easily it had been destroyed.

However, an azure light was revealed in that very moment. Where the head of the shattered sculpture was, a hazy azure ball of light floated silently.

Everyone immediately focused their attention on the ball of light. Thysnich even cried out involuntarily, "Is that the legacy?"

Everyone's faces twitched when they heard Thysnich. Temptation burned in their eyes. Even Jian Chen and Nubis were

not exceptions.

This was the legacy of a Saint Emperor. It contained everything the Saint Emperor had learned, including his comprehension of the laws of the world. Reaching Saint Emperor would only be a matter of time for whoever obtained it.

“No.” Suddenly, Jian Chen’s eyes narrowed. He stared fixedly at the light and revealed an uneasy expression. His presence was extremely powerful, far greater than Thysnich or the others’. He could actually feel the rippling of a soul within the azure light. It was very weak but extremely energetic.

“The soul is conscious. The azure light is just a seal, preventing the soul’s ripples from spreading outward and being detected.” A sudden thought appeared in Jian Chen’s head, which caused him to pale slightly.

He had suddenly reached an unbelievable conclusion after thinking back to all the weird matters that had occurred in the Octoterra Divine Hall: the Octoterra Emperor was still alive!

With the whistling of wind, Thysnich and the four others shot toward the azure ball of light. They were lightning fast.

Nubis did not hesitate either but just as he wanted to join in, Jian Chen suddenly extended his hand and gripped Nubis’ shoulder. Through a communication technique, he said, “Don’t go. It’s not as simple as it seems.”

Nubis almost had a blind faith in Jian Chen after knowing him for so many years. He immediately suppressed his rashness after what Jian Chen warned him.

Thysnich and the four others arrived before the light in a flash, reaching toward it in unison.

Suddenly, something happened. The azure light disappeared, replaced by a dazzling red light. Before they could react, it shot toward them with unbelievable speed, immediately disappearing into their heads.

“Hahahahaha, I’ve long awaited this day. It won’t be long till I return. Sea Goddess Hall, Serpent God Hall, Heaven’s Spirit Hall, I’ll be wiping you all out soon after I take these bodies.” A wild, savage laughter rang out in the air.

Both Jian Chen and Nubis became grim when they saw the sudden change in the situation. Their hearts sank in particular because of the wild laughter.

“I-i- is this the voice of the Octoterra Emperor? The Octoterra Emperor is not dead?” Nubis’ voice trembled slightly. In that moment, both of them understood. The Octoterra Divine Hall was actually all a scheme, a scheme for the emperor’s revival.

Jian Chen’s face darkened completely as he said, “I finally understand why the divine hall would suck away the blood from the vicious beasts. It’s all a scheme of the Octoterra Emperor. He only exists as a soul right now and it must have become extremely

weak after so many years of slumber. It needs to absorb the vital essence present in the blood of the experts and beasts to heal.”

Nubis’ complexion became extremely ugly as he said hurriedly, “Jian Chen, we can’t stay here anymore. We need to leave.”

Jian Chen shook his head powerlessly. “The Octoterra Divine Hall is actually a trap. That whatever legacy is fake. No wonder we couldn’t find any way out earlier. There’s probably only a way into this divine hall and no way out at all. We can’t leave now.”

The five people all howled out, tossing and turning on the floor as they clutched their heads in agony.

“Hahaha, there’s actually a ruler’s body. I’ll be taking your body,” the savage voice rang out in the hall once again. With a few explosions, the heads of the four others blew open. Their souls had been wiped out, while the red light in their heads all gathered in Thysnich’s head.

The red light was the soul of someone.

“Octoterra Emperor. You’re the Octoterra Emperor. You’re actually not dead!” Thysnich cried out as he resisted the agonizing pain. He had already become completely pale, feeling his soul being devoured part by part by the more powerful soul.

“Octoterra Emperor, don’t you dare devour my soul!” A killing intent shone in Thysnich’s eyes. A terrifying energy rippled within

him, filling the entire hall with a devastating aura.

The hall began to tremble violently. In that moment, the entire hall seemed to be shaking gently. The tremendous power from Thysnich seemed to be able to destroy the entire place.

“God dammit. This is an emperor’s power. You actually have an emperor’s power in you,” the soul cried out in terror. He was once an emperor but he had now been reduced to a fragile soul after all. He could deal with Saint Rulers like Thysnich easily but he had no power to fight back against an emperor’s power. Even just a strand was enough to wipe out his soul.

Immediately, the Octoterra Emperor refused to stay in Thysnich’s body for even a moment longer. The soul immediately flew out, shooting toward Jian Chen and Nubis.

The soul was extremely fast, arriving before Jian Chen in the blink of an eye. Before Jian Chen could even react, it had disappeared into his head.

Jian Chen’s expression changed and he instantly paled. His muscles constantly jerked, clearly in great pain.

However, Jian Chen’s soul was much more powerful than Thysnich’s and other people at the same level. Although the Octoterra Emperor’s entry into his head brought on agonizing pain, it was within the range he could endure.

“Jian Chen, Jian Chen, are you alright?” Nubis cried out from beside him. However, Jian Chen could not hear him at all. His consciousness was now within his sea of consciousness with the soul of the Octoterra Emperor.

Jian Chen currently floated mid-air in his sea of consciousness, while a young man who seemed to be in his twenties stood opposite of him. The young man wore blood-red robes while his face was filled with malevolence. Even his pupils and hair were red as if he was dyed in blood.

“You’re not the Octoterra Emperor.” Jian Chen stared intently at the young man. He was extremely stern.

Chapter 933: A Battle of Souls

The red-robed young man who stood before Jian Chen in his sea of consciousness could not help but laugh wildly when he heard Jian Chen's words. His blood-red pupils were cold, filled with viciousness and bloodlust.

"I'm not that weak little Octoterra. Octoterra's soul has been devoured by me long ago. Other than him, I've devoured the soul of that Psalmic as well. Today, you will be the third person I devour and I'll be taking your body afterward. Do you know how great of an honor this will be to you? Brat, don't resist. Any resistance before me is useless. Just put your mind at ease and become one with me," sneered the young man.

"Never would I have thought that the Blood Demon Emperor who fell tens of thousands of years would still be alive. Moreover, he's even devoured the souls of two other emperors." Jian Chen's complexion was dark. He had completely grasped the young man's identity now.

He was the Blood Demon Emperor, the Saint Emperor that had heavily injured the hall masters of the Sea Goddess Hall and the Serpent God Hall. In that exchange, he had taken the life of the Heaven's Spirit Hall's hall master several tens of thousands of years ago.

"Blood Demon Emperor, you were indeed very strong but now you're just a soul. You probably can't even handle 16th Star experts in your current form, so all you can do is attempt to take the bodies of people like me. But do you really think you will succeed?" Jian

Chen replied coldly. At the same time, his sea of consciousness began to churn. A soul far greater than a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler appeared. This was Jian Chen's soul.

“Your soul is indeed very strong but it cannot pose a threat to me. Come, don't resist. Fuse with me, the great Blood Demon Emperor. You will become me after its done. Soon, your name will rock through the entire sea realm. You will become the strongest among the Sea race and you will be the recipient of the respect and dread of countless people. Think about just how glorious that is. As long as you fuse with me, you will be able to enjoy this supreme glory.”

A thin layer of Baleful Yin Force filled the entire sea of consciousness as he spoke in an attempt to affect Jian Chen's mind and thoughts in order to reach his objective.

The Blood Demon Emperor had realized Jian Chen's extraordinary areas long ago. Not only was his soul much greater than Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers, the emperor could feel two extremely powerful energies in the sea of consciousness. He felt threatened by them, which was why he said so much to Jian Chen.

Jian Chen's sea of consciousness began to tremble gently. Jian Chen was unable to defend against the Baleful Yin Force; all he could do was resist it. The Baleful Yin Force had already begun to affect his soul.

“Do you really think I'm easy to trick like a kid? You're dreaming if you want to devour my soul and take my body. I definitely will not let you do as you wish,” Jian Chen rebuked mercilessly.

The Blood Demon Emperor became furious as killing intent filled his eyes. He no longer had the patience to try and persuade Jian Chen. “I’ll give you one more chance. Are you going to let me devour your soul or do you want to fuse with me?”

“What’s the difference? It’ll all end in my death. But do you really think you have the power to devour my soul?” A scornful sneer formed on Jian Chen’s lips. He had fused with the sword spirits long ago. This meant that if the Blood Demon Emperor wanted to devour his soul, it was equivalent to devouring the sword spirits. The Azulet sword spirits were still weak but they were still the sword spirits of divine swords in the past. Even when the Azulet swords broke, they did not die, so how could they be devoured by a mere Blood Demon Emperor?

Jian Chen had also realized that the Blood Demon Emperor’s soul was still very weak, it was not as strong as he had imagined. The only people it could probably deal with easily was other Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers like Thysnich.

“Even if I have to suffer the outcome of greatly damaging my soul, I’ll take your body since you’re not cooperating. I’d like to see how you defend against by Qi of slaughter.” He suddenly disappeared completely, turning into a bloody mist as he constantly expanded in Jian Chen’s sea of consciousness.

Jian Chen immediately revealed an expression of agony. His sea of consciousness began to shake violently as if there was a great earthquake.

The Blood Demon Emperor's Qi of slaughter was an evolution of the Baleful Yin Force. Not only did it possess the same abilities, it was much more powerful. His Qi of slaughter was devouring Jian Chen's soul bit by bit.

A golden light suddenly appeared at that moment and filled Jian Chen's sea of consciousness. A completely-golden tower was currently enlarging in the depths of his sea of consciousness, reaching several thousand meters tall in the blink of an eye.

The tower was like an anchor, immediately stabilizing Jian Chen's sea of conscious with its appearance. The Blood Demon Emperor's Qi of slaughter was no longer able to harm Jian Chen.

"What is this thing? It can block my Qi of slaughter." The Blood Demon Emperor's surprised voice rang out in Jian Chen's sea of consciousness. It was filled with disbelief.

The golden light enveloped the entire place, resisting the damage of the Qi of slaughter for Jian Chen. It then began to gather rapidly, actually forcing the Qi of slaughter into one region of the sea of consciousness, before it was forced into the form of a young man again.

This was Jian Chen's sea of consciousness. As the saint artifact had taken Jian Chen as its master, it was able to function with much more power here than outside. The Blood Demon Emperor could do nothing against the saint artifact's powers.

"What is this thing? It can block my Qi of slaughter. And how has

it appeared in your sea of consciousness!?” The Blood Demon Emperor cried out. Even though he was once an experienced and knowledgeable Saint Emperor, he had never even heard of a weird matter like the event unfolding before his eyes.

Using his thoughts, a sword immediately materialized before Jian Chen. It shot toward the Blood Demon Emperor’s soul with lightning speed.

The sword was condensed from Jian Chen’s soul. In his sea of consciousness, he was unable to use Chaotic Force. As a consequence, any advantages of the Chaotic Body was nullified as well. All he could do was battle the Blood Demon Emperor with his soul.

“Your soul is not weak but it can’t harm me,” sneered the Blood Demon Emperor. In that moment, he had finally realized that the saint artifact could only protect Jian Chen and did not possess any combat abilities. This allowed him to relax quite a lot.

The sword passed through the Blood Demon Emperor’s body, unable to cause any harm at all.

“Haha, I already said you can’t harm me. My soul may not be at its peak but it’s not something a mere 14th Star Seasoul Warrior like you can injure,” sneered the Blood Demon Emperor.

“I beg to differ,” said Jian Chen. His figure quickly faded away, disappearing into the sea of consciousness.

“Blood Demon Emperor, I wonder if I can harm you if I use my full strength.” Jian Chen’s voice rang out from everywhere. The entire region soon began to churn violently, while an even more terrifying soul formed a sword, quickly shooting toward the Blood Demon Emperor.

The Blood Demon Emperor bellowed and a strand of Qi of slaughter immediately detached itself from him to receive Jian Chen’s sword.

However, before it could leave him, it was forced back by the saint artifact. Right now, he was ensnared by the artifact, losing virtually all power to retaliate. All he could do was watch helplessly as Jian Chen’s sword approached him.

The sword directly passed through the Blood Demon Emperor but it was not like before. He was no longer able to remain unscathed, immediately dulling slightly in color.

“You can’t kill me!” The Blood Demon Emperor howled upward. His body constantly shrunk, turning into an eight-centimeter-tall dwarf. It allowed his soul be concentrated, he then rammed wildly against the saint artifact’s power in an attempt to break free.

He knew that he would not be able to cause Jian Chen any harm, let alone devour his soul. If he did not break free, he would not be able to expand his soul, let alone devour Jian Chen.

But no matter how hard he tried, he failed. He could not even make the golden light tremble.

Another sword quickly condensed in this moment, shooting toward the shrunken soul of the Blood Demon Emperor in a flash.

However, the attack failed to harm him now that his soul was extremely concentrated.

“Unless you’re a 15th Star expert, you won’t be able to harm me. Brat, I’ve changed my mind. I’m not going to devour you anymore, so why don’t you let me out? Neither of us can defeat the other, even if we continue like this,” the Blood Demon Emperor finally gave in. His did indeed possess the strength that allowed him to behave arrogantly in the past but he was no longer as great as before. Any 15th Star expert would be enough to wipe him out in his current state.

“Blood Demon Emperor, if I’ve guessed correctly, your soul has only become so powerful after absorbing the vital essence in the blood from those people. If you didn’t have their blood, you should still be sleeping and would dissipate without much more time. I’d like to see just how long you can last with the power you’ve recovered from the vital essence right now.” Jian Chen’s voice was extremely cold as he constantly pummeled the Blood Demon Emperor with attacks.

The Blood Demon Emperor’s face immediately sank as if Jian Chen was spot on.

“So that’s the case. Blood Demon Emperor, I definitely won’t be letting you off since you had ill intentions toward me. I’ll waste

your power right now and make you dissipate completely,” said Jian Chen.

A sliver of determination appeared in the Blood Demon Emperor’s eyes. “Hmph, who do you think I am? I’ll make you pay a price as well for wanting to wipe me out.”

Chapter 934: Founder of the Bloodsword Sect

A sliver of determination appeared in the Blood Demon Emperor's eyes. "Hmph, who do you think I am? I'll make you pay a price as well for wanting to wipe me out."

"Why don't you break free first if you want me to pay a price as well? Because right now, you can't harm me at all," Jian Chen's cold voice rang out. His soul was currently protected by the saint artifact and this protection could not be destroyed by anything below Saint Emperor. He did not believe the Blood Demon Emperor in his current state had that power.

"Hmph, I'll break through your defense right now." The Blood Demon Emperor's soul began to condense rapidly again, turning into a thumb-sized orb from his dwarf form. The orb was completely blood-red and radiated with a demonic crimson light. It showed vague signs of suppressing the golden light from the saint artifact.

"With half my soul as tribute, I condense the Empyrean Demon Orb and request the Empyrean Demon Orb to break through this tower," the Blood Demon Emperor's voice resounded from the orb. Abruptly, his soul weakened at a rapid rate while the orb's light increased. It actually broke free from the golden light's binding and enveloped Jian Chen's sea of consciousness.

"Empyrean Demon Orb, it's actually the Empyrean Demon Orb. Why would the Empyrean Demon Monarch's Empyrean Demon Orb be here?" Suddenly, the sword spirits' voices rang out in the

sea of consciousness. They were filled with surprise. Soon after, two dazzling lights, one azure and one purple, rose from the depths of the sea of consciousness and quickly expanded completely.

The expansion of the blood-red light from the Empyrean Demon Orb came to a halt with the appearance of the two different-colored light.

The lights from the sword spirits quickly filled up Jian Chen's entire sea of consciousness, even surrounding the blood-red light from the Empyrean Demon Orb. Afterward, it quickly faded, causing Jian Chen's sea of consciousness to become blurry. It turned into a chaotic mess with nothing to be seen. The only thing visible was a hazy gray.

"Empyrean Demon Orb, you're trying to harm our master. Even the Empyrean Demon Monarch didn't have that courage, let alone you. If you're smart, you better piss off quickly. Don't make us attack you." Zi Ying's voice resounded from everywhere. An image of the stars suddenly appeared in the chaotic space. Within this image, countless people battled fiercely in outer space. It was so intense that worlds fell and the void shattered with countless planets destroyed to their battle. Corpses that radiated with powerful auras floated in outer space, while golden blood filled the entire area. Every single drop contained an unimaginably powerful energy, able to kill off Saint Emperors without any difficulties at all.

Two giant swords stood among the crowded battleground. They were both thousands of meter long and shone with purple and azure lights. Wherever they passed by, the surroundings would

become littered with body pieces. Countless people had died to the two swords.

The power of the swords was enough to shake the heavens and devastate whole worlds.

Everything presented in the image was real. It was a battle the sword spirits had experienced in the past, which had been projected through their abilities.

The Empyrean Demon Orb began to shake violently, as if it was quaking in fear. Its red light was quickly retracted, completely hidden within it in the blink of an eye. It could not help but descend slightly in the air as if it was submitting itself. It did not dare to challenge the sword spirits at all.

“No... no... no... This can’t be real. This can’t be real, it’s fake, it’s fake. This is all fake!” the Blood Demon Emperor shrieked in fright from within the Empyrean Demon Orb. His voice was filled with terror. The sword spirits had just projected matters that had happened in their past, involuntarily sucking the Blood Demon Emperor into it. Everything seemed to have unfolded right before him. Not only could he feel just how terrifying these people were, he could sense just how horrifyingly powerful each casual strike was.

Every single person in the image had reached far beyond the realms of Saint Emperor. Even when he was at his peak, he would not have been able to block even a casual attack from anyone. Just a droplet of their blood would be enough to wipe out his soul.

The strength of these people had completely exceeded the Blood Demon Emperor's understandings and reckoning. Terror immediately began to overwhelm his mind.

"I don't believe it. I refuse to believe that it's real. It's all fake!" Shrieks from the Blood Demon Emperor constantly rang out from the Empyrean Demon Orb.

He had expended thousands of years, cultivating painstakingly to reach Saint Emperor. He was one of the few great experts in the sea realm and even the three halls feared him. He was glorious.

Yet right now, he had discovered just how puny all the power he had obtained in those thousands of years was. It overwhelmed him greatly when he found out just how insignificant it was. He refused to accept it.

"Half his soul is already consumed. Master, why don't you quickly wipe it out?" Zi Ying's voice rang out.

Jian Chen immediately condensed a sword without any hesitation and shot it mercilessly toward the Empyrean Demon Orb.

Jian Chen's sword struck the Empyrean Demon Orb accurately, causing to the tremble gently. Immediately, a chilling shriek rang out. It was from the Blood Demon Emperor.

The Blood Demon Emperor's soul was now only half as powerful as it was before, so it was unable to resist Jian Chen's attack at all.

“Empyrean Demon Orb, take me out of here quickly!” The Blood Demon Emperor's voice was filled with panic. He could feel that he was rapidly approaching death.

However, the Empyrean Demon Orb remained in the air, completely ignoring his orders.

Jian Chen condensed a second sword, striking the Empyrean Demon Orb viciously.

The Blood Demon Emperor howled out once again. The Empyrean Demon Orb was not protecting him at all, so his soul had become extremely weak.

“Blood Demon Emperor, I'll send you on your way now. Let me experience the feeling of killing a Saint Emperor.” Jian Chen's voice was icy and remorseless. The third sword condensed quickly, before striking the Empyrean Demon Orb as it whistled through the air.

Bang!

The Blood Demon Emperor's soul completely collapsed with a soft sound, directly dissipating in Jian Chen's sea of consciousness. Fragments of his memories floated out, allowing Jian Chen to view parts of his past very clearly as it was in his sea of consciousness.

Once upon a time, the Blood Demon Emperor was a slightly-talented cultivator in the sea realm. Through his fortunes, he was chosen by the Empyrean Demon Orb, which fused with his soul and bestowed him with a cultivation method. From then onward, his life had experienced a drastic change.

The Blood Demon Emperor poured his efforts into the cultivation method, reaching Saint Ruler in less than three hundred years, Saint King in eight hundred, and Saint Emperor in two thousand three hundred. He became a legendary figure in the sea realm.

Jian Chen even learned from these memory fragments that the Blood Demon Emperor had once gone traveling after he had reached Saint Emperor, founding the Bloodsword sect on the Tian Yuan Continent and passing on a modified version of his cultivation method.

Afterward, he became the enemy of the three halls, battling with the three emperors of the halls in outer space before dying in the end. However, his soul managed to escape under the protection of the Empyrean Demon Orb, allowing him to nurse himself after hiding in the divine hall.

The Octoterra Divine Hall was created by a technique of the Blood Demon Emperor, it was originally named the Blood Demon Divine Hall. The Blood Demon Emperor had fallen into a slumber after he had fled due to his weakness. When he woke up, he discovered that his soul was no longer able to leave the divine hall. All he could do was wait inside for the end of his life, for his soul is dissipate naturally.

He slept for ten thousand years, surviving thanks to the protection of the Empyrean Demon Orb. His divine hall was then discovered by a 16th Star expert ten thousand years ago and the expert took it for himself. To prevent discovery, the Blood Demon Emperor hid his soul in the depths of the divine hall.

Many years later, the 16th Star expert who had discovered the Blood Demon Divine Hall successfully became an emperor. He renamed the divine hall as the Psalmic Divine Hall, becoming the famed Psamlic Emperor.

Ten thousand years later, the Psalmic Emperor faced the end of his life. As he meditated while he neared his death, the Blood Demon Emperor that had hidden in the Empyrean Demon Orb suddenly emerged in a crucial moment, catching him off guard and devouring his soul when he was weak. This extended the Blood Demon Emperor's time.

Another ten thousand years passed and the Octoterra Emperor discovered the Psalmic Divine Hall. He too took it for himself, renaming it as the Octoterra Divine Hall.

In the thousands of years he remained in possession of the hall, the Octoterra Emperor never discovered the Blood Demon Emperor. As he too faced the end of his life, he was not willing to see his legacy just end there. As a result, he spent the last few years arranging and modifying the divine hall, wanting to leave behind his legacy.

The Octoterra Emperor meditated on the ninth floor of the hall as he faced the end of his life. His life was severed and his soul rapidly dissipated, growing extremely weak. However, he never thought he would be faced with the sudden attack of the Blood Demon Emperor's soul in the final moments. The Blood Demon Emperor wanted to devour his soul.

He was much stronger than the Psalmic Emperor, so he used everything he had to fight the Blood Demon Emperor in a battle of souls in the end. They turned the ninth floor into a mess but his soul was still devoured in the end.

The Blood Demon Emperor's soul was injured in the battle but he managed to recover by devouring the Octoterra Emperor's soul. He then used the Octoterra Emperor's handiwork, modifying his set-up of the divine hall.

As a result, the Octoterra Divine Hall that was originally for choosing the Octoterra Emperor's successor was turned into the Blood Demon Emperor's scheme for revival in the end.

“So that's what happened. I never thought there would be so much history to the Octoterra Divine Hall. This divine hall was originally created by the Blood Demon Emperor but it changed hands twice afterward, which was why its name changed. The souls of the Psalmic and Octoterra Emperor had all been devoured by the Blood Demon Emperor.”

“I never thought that the Bloodsword sect of the Tian Yuan Continent was founded by the Blood Demon Emperor several tens of thousands of years ago.”

Jian Chen was unable to remain composed after he learned all this. His heart churned wildly.

In particular, the matters regarding the Bloodsword sect overwhelmed him with disbelief. The Blood Demon Emperor was actually the founder of the Bloodsword sect.

Chapter 935: The Empyrean Demon Monarch

“The Blood Demon Emperor’s soul sure is powerful. His soul’s dissipated in my sea of consciousness, so I should be able to absorb it and strength my own soul,” thought Jian Chen. Without any hesitation, he collected his thoughts and began absorbing the soul.

On the ninth floor of the hall, Jian Chen currently sat on the ground with his legs crossed. His eyes were closed; no one knew exactly what had happened.

Nubis paced about worriedly beside him. He knew that the Blood Demon Emperor’s soul had entered Jian Chen’s sea of consciousness, but he could do nothing about the current situation. All he could do was wait on one side.

“Jian Chen, I really can’t help you this time. You have to survive. Nothing must happen to you,” Nubis prayed inside. Although he had only agreed to follow Jian Chen for ten years after being lured out of the Cross Mountains by a corpse of a clansmen, the relationship between the two of them had unknowingly undergone great changes after so many years. They were no longer bound by profit and had become close friends.

As a result, Nubis felt extremely worried when Jian Chen faced up against such dangers.

Thysnich slowly stood up from the ground at this moment. When the Blood Demon Emperor had entered his mind earlier, he

had devoured a small portion of his soul, causing great injury to Thysnich. He had only recovered just now.

Thysnich stared coldly at Jian Chen as killing intent poured from his eyes without restraint. He said coldly, “Octoterra Emperor, I never thought that you’d still be alive, much less think that this entire divine hall was just a scheme of yours. You wanted to draw us in from the outside so you could choose a talented body to possess.” Thysnich had no idea that it was the Blood Demon Emperor. Even now, he still believed that person who tried to devour his soul was the Octoterra Emperor.

“Octoterra Emperor, the ruler of the Turtle clan’s soul must have been devoured by you already. It’ll still take you some time for you gain full control over the body, so that’ll be the perfect time to kill you.” Thysnich’s face was sunken and his two blades were already in hand.

Nubis immediately blocked him as soon as he saw that Thysnich wanted to attack Jian Chen. He said coldly, “Don’t you dare harm Jian Chen when the great Nubis is here.”

“Piss off, you’re not my opponent. If I wanted to kill you, it would be as simple as squashing an ant.” Thysnich’s eyes were filled with disdain. He did not view Nubis as someone worthy.

How could the prideful Nubis endure such provocation from Thysnich? A tremendous presence immediately began to radiate from him and his gaze turned into a glare at that very moment. Killing intent began to surge without the slightest intention of restraint.

“Thysnich, there has never been a good outcome for those who dare to speak to the great Nubis like that. To me, killing you is a piece of cake. If it weren’t for the fact that someone had deposited that power in you, I really would be looking down on you,” Nubis growled.

“If it were some other time in some other place, I would definitely have a real battle with you and see just what you can do. Too bad it’s not right now. I need to eliminate the ruler of the Turtle clan or I probably won’t be able to leave this place after the Octoterra Emperor achieves full control. Nubis, I originally saved the emperor’s power for fighting over the legacy’s inheritance but now, I have to use it. I’ll completely end the lives of you two with a strand now.” A terrifying and pure power radiated from Thysnich; it floated out slowly, before gathering at his fingertip.

This was an emperor’s power, the power a Saint Emperor deposited within him. At the same time, it was his greatest trump card.

Just a strand of it was enough to heavily wound Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings.

Nubis’ complexion became extremely ugly. He could feel its power; it was certain death if he faced up against it.

Thysnich stared at the power at his fingertip and said, “It should be some type of great honor for you to die from a strand of emperor’s power. Nubis, Octoterra Emperor, I’ll end your lives

completely right now.” Killing intent flickered wildly in Thysnich’s eyes and he was about to shoot the power at them.

However, a huge stone slab fell from the ceiling at this very moment, creating a boom as it struck the ground.

Thysnich could not help but slow down due to the sudden occurrence. He looked up subconsciously.

A huge hole was revealed in the ceiling of the hall that had been covered up by the stone. A gentle azure light glowed from within but nothing inside could be seen clearly.

“T-this is the center of the Octoterra Divine Hall. It’s where the control center is!” Thysnich could not help but call out. His face was filled with joy; without any hesitation, he dispersed the power at his fingertip and shot into the hole.

The azure light quickly disappeared after Thysnich had entered, and in a moment it had completely vanished with the hole disappearing as well. The ceiling also perfectly returned to how it was before. All that was left was a large stone slab lying on the ground now.

“I never thought that was actually the center of the divine hall.” Nubis stared at the ceiling in dejection, while envy burned and flickered in his eyes. Unfortunately, Thysnich had the emperor’s power, which was strong enough to even destroy the divine hall. He did not dare to fight over it with him at all.

The ninth floor of the hall became peaceful once again with Thysnich's disappearance. Only Jian Chen and Nubis were still there.

Currently, Jian Chen devoted all his efforts into absorbing the Blood Demon Emperor's remaining soul fragments. He placed all his attention on his sea of consciousness, completely unaware of the outside world. He was also unaware of the fact that Thysnich had entered the center of the divine hall. He would gain control over the hall without much time, allowing him to use the power of the divine hall as he wished.

Jian Chen had no impression of time inside his sea of consciousness. All he could feel was that his soul was rapidly becoming stronger, while the residual soul fragments were rapidly growing weaker.

Devouring one's soul was virtually unheard of. It unheard of on the Tian Yuan Continent, as it basically would not happen in this world. The reason why the Blood Demon Emperor could devour both the Psalmic Emperor and the Octoterra Emperor's souls was because he had the Empyrean Demon Orb.

Right now, the reason why Jian Chen could devour the Blood Demon Emperor's soul was because he had entered Jian Chen's sea of consciousness by himself. The collapsed soul would disperse into the surroundings with the death of its owner, but as it was in a different environment—Jian Chen's sea of consciousness, it was able to survive and linger. This was the reason why Jian Chen could absorb the soul.

Jian Chen would not have been able to do this if it had occurred outside.

The soul contained fragments of memories and some comprehensions of the mysteries of the world, so when Jian Chen absorbed the soul, he took these for himself. This allowed his comprehension of the laws of the world to skyrocket.

Even though they were only incomplete fragments, they still came from the Blood Demon Emperor. Jian Chen benefited greatly from this, allowing his comprehension to shoot up to the level of a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler's from the First Heavenly Layer where he had stagnated. He caught up with the second layer of the Chaotic Body.

Time passed silently. Jian Chen finally absorbed all of the Blood Demon Emperor's soul after some time, allowing his own soul to strengthen quickly.

The only pity he felt was that he did not see any memories from the Psalmic Emperor or the Octoterra Emperor from the fragments of souls. It was as if the Blood Demon Emperor did not learn anything about their memories at all when he had devoured them in the first place.

Jian Chen's sea of consciousness had stopped churning long ago. Only the Empyrean Demon Orb floated in there as it shone with a demonic red light.

Jian Chen gathered his attention on the orb. The Empyrean

Demon Orb clearly originated from the same era as the Azulet sword spirits. Jian Chen was extremely curious about its exact details.

“Zi Ying, Qing Suo, so what is this Empyrean Demon Orb?” Jian Chen asked the sword spirits. Right now, only the sword spirits could provide him with information regarding it, as even the Blood Emperor Demon had no idea about its true origins. All he knew was its name, and the fact that it was a special, wondrous item.

The sword spirits seemed to hesitate slightly before replying to Jian Chen’s question. “Master, the Empyrean Demon Orb was a famed treasure of the Empyrean Demon Monarch in the past. It was forged from her essence blood, and it’s quite a powerful demon artifact.”

“So who’s this Empyrean Demon Monarch? Is she powerful? Why did her treasure end up here?” Jian Chen asked.

“The Empyrean Demon Monarch was a Demon Monarch of the Demon realm. Not only was she the greatest demoness, she was extremely powerful and stood at the peak of Demon Monarch, only an inch away from Demon Emperor. The Empyrean Demon Arts she created was extraordinary in power as well and was considered one of the high-level cultivation methods in the Demon realm at that time. The Soul Devouring Force cultivation method was infamous, able to kill on contact. It was extremely terrifying.

“This Soul Devouring Force is similar to the Qi of slaughter and the Baleful Yin Force master knows. These two powers are all derived from the Soul Devouring Force, and are much, much

weaker when compared to it.”

“Just that afterward, a great battle occurred where we were. It was extremely intense, leading to the deaths of countless experts in the void. The Empyrean Demon Monarch also perished in that battle. We too find it extremely odd that her Empyrean Demon Orb would appear here.”

Chapter 936: Trapped in the Divine Hall

“The Empyrean Demon Orb may be quite a powerful demon artifact but it’s extremely special, completely different from other artifacts. Once it takes a master, it will fuse with their soul, just like with the Blood Demon Emperor.”

“But he was only able to obtain the cultivation method of the Empyrean Demon Monarch after fusing with the orb and was unable to use it. Otherwise, he definitely would not have ended up like that,” Zi Ying explained to Jian Chen.

“Looks like the Empyrean Demon Orb is much more powerful than the saint artifact,” murmured Jian Chen. Right now, his greatest artifact was the saint artifact, so he could not help but compare it to that.

“Master, the true power of the Empyrean Demon Orb is unimaginable. You can’t compare it to the saint artifact. In the past, just a single strand of Soul Devouring Force from the orb would be enough to turn the saint artifact into nothingness.” Qing Suo’s voice rang out.

Jian Chen’s heart shivered when he heard that, shocked by the power of the orb. The saint artifact was so powerful that even Saint Emperors struggled to break it yet just a single strand of Soul Devouring Force from the Empyrean Demon Orb would be enough to reduce the saint artifact to nothing. Didn’t that mean a single strand was enough to easily kill off a Saint Emperor?

“But unfortunately, the Empyrean Demon Orb is extremely weak right now. It must have been greatly damaged from the battle last time.” Zi Ying’s voice rang out again, this time filled with pity.

At this moment, the Empyrean Demon Orb began to glow slightly and Jian Chen’s sea of consciousness tremored slightly as well. At the same time, Jian Chen seemed to feel a connection between his spirit and the Empyrean Demon Orb.

“This Empyrean Demon Orb wants to take you as its master. Hmph, you overestimate yourself.” Zi Ying’s voice was filled with anger and deep disdain that he struggled to conceal. With a flash of purple light, he immediately disrupted the process of Jian Chen becoming the orb’s master.

The red light on the Empyrean Demon Orb flickered frantically. It seemed to feel wronged, as if it was a bullied little girl. It was currently crying by itself.

“The Empyrean Demon Orb wants to take me as its master? Doesn’t that mean that I can obtain the Empyrean Demon Arts once cultivated by the Empyrean Demon Monarch?” Jian Chen asked out of curiosity.

“Master, the Empyrean Demon Monarch’s Empyrean Demon Arts is indeed a great cultivation method but it can’t compare to Chaotic Force. This is because the Chaotic Body is a supreme cultivation method that has completely surpassed it. Master has no need to tamper with it, as it will only affect your future accomplishments,” explained Zi Ying. However, he did keep one fact from Jian Chen; no one had ever been able to reach the utmost

peak of the Chaotic Body in all of time.

“Master, Zi Ying is right. Even if you cultivate the Empyrean Demon Arts to its highest level, you’ll only be able to reach the Empyrean Demon Monarch’s former level of cultivation, who had even struggled to break through to Demon Emperor. If master cultivates the Chaotic Body to the utmost extreme, master will probably reach the levels of Grand Exalt. You’ll be able to crush experts like the Empyrean Demon Monarch with your fingers.” Qing Suo’s pleasant voice rang out. It was like music played by an immortal.

Jian Chen understood now. The Empyrean Demon Arts created by the Empyrean Demon Monarch was a high-level cultivation method, but it was nowhere near the Chaotic Body in terms of quality. It could not be compared to the Chaotic Body. If he used this method of cultivation, it was extremely likely that his future accomplishments would end up being limited instead, preventing him from standing at the very apex in the end.

“Then I won’t cultivate the Empyrean Demon Arts if that’s the case and focus on the Chaotic Body.” Jian Chen immediately gave up on the idea of cultivating the Empyrean Demon Arts.

“Empyrean Demon Orb, this is not a place where you can stay. You should leave.” Afterward, Zi Ying invited the Empyrean Demon Orb to leave, before chasing it out of Jian Chen’s sea of consciousness.

The Empyrean Demon Orb seemed to suffer greatly, constantly flickering with red light as it made its way out. It seemed to be

crying silently as it was forced out of Jian Chen's sea of consciousness.

Although the Empyrean Demon Orb was quite a powerful artifact, it was extremely weak just like the sword spirits. Only those who cultivated the Empyrean Demon Arts could use it, so it was of no use to Jian Chen who did not plan to cultivate the arts.

Jian Chen's consciousness returned to his body. When he slowly opened his eyes, he immediately noticed the orb that shone with a demonic light as it floated before him.

"Are you Jian Chen or the Octoterra Emperor?" A voice sounded from nearby. Nubis stood twenty meters away cautiously, staring at Jian Chen with a glare. His face was filled with anxiety and worry.

Right now, Nubis was unable to tell whether Jian Chen had been possessed by the Octoterra Emperor or not.

Jian Chen could not help but smile when he saw how Nubis acted. He said, "Nubis, I'm still me. Not only did the Blood Demon Emperor fail to take my body, I even ended him."

"Jian Chen, is it really you?" Nubis immediately became excited. He had already known Jian Chen for quite some time, so he was extremely familiar with him. He was able to confirm that he had not been possessed just from the way that Jian Chen spoke and behaved.

But soon afterward, Nubis became stunned, “What did you say? That soul that wanted to possess you was the Blood Demon Emperor? Not the Octoterra Emperor?”

Jian Chen shook his head gently and narrated everything that had happened between him and the Blood Demon Emperor to Nubis. Nubis could not help but gulp and sigh in disbelief when he heard that the Psalmic Emperor and the Octoterra Emperor had both been devoured by the Blood Demon Emperor.

Suddenly, Jian Chen seemed to think of something. He looked around and said, “Where’s Thysnich? Where’d he go?”

Nubis immediately became stern. “Jian Chen, Thysnich has already entered the control center of the hall. He’s currently taking control, so I believe he’ll become the owner of the hall without much longer. We need to stop him.”

Jian Chen’s expression changed when he heard that, before suddenly looking at the ceiling. His face immediately sunk.

He had learned a little about the divine hall from the memory fragments of the Blood Demon Emperor as well. The most important piece of information was where the control center was located and it just happened to be in the ceiling.

“The control center is sealed up,” Jian Chen said with a deep voice.

“Jian Chen, did you learn how to open the control center from the memories of the Blood Demon Emperor?” Nubis asked hopefully. He had already learned from Jian Chen that there was no path out of the Octoterra Divine Hall. The only way out would be taking control of the divine hall and sending people out using its power.

Jian Chen shook his head. All he knew was where the control center was located. He had no idea how to open it.

“Then we can only break through this entrance.” Battle intent surged in Nubis’ eyes and a terrifying aura began to radiate from him. He had completely unleashed his might as a magical beast that was only an inch from Class 8.

“Let’s try it.” A sliver of determination appeared in Jian Chen’s eyes. He had no other choice now that the situation was like this. Although he had devoured a part of the Blood Demon Emperor’s soul, that did not give him control over the divine hall. He needed to control the center of the hall to control of the divine hall. There was no other way than that.

The center was crucial for the control over the divine hall.

With his King Armament in hand, Jian Chen poured Chaotic Force into it, causing it to shine with a dark light. Its devastating aura was terrifying.

Although the current Chaotic Force was not the true Chaotic Force, it was no different in behavior.

A sharp howl rang out from Jian Chen's side. Nubis had already disappeared, now replaced by a snake that was thirty meters long. It was awe-inspiring, filled with nobility and pride.

Nubis had already turned back to his true form, currently charging up his most powerful secret technique. Blinding gold and silver lights shone from him and as he opened his mouth, a huge ball of liquid venom was immediately spat out, striking the ceiling of the hall with lightning speed.

The venom of the Silver Striped Gold Snake was supreme. It was the third greatest on the Tian Yuan Continent, while the venom he had just spat out was from one of his secret techniques. Its potency had reached a shocking level.

Nubis' venom seemed to be able to eat through everything. As soon as it came into contact with the ceiling, signs of corrosion immediately began to appear on the ceiling which even Saint Kings struggled to break, it was eaten away at a visible rate. However, all it managed to do was corrode away the outermost layer, before being stopped by the structure that was filled with the divine hall's power. It stopped there.

Two arm-thick streams of lights, one silver and one golden, shot out from his mouth and struck the ceiling heavily. It produced a great boom.

This attack was in no way weaker than the full-powered strike of a Third Heavenly Layer Saint King.

At the same time, Jian Chen struck out with all his might. He rose up and his King Armament viciously stabbed at the same area targeted by Nubis.

Boom!

Wild ripples of energy knocked Jian Chen back and forced him back to the ground. However, the entrance to the hall's center remained fine; other than the outer layer eaten away by Nubis' poison, there was not even a mark.

"The entrance is as tough as the divine hall. We can't break through it with our current strength," Jian Chen said with a sunken face. His complexion was extremely ugly. Once Thysnich gained control over the divine hall, they would no longer have any ability to fight him. All they could do then was hide in the saint artifact.

Jian Chen had learned from the Blood Demon Emperor's memories that control over the hall meant control over its power. The hall's power could not be used to injure people outside, but it could be used however the person in control wished inside.

Thysnich completely had the power to use it against them.

The hall's supreme power was equivalent to the emperor's power in Thysnich.

“Only Saint Emperors can break through this divine hall. Does that mean that only a Saint Emperor’s power can break through this entrance as well? If that’s the case, all we can do is watch helplessly as Thysnich gains control.” Nubis’ face was filled with regret.

Chapter 937: Battle of Flame City (One)

“Maybe there is one way we can break through this entrance,” Jian Chen said with a dark face.

Nubis’ face lit up when he heard that. He looked at Jian Chen in interest and asked, “Jian Chen, what other idea do you have?”

“Find the Emperor Armament, and then use its power to break through,” said Jian Chen.

Nubis’ positivity drained very quickly. He looked at Jian Chen with a troubled expression. “It’s not like you don’t know about the Emperor Armament’s power. We can’t control it right now with our current strength. Even if we do have it under control, can it really break through the entrance? You have to remember that even the Emperor Armament is currently stuck in the hall and unable to break out.”

“That doesn’t matter. We need to try it, because there are no better ideas. All we can do now is hope that the entrance to the center of the hall isn’t too tough.”

“However, we need to make breakthroughs before we go find the Emperor Armament. When my Chaotic Body reaches the third layer, the Emperor Armament shouldn’t be able to injure me anymore. I can control it easily by then,” Jian Chen murmured.

“Alright. I’ve reached the peak of Class 7 ages ago. If it weren’t for the restrictions to enter the divine hall, I would’ve broken

through long ago. We might be able to get through that entrance once we break through and use the Emperor Armament,” said Nubis.

Afterward, Jian Chen and Nubis immediately entered the saint artifact. They wanted to reach Saint King in a single stroke.

The saint artifact was extremely tough. By hiding in it, Thysnich would struggle to break through it temporarily, even if he controlled the divine hall and used it to attack the artifact. As a result, the saint artifact had now become Jian Chen and Nubis' only line of defense.

Jian Chen sat in the center of an extremely peaceful hall in the saint artifact. Mountainous piles of high class monster cores and grand quality crystal coins were stacked around him, with fist-sized divine quality crystals sandwiched in between.

These were the items Jian Chen needed to rely on the most to break through. They could provide Jian Chen with tremendous quantities of energy. As long as he had enough time, he could break through successfully.

“The first layer of the Chaotic Body gave me the strength of a Third Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler, while the second layer elevated my power to the Seventh Heavenly Layer. With a Ruler Armament, I could display the strength of the Ninth Heavenly Layer, and the Third Heavenly Layer of Saint King when coupled with a King Armament instead. I should be able to skip through the Eighth and Ninth Heavenly Layers and directly arrive at Saint King with the third layer of the Chaotic Body. I just wonder how

strong I'll become when I use the King Armament," Jian Chen thought. He was filled with anticipation.

"And there's also the Emperor Armament. It's already terrifying enough when no one's in control. I wonder how strong I'll become if I use it after I break through. Will I be strong enough to go toe to toe with hall elders?"

"The golden silkmail is still with a divine general of the Serpent God Hall. I might not know how to strengthen it, but it's a unique treasure that the world has given birth to. It's also related to a calamity. When I get strong enough, I have to personally pay a visit to the Serpent God Hall and get it back." Jian Chen felt rather urgent about it. He knew that it would not be far until that day would come. Once he broke through, he should possess enough power to fight the four divine generals if he used the Emperor Armament.

"Cultivating, cultivating, I need to quickly cultivate. I need to reach the third layer as soon as possible this time. Otherwise, let alone getting the golden silkmail back, I won't even be able to leave this divine hall alive." Jian Chen quickly dismissed his thoughts, devoting all his attention to concentration.

The sword spirit materialized above his head as they assisted him in the refinement of the monster cores, crystal coins, and crystals.

A faint smell of blood lingered from the mountainous piles of monster cores. He had taken them all from the bodies of the vicious beasts from the hall recently, so the energy in each monster core was extremely active. It made refinement even easier.

As time was tight, Jian Chen only used freshly-harvested monster cores, and not the ancient ones that had solidified from the saint artifact.

They were all high class monster cores, but quite a lot of their energy had leaked away and solidified. This was why it would take great effort and time to refine them. It was unsuitable for the current situation.

Nubis did not just sit around as Jian Chen refined the monster cores. He cultivated quietly in another peaceful hall, using a different method of cultivation to Jian Chen. He absorbed the hidden essence in the old snake from the Beast God Continent. The entire process was much easier compared to Jian Chen and it was faster as well.

The center of the divine hall was a very small room. It was empty and without any furniture. The only thing present was a shrunken divine hall that floated in the center one meter in the air.

The divine hall still possessed a tremendous aura, but it was extremely small. It was less than a meter in length and width. If someone familiar with the divine hall had discovered it, they would realize that it was the Octoterra Divine Hall but shrunken down by countless times.

Thysnich currently sat with his legs crossed before this tiny version of the hall. His energy flowed unceasingly into the hall.

“Octoterra Emperor, never did I think you’d still be alive, and that your legacy was all just a trick you set up. We’ve all been tricked by you. But so what? The power of an emperor is present in my body. Not to mention being just a soul, even if you possess the ruler of the Turtle clan successfully, you must be extremely weak. I’d like to see how you resist my attacks with the emperor’s power.”

“I might not be able to get a legacy, but my possession of the hall cannot be prevented by anyone. Once I control this place, there might not even be the need for me to waste my emperor’s power. Just the hall could be enough to completely kill you off.”

Thysnich’s eyes flickered with a sharp light. Although the Octoterra Emperor still being alive brought great shock to him, he felt no fear because he possessed ways to deal with the Octoterra Emperor.

“Octoterra Emperor, the time of your death will come in less than five years. It’s just a pity that the ruler of the Turtle clan will end up so miserably.”

In the blink of an eye, Jian Chen had already stayed in the divine hall for a year. Right now, the Flame Mercenaries had officially completed the construction of Flame City on the distant Tian Yuan Continent.

The city walls were jet-black. From afar, it seemed like a serpent dragon coiled up there. It possessed a tremendous aura and would unconsciously pressure the depths of people’s hearts. They felt like they were walking beside a vicious beast as they passed by the

walls.

The walls were a hundred meters tall and several dozen kilometers long. Many Magical crystal Canons were mounted on top, and many soldiers stood next to each one. They were all extremely cold and stern-looking.

Today was the third day the city had been completed as well as the liveliest day since construction had finished. This was because the vice city lord had invited various large clans and organizations within a radius of a hundred thousand kilometers to come and participate in the ribbon-cutting of the city.

This was an extremely special day to Flame City. Not only did the king of the Gesun Kingdom come after traveling a great distance, even the ancestor of the Changyang clan and uncle Chang came.

It could be said that Changyang Zu Yunkong's life had been saved by Jian Chen. If Jian Chen had not gone to the Fantasy Star Ocean for the Dragon's Saliva, he probably would have passed away on Three Saint Island, never to be able to return to the Tian Yuan Continent and reunite with his family.

As a result, Changyang Zu Yunkong cared for his talented grandson very much. The Flame Mercenaries were also founded by Jian Chen personally, so he naturally viewed the group with great importance.

Even Ming Dong, Dugu Feng, Tie Ta, Little Fatty, Wang Yifeng, and the others all came out of seclusion to participate in this

ribbon-cutting. As the core members of the Flame Mercenaries, how could they not appear on this important day where Flame City was formally established?

After so many years of seclusion, all of them had made great improvements in their strengths. They did not become Saint Rulers, but everyone besides Wang Yifeng had reached the level of Heaven Saint Master.

Within them, the one who progressed the fastest was not the talented Ming Dong or Little Fatty but the simple and honest Tie Ta. His speed could literally be described as divine, advancing at a startling rate. He had actually caught up and completely overtaken everyone else, reaching the peak of Heaven Saint Master. He was only an inch from Saint Ruler.

Tie Ta underwent great changes that were coupled with his terrifying cultivation speed. Before, he was burly and dark-skinned like burnt charcoal. But now, all the pigment in his skin was completely gone. It had instead been replaced by a golden color and could actually shine with a metallic glint when he stood beneath the sun.

Other than his skin tone, Tie Ta had become even larger and even burlier. He was now four meters tall. Coupled with his body frame, he seemed like a small mountain. Even under his honest appearance, a dignified aura could be found from time to time.

As Flame City was the first city ever to be constructed purely out of tungsten alloy, its renown had spread through the entire continent long ago. This was why the boisterous atmosphere had

completely exceeded people's imaginations.

Other than the people invited from the surrounding region, many representatives from large clans and organizations had traveled hundreds of thousand kilometers, or even millions of kilometers to participate in the ribbon-cutting ceremony. This included an Imperial Protector of the Qinhuang Kingdom with their third prince, Qin Ji, and Qin Xiao, with a great elder of the Tianqin clan. They had all hurried over, travel-worn and weary.

There were even some barely-known hermit clans and even ancient clans that had sent people to congratulate Flame City with gifts.

Even the grand elder of the Radiant Saint Union arrived personally under the accompaniment of three Saint Rulers to give the mercenaries good wishes.

This time, almost a third of the entire continent's organizations had gathered in this tiny piece of land that Flame City sat on. It was so busy and lively that it could be considered as unprecedented.

Chapter 938: Battle of Flame City (Two)

The vice city lord of Flame City currently led a group of Flame Mercenaries to personally welcome the guests that had come from everywhere.

The happiest and most excited person among all the guests would without a doubt be the King of Gesum Kingdom. He was filled with excitement that he struggled to suppress as he gazed at the mighty city walls and the various organizations that stood on the apex of the Tian Yuan Continent. He had never even heard about many of these organizations. The smile on his face never disappeared.

The source of his joy was the fact that the first vice city lord of the most valuable city in all of history was his daughter, You Yue.

Everyone had agreed in unison over the matter of You Yue taking up the position, with no one against the suggestion. Flame City only existed because of Jian Chen, while You Yue was Jian Chen's fiancée, the person closest to him. Her management abilities were outstanding as well, impressive in all aspects, so she was most suitable for taking up the position.

It could be said that other than You Yue, there was no one else suitable for the position of vice city lord. The uniqueness and value of the city made it so that it could not end up in the hands of outsiders no matter what.

Although no one knew where Jian Chen was due to the matters regarding the Winged Tiger God, it did not sully the glory of Flame

City.

It was the only structure with city walls made completely out of tungsten alloy. It was equivalent to the seven capitals that had existed for countless years on the Tian Yuan Continent.

“The ancient clan of Tianmu has come...”

“The ancient clan of Mogen has come...”

More and more people gathered inside Flame City. These people arrived from various large organizations as the heavy, clear voice rang out.

Changyang Zu Yunkong and Bi Hai currently sat together in the huge imperial palace at the center of the city as they conversed over wine. They both smiled without restraint, observing the beautifully-decorated hall from time to time. They were both at ease.

“Never did I think that my grandson would be so daring, to actually create such a great city out of tungsten alloy. This is unbelievable,” Changyang Zu Yunkong sighed. He was extremely happy.

A happy smile also formed on Bi Hai’s face when he heard that, “That kid is quite good, especially with his talent in cultivation. It’s unprecedented, using less than thirty years to reach Saint Ruler. His future accomplishments will definitely exceed what we

can imagine.” Bi Hai seemed to think of something as he reached there and sighed gently, “It’s a pity that he got sucked into the matters regarding the Winged Tiger God. The entire continent is looking for him now. Although he has hidden himself somewhere beyond the continent, even we don’t know if he has come across any dangers. All we can do is hope he returns safely.”

Changyang Zu Yunkong’s happiness gradually disappeared when he heard that. He said with a frown, “The matter regarding the Winged Tiger God is indeed troublesome. There are just too many things that connect to it. Unless he obtains power that can rival the ten protector clans, he’ll only be able to hand over the Winged Tiger God if he wants to return to the continent...”

Bi Hai and Changyang Zu Yunkong had learned of each other’s identities long ago. They were both grandfathers of Jian Chen if they looked at their position in the family hierarchy. Thus, they were members of the same family through Jian Chen even though they had different ages.

Ming Dong, Dugu Feng, Little Fatty, and Tie Ta all gathered in a garden within the palace.

“Unknowingly, a few years passed just like that. I wonder where Jian Chen is, and if he’s well or not,” the white-clothed Ming Dong murmured.

Not only had Ming Dong’s strength increase greatly after the few years of secluded cultivation, even his bearing underwent changes unknowingly. He had become less rash and more composed than before, seeming more modest and mature now.

“Don’t worry, he’ll be fine for sure.” A cold voice rang out. It was the prideful Dugu Feng. He was no different from before.

“Today is the important day that Flame City is formally established. As the first one in history to be constructed entirely out of tungsten alloy, news of it has spread through the continent long ago. Jian Chen might not know. Do you think Jian Chen would hurry back?” Little Fatty said. He was filled with anticipation.

All his fatty tissue from before could no longer be seen. His chubby stature from before had disappeared completely as well. He had become even more solidly-built.

Little Fatty’s talent was very great. As uncle Xiu refused to let him into the matters of the Tian Yuan Continent and had only wanted him to spend his life peacefully, his talent had been suppressed. However, now that he began to cultivate arduously, his rate of improvement was heavenly. Although it could not be compared with Tie Ta, it was not a speed that ordinary people could even consider.

“When Jian Chen comes back, I want to have a solid fight with him and see whether I’m stronger or he is,” Tie Ta sat there like a mountain as he said with a soft voice. Excitement flickered in his eyes.

At this moment, Tie Ta was the most powerful person among all of them. Even Ming Dong was not his opponent. His brute force

was particularly great, even more terrifying than that of magical beasts.

“Tie Ta, if you want to fight with Jian Chen, you better devote your efforts to reaching Saint Ruler first. You may be strong, but there’s a difficult gap to cross between Saint Ruler and Heaven Saint Masters,” Ming Dong joked.

“I’m not scared. Right now, I feel like I can defeat ordinary Saint Rulers. Once Jian Chen gets back, I need to try him and see just how great the difference between the two of us still is. When we were at Kargath Academy, the difference wasn’t this big. I hope Jian Chen doesn’t pull too far ahead.” Tie Ta was confident. He could not help but think back to the time when he was at Kargath Academy with Jian Chen. With that, he could not help but reveal an idiotic smile on his honest-looking face as he reminisced.

...

Half a day later, You Yue finally had some time to rest. She had been busy with receiving the guests.

With a purple dress, she currently sat wearily in a seat as she rubbed her temples. As the vice city lord of Flame City, she needed to personally receive many people who had come from hermit or even ancient clans. This was why she was so tired.

After so many years, You Yue had changed greatly as well. She was now even more mature than before, while her beauty was still as enchanting. It was enough to cause the hearts of countless men

to run wild. Vaguely enough, there was even the unique bearing of an upper echelon member present on her.

Her temperament had silently undergone changes after these years of managing and being in charge of the Flame Mercenaries.

“Sister You Yue, Lian’er is so happy. The day which our Flame City can stand on the Tian Yuan Continent has finally arrived. We’ve looked forward to this day for so many years, and it’s finally come true,” a gentle voice sounded. Bi Lian ran over energetically in a luxurious long dress.

You Yue slowly sat up and said, “All the people that came this time has surprised me greatly, but...” You Yue then paused as her eyebrows furrowed slightly.

“Sister You Yue but what?” Bi Lian asked curiously as she blinked her large round eyes.

“But for some reason, I suddenly have an uneasy feeling, as if something bad is about to happen,” said You Yue.

Bi Lian stared blankly as she thought slightly with a frown when she heard that. She then said, “Sister You Yue, you’re worrying too much. Everyone on the Tian Yuan Continent knows that we have a protector clan backing up our mercenaries. I’m pretty sure no one will come looking for trouble.”

“You’re right, but why can’t I let this uneasiness inside me be laid

to rest?” You Yue murmured as she thought.

Bi Lian rolled her eyes and giggled, “Sister You Yue, you can’t be missing my brother right?”

You Yue’s face became flushed as she faked her anger, “Stop spilling nonsense you...”

Twenty kilometers away from the city, a large group had suddenly appeared at this moment. They were extremely numerous, extending as far as the eye could see with densely packed people. There were at least several millions of them. They currently traveled quickly in the direction of Flame City in a fan-shape, bearing a threatening and aggressive manner.

Over twenty people of different ages rode at the very front of the group. They were all on large, Class 5 Magical Beasts as they approached Flame City. Every single person seemed extremely ordinary, without a rippling of energy from their bodies. They all seemed like people who could not cultivate.

However, it was not difficult to see their areas of extraordinaire when observed in detail. Every single movement of every single person seemed to conceal and abide to the laws of the world indescribably, as if they were using the energy of the world.

All of them were at least Saint Rulers.

At the very center of them was a young man who seemed to be in

his twenties. His face was cold, while a sneer hung on his face. Killing intent poured without restraint from him. He was Bi Jian.

“Prince Bi Jian, there are countless experts gathered at Flame City right now. Are you sure they won’t end up helping the Flame Mercenaries if we strike at this moment?” an old man beside Bi Jian asked with a deep voice. He was stern.

“Don’t worry at all. I have a notice written up personally by the protector clans. Unless those hermit or ancient clans no longer want to stay on the continent, they won’t disobey the commands from the protector clans,” Bi Jian sneered. He had never looked away from the mighty city as he spoke. He was filled with hatred.

“Flame City is the first city to be built purely out of tungsten alloy on the continent. Tsk tsk tsk, what extravagance. Jian Chen, I’ll be taking this tungsten alloy city that you spent countless years and manpower to build, with the entire continent as the audience. This is your outcome for taking my love.” The killing intent and hatred in Bi Jian’s heart had already surged to his limits. He was clenching his fists so tightly that his nails had already pierced through his skin.

Chapter 939: Battle of Flame City (Three)

In order to take Flame City in one stroke, Bi Jian had made ample preparations. First, he persuaded the other protector clans through his father's connection with a grand elder of the Yiyuan sect and gained their support. Afterward, he personally went around on the continent, persuading more than twenty peak-level mercenary groups. Each and every one of them was equivalent to hermit clans, with thousands of years of history. They all had a long history and great power; not only would they have Saint Rulers, they all had at least ten thousand members as well.

This was how the current group had been formed. All the mercenary groups had arrived through Space Gates set up by Bi Jian's father and the grand elder of the Yiyuan sect. There were several million present and each person was an elite, possessing formidable strength in battle. They outnumbered the Flame Mercenaries by several folds.

As there were numerous experts gathered in Flame City right now, the Flame Mercenaries did not realize their arrival due to the mixing and mingling of auras in the city. Only when they were ten kilometers from the city did the guards stationed on the walls realize their arrival. The guards immediately alerted their superior in charge of the city walls.

The superior was a Heaven Saint Master. He arrived at the walls completely clad in tungsten alloy armor as he focused his attention on the large group of people that slowly drew closer.

“Hmph, so many people have come. Looking at how they're

organized, they are clearly coming with ill intentions. It's bad news. Do they want to take our Flame City? Don't they know that we have powerful clans supporting us?" The captain on the city walls sneered as scorn filled his eyes. He then turned to someone to his side. "Andrath, stay here and guard the place. I'll go contact the vice city lord."

"Yes sir!"

The captain quickly made his way to the central palace of Flame City and reported to You Yue.

Bi Jian's huge group was already five kilometers from the city when You Yue received the news. All the experts in Flame City finally sensed them since they were at such a close range and many people revealed uneasy expressions.

In this current day, there was no one on the entire continent who did not know that the Flame Mercenaries possessed the support of the Changyang protector clan and Mercenary City. Was there any group or organization that dared to provoke the well-supported Flame Mercenaries anymore? If that was the case, then the Flame Mercenaries would not have been able to control the tungsten alloy mine for so long. It would have been divided up between hermit and ancient clans long ago.

You Yue immediately became grim when she learned that people were attacking. An ill omen had lingered in her heart since long ago. She knew that the official establishment of the city would not be as peaceful as they wanted it to be. At the same time, she knew even better that the people who dared to mess with them right

now were definitely remarkable. This was because they came to mess with their city at this moment in time, when plenty of big wigs of the continent had gathered. They definitely would be in possession of a perfect plan.

You Yue treated this with utmost importance; she was unwilling to be careless even in the slightest. She immediately contacted the experts of the mercenaries, before rushing to the city walls with Changyang Zu Yunkong, Bi Hai, and Jiede Tai.

The huge group of invaders stopped quietly five kilometers away from the city. If someone looked down from the city walls, they would see a huge black mass of people that radiated with a towering presence.

Bi Jian and his twenty-odd Saint Rulers from the various mercenary groups currently sat on Class 5 Magical Beasts at the very front. Although the city gates were wide open, they did not hurry to attack.

They needed to deal with all the experts gathered in Flame City first before they could attack, isolating them and preventing them from gaining support.

If the Flame Mercenaries did not have support from the hermit and the ancient clans, they would not be able to repel Bi Jian's group with their own strength.

You Yue stood expressionlessly on the city walls. Her brows were deeply furrowed, while she was extremely grim. She knew that her

ill premonition had finally arrived.

Changyang Zu Yunkong, Bi Hai, and Jiede Tai stood beside You Yue; they all glared at the black mass of people below.

“Name yourselves! Why have so many of you gathered outside the city when we are holding the ribbon-cutting ceremony!? Explain yourselves!” Bi Hai bellowed. His loud voice exploded through the sky like a clap of thunder, reverberating through a radius of several dozen kilometers.

“Hahahahaha, you can call us the Extinguishing Alliance! You must know already why so many of us have gathered here today. Without long, the first city made from tungsten alloy on the continent will belong to the Extinguishing Alliance!” Bi Jian laughed aloud as a certain madness appeared in his eyes.

“Hmph, don’t you dare try and take our Flame City!” You Yue’s enchanting face was now furious. Flame City was a task Jian Chen had handed over to her before he left, so it belonged to Jian Chen. Now that it had just been constructed after countless years and difficulties, how could she let the city be taken away?

Bi Jian stared coldly at You Yue as he smiled evilly. “You must be that Gelan Princess You Yue of some Gesun Kingdom, Jian Chen’s fiancée in-name. Hmph, Jian Chen sure is fortunate to have stolen the heart of such a pretty girl. But it’s a pity, from today onward, his fiancée will belong to me. He stole something from me and brought pain and humiliation to me, prince Bi Jian. I will return this pain and shame to him by a thousand folds.”

Bi Jian's voice was filled with malice and it echoed through the entire city due to its loudness. Everyone naturally heard his insult to You Yue.

The city immediately fell into an uproar. All the people in the city, whether they had come as guests or were members of the Flame Mercenaries, put down the matters at hand and rushed to the city walls. Some people who were more powerful even flew there instead.

Bang! In the palace, Ming Dong smashed the stone table in the pavilion where he sat. He said furiously, "Which bastard dares to insult my brother's fiancée? I definitely will not be letting this slide."

"Let's go check out who insulted my sister-in-law. I will definitely rip them into pieces." Tie Ta also stood up, angry as well.

"Now that Jian Chen is not here, we can't just watch his fiancée be insulted by other people. Let's go and teach that person a lesson," Wang Yufeng said furiously. He immediately placed his hand in his mouth to whistle, and a five-meter-wide magical beast flew over, stopping right in front of him.

"Xiao Fei, let's fly in the direction of the city walls. There are some people provoking us. We gotta show them what we're made of." Wang Yifeng immediately leaped onto the magical beast's back and it took to the sky, making way directly for the city walls.

Ming Dong and the other also made way to the city walls afterward.

“Grandpa Jun, grandma Wang, the Flame Mercenaries seemed to have encountered some troubles. I really do wonder who’s brave enough to come at the Flame Mercenaries at this very moment.” A girl spoke with a spirited voice as she rested in the palace. Her voice was very pleasant and possessed a numbing feeling, filled with allure. Those who were mentally-weak would even become absolutely entranced by it.

This lady was Tianmu Ling from the ancient Tianmu clan.

“Everyone knows that the Flame Mercenaries have a solid backing on the Tian Yuan Continent. If that person is not stupid, he definitely would have made plentiful preparations to come at this precise moment. They won’t be fearing the Flame Mercenaries’ backing at all. Maybe this is more complicated than it seems. Let’s go and have a look,” said grandpa Jun. The three of them made their way to the city walls.

The crowd within the city surged as everyone rushed in the direction of the city walls. The streets were filled with people, and even the skies possessed many Heaven Saint Masters and Saint Rulers.

Almost all of them were guests that had come to participate in the formal establishment of the city.

As countless people descended on the city walls, it became filled with people in the blink of an eye. All of them stood on top with various attires.

Ming Dong and the others gathered around You Yue as they all observed the huge army sternly. They asked, “Who are they? What do they want to do?”

You Yue had already become pale-white from anger. “They claim to be the Extinguishing Alliance, and they want to take our Flame City.” Her voice was filled with unconcealable anger.

“The Extinguishing alliance, as the name suggests, aren’t they just an alliance that wants to wipe us out? Hmph, they sure are brave to openly announce that they are against us.” Ming Dong’s face darkened greatly.

“The people they brought are so powerful. I can’t see through the twenty-odd people at the front at all. Are they Saint Rulers?” Little Fatty growled.

Tie Ta’s eyes lit up when he heard that. He immediately began to itch, eager to try them as battle intent burnt in his eyes. He said with a soft, deep voice, “Saint Rulers? I’d like to see just how powerful they are.”

“They’ve clearly come with preparations. We can’t be careless.” Bi Hai was grim while his eyebrows furrowed.

Changyang Zu Yunkong's eyes were cold as he glared at them. He growled, "Flame City belongs to my grandson. Hmph, objects of the Changyang clan aren't things that any random person can show up and just take."

Seeing how the various representatives of large forces on the continent had gathered on the city walls, Bi Jian could not help but sneer even more. He clasped his hands at them. "Everyone, you are members of large, famed organizations of the Tian Yuan Continent. Today, you shall all be witnesses as I, Bi Jian, show you how the Extinguishing Alliance will take the first city on the continent to be made entirely of tungsten alloy. Now, please sit and watch on one side. After this has all been completed, Flame City will become Extinguished City. At that time, the ribbon-cutting ceremony will progress as planned, establishing Extinguished City as a place equal to the seven capitals of the continent."

Chapter 940: Battle of Flame City (Four)

“Prince Bi Jian—there seems to be a prince from the Felicity Empire called Bi Jian...”

“Is he perhaps one of the nine princes from the Felicity Empire of the three great empires...”

“Even if that’s the case, the three great empires are only as great as ancient clans. How can they contend with the Flame Mercenaries that have the support of a protector clan and Mercenary City...”

“Bi Jian will be getting more than he bargained for this time. He’s bound to come all gloriously and leave in a wreck. If the Flame Mercenaries really were so easy to take down, they would have been ripped into pieces by those ancient clans long ago...”

“This Bi Jian is one of the nine princes of the Felicity Empire. With his background, it’s impossible that he doesn’t know who’s supporting the Flame Mercenaries. But he just still happens to be daring enough. Just what assures him so much...”

Many people broke into discussions, constantly projecting their guesses and expressing their ideas. However, even more people just stood there, as if they were about to watch something good. They did not plan on taking part in this, only waiting to see the final outcome.

Bi Jian’s impudent words immediately made You Yue and the

others reveal extremely ugly expressions. Changyang Zu Yunkong rose up in the air and stopped a hundred meters above the walls. He radiated with a vast presence, which caused the wind and clouds to churn.

“Just you is far from enough to take Flame City. I wonder how many Saint Kings you have brought?” Changyang Zu Yunkong roared. His voice boomed through the surroundings, and the aura from him in particular surged.

Although Changyang Zu Yunkong remained at the First Heavenly Layer of Saint King, his current presence had actually made many Saint Rulers that were far beyond his level involuntarily view him with increased respect. Even the few Saint Kings hidden in the group could not help but look toward him in curiosity as they broke into murmuring.

Bi Jian stared at Changyang Zu Yunkong and a cold light flashed through his eyes. He said coldly, “Who is sire? Name yourself.”

“I am Changyang Zu Yunkong!” Changyang Zu Yunkong said as he normally would.

“What! He’s actually Changyang Zu Yunkong. Is he a member of the protector Changyang clan?”

“It’s rumored that the protector Changyang clan is split into three factions of Zu, Yuan, and Qing. Is he perhaps a member of the Zu faction?”

“He’s actually a member of the ten protector clans. I never thought that there would be people from the protector clans present in the city.”

“With a member of the protector clans present, Bi Jian’s gonna be returning in a horrible shape this time.”

The revelation of Changyang Zu Yunkong’s identity in public immediately led to an uproar. The ten protector clans were existences that always only existed within legends of the Tian Yuan Continent, because they were the most powerful clans on the continent. They had existed since the ancient times and possessed a lengthy history that was hundreds of thousands, or even millions of years long. No one knew exactly how deep their roots were.

Traces of them would rarely be found even over centuries of millenniums, and even if they did appear, they would not just reveal themselves to the world. They would not let the world know that they existed. Only a few hermit clans and ancient clans with several thousands of years of history knew about them. But, without any exceptions, all the clans that knew of their existence possessed a type of admiration for them from the bottom of their hearts.

This was because the protector clans always took up the important role as the guardians of Tian Yuan Continent. They never interfered with any conflict on the continent, but silently protected the continent’s peace. Repelling the invasion of the Beast God Continent and other foreign races were an example of this. This was why they were so respected and possessed a supreme status among those clans.

This time, the matters of the Winged Tiger God led to the invasion of the Beast God Continent, forcing the protector clans out into the eyes of the public out of some many years. This was why the news of the protector clans had already spread throughout the continent. Everyone knew about them now.

Changyang Zu Yunkong's statement of identity immediately attracted the attention of everyone. Vast changes in everyone's gazes toward him occurred, some becoming filled with respect, some with envy, and so on.

Bi Jian looked toward Changyang Zu Yunkong and a cold sneer formed on his face, "Since there are members of the protector clans present, it'll be even easier. I shall show you all something, as well as ask the person from the protector clan to explain whether this is true or not." Bi Jian raised a medallion and immediately poured a strand of Saint Force into it.

The medallion immediately shone with a blinding light and an invisible intent began to ripple outward quickly with Bi Jian as the epicenter. It covered a distance of a thousand kilometers, before gradually disappearing.

For that period of time, all the Saint Rulers closed their eyes, including Changyang Zu Yunkong.

The ripple from the medallion was a type of message. It was forged using a special secret technique from the ten protector clans. As long as someone was a Saint Ruler, they would be able to

receive it clearly.

The Saint Rulers standing with Bi Jian naturally received the message as well, and they all revealed happy smiles. In that moment, any residual fear for Flame City had completely disappeared from their hearts.

“Impossible. Why would it be like this?” Changyang Zu Yunkong slowly opened his eyes. His face was not very great.

Bi Hai, Jiede Taim and the other Saint Rulers who had come to participate in the ribbon-cutting ceremony of the city all opened their eyes as well. All of their expressions changed, no longer able to maintain their previous manner.

Jiede Tai and Bi Hai both became extremely ugly; their faces darkening greatly. Bi Hai was affected in particular. His old eyes now filled with fury and an unwillingness to give in that he struggled to suppress.

Only Saint Rulers could receive the message from the ripple so Ming Dong, You Yue, and the others had no idea what had happened.

“Grandpa Bi Hai, what has happened?” You Yue asked nervously. The ill omen in her heart became heavier and heavier as she saw everyone’s expressions.

“The ten protector clans want to wipe out our Flame City,” Bi Hai

said gruffly.

“What! The ten protector clans want to wipe out our Flame City? Why?” You Yue’s expression changed and immediately began to pale.

“The city lord of Flame City is a member of the ten clans, and there’s an agreement between the protector clans that they don’t interfere with the matters of the Tian Yuan Continent. Flame City’s existence already breaks this agreement, so they want the city to disappear. At the same time, they’ve warned and prohibited all other clans and organizations from assisting Flame City in repelling any attacks,” Bi Hai said.

“What! How did it end up like this?” You Yue’s face paled, now without any traces of blood. She just could not accept this.

The ten protector clans were the oldest and most powerful organizations on the continent. If they wanted someone to disappear, it would be unavoidable even if it was an ancient clan that possessed Saint Kings, let alone the Flame Mercenaries who were much weaker than ancient clans.

The only reason why the Flame Mercenaries could maintain their possession of the tungsten alloy mine was purely because they had the deterrence from the protector Changyang clan and Mercenary City. If they lost the support of these two powers, it would have been impossible for the mercenaries to maintain possession of the alloy for so long.

“Sigh, never would I think that something like this would happen. The ten protector clans have spoken out personally. No one dares to help the Flame Mercenaries anymore.” Tianmu Ling’s grandfather Jun sighed deeply. He was filled with helplessness, before slowly leaving as he tugged Tianmu Ling along. He expressed that they would not be participating in this.

Tianmu Ling became torn between emotions, silently standing beside her grandfather Jun. She knew that no one would be able to help the Flame Mercenaries this time around, or they would be challenging the dignity of the ten protector clans. The outcome would be unimaginable.

There had never been a person or organization who was brave enough to challenge the dignity of the ten protector clans in all of history.

Afterward, all the experts who had come to participate in the city’s establishment backed away, deciding to not interfere with this matter. In the blink of an eye, only You Yue’s group remained standing at the front, now isolated from the others. The only other person who did not move was the ancestor of the Huang family. Huang Batian. However, uncertainty flickered through his eyes, clearly torn in a dilemma.

Bi Jian knew that it was time when he saw the situation of the walls. He swung his hand and yelled, “Attack, take down this valuable city!”

“Brothers, let’s go...”

“Everyone attack...”

“Charge, for the city...”

“This city will belong to us in the future. Charge, my brothers...”

“I swear to protect Flame City with my life. I swear on my life to protect our family...”

“I swear to protect my family. I will never let it fall into the hands of others...”

“Flame City is the glory of us Flame Mercenaries. It cannot be taken by others. Kill...”

The skies were filled with war cries as the millions of people charged at Flame City like a tide. None of them were weak, so the tall walls could not obstruct them at all. Several Earth Saint Masters leaped up the walls as a great battle erupted with the Flame Mercenaries.

Although there were over a hundred Magical Crystal Canons installed on the walls, no one had thought they would be attacked when they were holding a ribbon-cutting ceremony. As a result, no monster cores had been prepared for them so they were now all just useless pieces of decoration.

Ming Dong, Dugu Feng, Little Fatty, Wang Yifeng, Tie Ta, and the other experts of the Flame Mercenaries all took part in the battle as well. They all swung their Saint Weapons, constantly killing off opponents from the alliance. In the blink of an eye, they all become dyed in blood.

You Yue and Bi Lian stood together as they stared at the surroundings with pale faces. They never thought that such a drastic change would occur on the very day the city would be established.

This was originally a day of celebration for the Flame Mercenaries, something that they could get excited and joyful about. But in the end, it had descended into this scene of war and bloodshed.

The ground, originally red with fireworks, had been replaced by blood, while the sounds of laughter and happiness were replaced with miserable howls. You Yue and Bi Lian struggled to accept it as the tragedy unfolded before them.

Bi Hai, Jiede Tai, and Changyang Zu Yunkong's expressions darkened as they stood beside the two girls, gazing over the twenty Saint Rulers that had yet to move.

Chapter 941: Tie Ta's Strength

Bi Hai, Jiede Tai, and Changyang Zu Yunkong's expressions darkened as they stood beside the two girls, gazing over the twenty Saint Rulers that had yet to move.

Several kilometers away, Bi Jian stared coldly at the three of them as he sat on his Class 5 Magical Beast mount. Severe killing intent appeared in his eyes as he said coldly, "The Flame Mercenaries only have you as Saint Rulers. Alright, I'll kill you all today then, and make the Flame Mercenaries collapse completely.

"Additionally, Jian Chen's fiancée and sister will both become my women in the future. Jian Chen, I have sworn before that I'd make you suffer so much grief that you would wish you were dead. I'll make you regret all that you've done to the Heavenly Enchantress. This is what you get for offending me." Hatred for Jian Chen skyrocketed in Bi Jian's heart. It was so intense that it drove him toward madness.

The source of this hatred was the Heavenly Enchantress.

Bi Jian rose from his mount as he radiated with vast killing intent, shooting directly for the city walls. His eyes were completely bloodshot, filled with hatred and resentment, as if he had some great grudge against Bi Hai and the others.

In this moment, all of Bi Jian's hatred for Jian Chen had been shifted toward the people around him.

The expressions of Bi Hai and the others immediately sank when they saw Bi Jian charge toward them. Bi Hai cried out, "This person is very powerful, already of the Seventh Heavenly Layer. Take the two of them and go, Yun Kong. Jiede Tai and I will keep him busy." Before he had even finished his words, Bi Hai flew out. His body radiated with tremendous Saint Force toward Bi Jian, while behind him was Jiede Tai with his Ruler Armament in hand. They wanted to obstruct Bi Jian by working together.

"Grandfather, come back. They have over twenty Saint Rulers. You're not their opponent," Bi Lian cried out urgently as she stood on the city walls. She was filled with worry.

"This is not the time to act tough. Let's leave first," Changyang Zu Yunkong growled. With a wave of his sleeve, an invisible force wrapped around You Yue and Bi Lian as he took them away.

Although Changyang Zu Yunkong had broken through to Saint Ruler, he was still on the First Heavenly Layer. Moreover, the seal in his mind was still present, so he could not use most of his strength. He was no opponent for these people who had reached Saint Ruler many years ago.

Boom!

Bi Hai and Jiede Tai had started to fight Bi Jian already. The power that erupted as soon as they clashed could collapse mountains. From just a single bout, they broke through to the void, forming a pitch-black crack in space. Wild residual energy wreaked havoc in the surroundings as it expanded from where they clashed as the center, knocking the people below off their

feet. It injured thousands.

“Even just the two of you dare to try me? You overestimate yourself.” Bi Jian’s gaze toward Bi Hai and Jiede Tai was filled with scorn. Without even using his Saint Artifact, he directly hurled a fist at Jiede Tai.

The punch contained Bi Jian’s comprehensions of the mysteries of the world, so it seemed to fuse with the surroundings. It was extremely fast, preventing Jiede Tai from dodging it so it landed forcefully on his chest.

A bloody mist sprayed out from Jiede Tai’s mouth as he fell. He was still a Saint Ruler of the Third Heavenly Layer, so his disparity with Bi Jian was just too great. He had been heavily injured from just a single bout.

With Jiede Tai out of the battle, only Bi Hai was left. Bi Hai was of the Sixth Heavenly Layer, only one cultivation level below Bi Jian, and he had a solid foundation as he had broken through to Saint Ruler by comprehending the mysterious beast furs. So even though he was weaker than Bi Jian, he was able to stand his ground against Bi Jian for quite a while and go without suffering defeat for some time.

Bi Hai and Bi Jian’s battle was extremely intense. Every time they clashed, the booms would be thunderous and absolutely deafening. Wild ripples of energy expanded in all directions, causing the ground to crack and mountains to collapse. It was as if an apocalypse had arrived.

Flame City was also struck with the residual energies from their battle. However, it was made of tungsten alloy and was as tough as the seven capitals of the continent. Although the battle was intense, it did not even shake Flame City.

Bi Hai and Bi Jian fought as they rose up in the air, surpassing an altitude of ten thousand meters very quickly. They became two white specks in the sky; they worried that too many people would be injured from the shockwaves of their battle and thus suffer Celestial Decay. This was why they moved the battle so high up in the air.

Meanwhile, the alliance formed from over twenty peak-level mercenary groups continued their battle with the Flame Mercenaries. The various experts that had come from all over the continent only watched on from afar and none had any intentions of interfering.

The Flame Mercenaries suffered an irremediable lack in both numbers and strength compared to the Extinguishing Alliance. As a result, the Flame Mercenaries fell into a disadvantaged situation without long, forcefully suppressed by the opponents that outnumbered them by several times. They sustained heavy casualties.

Ming Dong, Little Fatty, Wang Yufeng, Dugu Feng, and the others worked hard to kill their opponents, constantly cutting down members of the alliance. However, the person with the most outstanding performance was Tie Ta. He was died in blood, while his burly body stood out among the crowds of people. He was like a

small moving mountain.

Tie Ta's clothes had already been reduced to shreds, while the huge ax in his hand constantly dropped with bright-red blood. Every time he swung out, he would slaughter several members of the alliance. No one could resist a strike of his.

Tie Ta was like a grinder, creating a massacre among the members of the alliance. Countless people had already been felled by his hand, while a path made completely from corpses had formed behind him.

Not only was Tie Ta extremely powerful, the toughness of his body could be considered as almost deviant. He did not dodge the attacks from everywhere at all, resisting it purely with his body. Those from Earth Saint Masters failed to even cut through his skin, while even Heaven Saint Masters struggled to create any large wounds on him.

Tie Ta's body was so tough that it could be comparable to Jian Chen's Chaotic Body from before.

Several Heaven Saint Masters realized how strong Tie Ta was, and thus surrounded and began attacking him together.

However, as soon as they drew near him, they were knocked away by Tie Ta's ax. They all vomited blood, now heavily injured.

"Call some stronger people and finish him off together," someone

called for support.

Very soon, over ten Heaven Saint Masters flew over from nearby, surrounding Tie Ta tightly before shooting powerful sword Qi toward him.

Tie Ta remained calm. He wielded his ax in one hand and swept it around him in a circle. It easily broke through all the sword Qi from the Heaven Saint Masters. The violent residual energies slammed into his body, but failed to even shake him. His feet seemed to be rooted deeply in the ground as he stood there firmly.

Tie Ta stamped on the ground heavily, immediately shooting toward one Heaven Saint Master. The bloody ax in his hand shone with a slight golden color as he directly swung it toward the Heaven Saint Master's head.

The ax seemed to contain some law of the world, whistling through the air with a certain profoundness as it chopped down.

The Heaven Saint Master immediately raised his Saint Weapon high up in the air to block the attack.

Ding! The Heaven Saint Master's Saint Weapon had actually been shattered by Tie Ta's ax as it continued downward without any reduction in force. It passed through the Heaven Saint Master's head and split him in half. He was as fragile as tofu.

The expressions of all the Heaven Saint Masters that surrounded

Tie Ta changed drastically when they witness this. They were all filled with disbelief.

“Y-you’re a Saint Ruler...” A Heaven Saint Master said with a trembling voice. To them, only Saint Rulers could break a Heaven Saint Master’s Saint Weapon so easily.

“I’m not a Saint Ruler,” Tie Ta responded with his deep and soft voice, before charging at the others with his giant ax. The ax slightly flickered with a golden light and with every strike, it contained some type of mysterious law of the world. It possessed an extremely great might and even Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Masters struggled to block it. They would be split into two along with their Saint Weapons.

In the blink of an eye, half the Heaven Saint Masters in the area had been bisected by Tie Ta. They were all killed off by a single swing of the ax, while the other Heaven Saint Master began to panic after witnessing Tie Ta’s strength. They began to flee as if their lives depended on it, while Tie Ta seemed determined to kill them as he chased them.

“Save us, former captain!” A few frightened Heaven Saint Masters began to call out for help.

The Saint Rulers that did not take part in the battle noticed this immediately. An old man moved slightly and traveled several kilometers to arrive before Tie Ta in the blink of an eye. He stared at Tie Ta coldly and said, “Sire is skilled, but the Flame Mercenaries are already done for. Why not join our alliance? With sire’s strength, you’ll definitely be treated greatly.”

Tie Ta paid no attention to the old man's attempt to recruit him. Without even saying a word, he directly swung his ax at the old man.

The old man's face became icy. With just a thought, the space around Tie Ta froze in that instant. It locked Tie Ta's burly body tightly in place and immobilized him.

“Those below Saint Ruler are all ants. It would be as easy as cake if I wanted to kill you. My love for talent has just been aroused after seeing your strength, so I'll spare your life. So what do you think? Are you joining us?” The old man said condescendingly. His gaze toward Tie Ta was full of scorn.

With his dignity as a Saint Ruler, he really did completely looked down on Tie Ta.

Tie Ta became grim before roaring at the sky. A faint golden light immediately began to shine from his body, while even his ax became coated in a hazy golden luster. Although it was very faint, it was much stronger than when he killed the Heaven Saint Masters before.

Tie Ta's trapped body suddenly moved. In that moment, he seemed to have become immune to the frozen space completely. He raised his ax high up while his grasp became two-handed from the initial one hand.

Immediately, an indescribably tremendous aura began to pour

from his body. Tie Ta seemed to become one with the ax in that instance. His posture seemed to possess some indescribable charm, resonating with the world. He had obtained a sliver of mysterious power that originated from the world.

Stepping out, his ax became a streak of golden light, directly ignoring the frozen space and falling down with lightning speed.

“How is this possible!?” The Saint Ruler paled in surprise. He found it difficult to accept the fact that a mere Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master could just ignore his frozen space.

But what filled him with even more disbelief was that he felt a great threat from Tie Ta’s ax.

The Saint Ruler reacted very quickly, unwilling to be careless. A flame-red machete immediately appeared in his hand, and he swung it to meet Tie Ta’s ax. His machete was coated in a layer of invisible World Force.

Chapter 942: Protector Shui Sighs

Tie Ta's huge ax cut through the sky as it shone with faint golden light, colliding with the Saint Ruler's machete.

Boom!

The ax and machete collided violently and a wild ripple of residual energy expanded from their clashing point. It quickly reached the surroundings, knocking everyone in a radius of a thousand meters into the air. Only Heaven Saint Masters could remain where they were.

Heavy pieces of soil were lifted up into the air of the region, kicking dust into the air and enveloping the entire battlefield.

Tie Ta's body flickered with golden light as the violent energy struck his body. He actually remained unmoving like a mountain.

Tie Ta maintained control over his ax as it crushed heavily down toward the Saint Ruler's head.

The Saint Ruler had used his Saint Weapon to block Tie Ta's ax but the lower half of his body had already sunken into the ground. He could only be seen from waist up, and he was rather pale. However, shock and disbelief were even more evident from him.

Tie Ta forcefully went up against a Saint Ruler as a Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master. They were matched and Tie Ta even seemed

to have the upper hand.

The other Saint Rulers from the Extinguishing Alliance who had yet to participate in the battle discovered this. They all became astounded.

“He’s clearly just a Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master, yet he can forcefully take on a strike from a Saint Ruler. Who is this person? His battle prowess is terrifying,” growled a middle-aged man. His voice was filled with deep shock.

“Liu Zheng is already a Third Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. Even First Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers can’t take on a strike like that without suffering injury. Who is he? He’s clearly a Heaven Saint Master, yet he’s so terrifying.”

“And that person seems to be immune to Liu Zheng’s frozen space. That’s unbelievable. How does he do it?”

“Perhaps he has some powerful ancient secret technique?”

...

The Saint Rulers all stated their thoughts. All of them found it quite unreal that Tie Ta could fight on equal grounds with a Third Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler as a Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master.

All those below Saint Ruler were ants. This was a saying that had persisted on the continent even until now and it had always held

true. Yet today, they had seen someone prove it wrong.

This was an impossible miracle in their eyes.

Ming Dong and the others naturally saw this as well. With their mouths agape, they stared in complete disbelief. They knew that Tie Ta was powerful, but they had never even thought that he would be so strong, able to stand his ground against a Saint Ruler.

Many experts from hermit and ancient clans who watched from afar also discovered Tie Ta's extraordinary. They all focused their attention on him as uneasiness flickered through their eyes.

“Tie Ta, good on you. Kill viciously, kill off all the invader's of our homeland,” Wang Yifeng cried out from afar. He was filled with excitement.

With that, Tie Ta immediately thought of why all these people had come here. Anger immediately flushed his face and with a bellow, an extremely tremendous energy immediately began to pour from his body. It powered up his arms and passed through the ax, pushing Liu Zheng's body down by another thirty centimeters. Only his upper body was visible now.

Liu Zheng immediately became filled with burning fury as he realized that he had actually been forced into such a horrible position by an ant-like Heaven Saint Master. His dignity as a Saint Ruler had been trampled on and to him, this was an uncleanable embarrassment. He would be too ashamed to see anyone in the future.

This was because something so exaggerated had never occurred on the continent before. A Saint Ruler had actually been beaten into the ground by a Heaven Saint Master. After the battle, his name would spread across the continent, but it would not bring any glory or status, only jeering and mockery.

Liu Zheng became even angrier as he thought about it, before he roared out involuntarily. Surging Saint Force poured into his body as he utilized every inch of his strength into blocking Tie Ta's ax. His body immediately shot up from the ground, leaving behind a hole that was around a meter deep.

"Kiddo, I'll tear you to shreds!" Liu Zheng bellowed furiously. The machete in his hand chopped toward Tie Ta's head as it burned with flames that were coated in dense World Force.

This time, Liu Zheng used everything he had. All his strength as a Third Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler had been displayed; he had held nothing back.

Tie Ta felt no fear. With his two hands gripping his ax, he chopped out once again toward Liu Zheng.

The ax and blade clashed, producing an explosive boom. Wild ripples of energy knocked both of them backward.

Suddenly, an extremely powerful battle intent filled the surroundings. The battle intent seemed to be able to invade people's blood and possess them, unknowingly affecting everyone.

The battle between the Flame Mercenaries and the Extinguishing Alliance became even more intense as they were influenced by this battle intent. Both sides seemed to completely throw themselves into the battle, forgetting pain and forgetting themselves. All that was left in their heads was to fight! To fight! To fight!

All the experts who watched on from afar became surprised. They could naturally feel the battle intent that flooded the battlefield and they all glanced toward Tie Ta. This was because they could all sense extremely clearly that this battle intent originated from him.

In this moment, Tie Ta hovered three meters in the air as he radiated with battle intent. With his stalwart body, he seemed like an ancient war god.

He slowly raised the giant ax in his hand as the golden light on it became more and more intense. In the blink of an eye, a gigantic blurry golden ax materialized above his head, before chopping wildly toward Liu Zheng.

All the battle intent in the surroundings seemed to gather together at an unbelievable speed while the blurry ax swung down, making it less blurry and more concentrated.

Whoosh! The image of the ax swung down extremely quickly with a flash of golden light. It arrived above Liu Zheng's head, before slicing through his head.

Liu Zheng stood there unmoving. A finger-wide crack appeared

on the ground between his feet. It was perfectly straight and several thousand meters in length.

Tie Ta slowly closed his eyes after the strike. Not only did the golden light on his body show no sign of receding, it instead became more intense and much purer than before. Far denser battle intent began to radiate from him once again, directly surging toward the sky.

A few strands of hair fell from Liu Zheng's head. Soon afterward, an extremely thin red line appeared on his forehead. It constantly grew longer, reaching his eyebrows and then his neck in the blink of an eye, before disappearing into his clothes.

This was the blood from Liu Zheng's body.

A golden light seemed to shine from the blood, growing brighter and brighter. It produced a bang in the end and Liu Zheng's body split in half. His soul was gone as well.

And this was how a Third Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler fell, slain by a Sixth Cycle Heaven Saint Master.

All the spectators watched in stupefaction from afar as their hearts began to churn. They were unable to remain composed. Even though everything had unfolded before their eyes, they still refused to believe or accept it.

To their knowledge, those below Saint Ruler were ants. This was

an unchangeable truth. Before Saint Rulers, Heaven Saint Masters did not even possess the ability to wound them because Saint Rulers had comprehended the mysteries of space. All they needed to do was freeze the surrounding space and the Heaven Saint Master would be immobilized, essentially becoming a sitting duck.

Yet in this moment, they had personally witnessed a Third Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler cleanly and miserably slain by a Heaven Saint Master. All of them felt deeply shocked.

Tie Ta hovered in the air with his ax as the battle intent constantly increased around him. The golden light on his body became more and more intense as well.

This time, even a few Saint Rulers struggled to remain in control. They could feel their blood surge, circulating several folds faster than its normal rate. A powerful desire for battle quickly skyrocketed in their hearts for some reason, making them all wish for a fulfilling battle right now.

“Unbelievable. The battle intent from him can influence us unknowingly. What is this weird art? It’s so terrifying,” a Saint Ruler called out. His voice was filled with fear.

The other Saint Rulers all revealed shocked gazes as well while they stared fixedly at Tie Ta. They wanted to see exactly what Tie Ta was doing.

At the same time, a grand divine hall stood in a world of snow and ice at the arctic.

A person completely clad in silver-white armor currently sat in a secret room, revealing only her closed eyes.

Suddenly, her eyes opened slowly and she gazed in the direction of the Tian Yuan Continent. She sighed and said, “The bloodline of the warring gods has finally awakened. I just wonder how great his bloodline is, whether he can become a Grand Prime or not.”

“The bloodline of the warring gods had awakened in something several tens of thousand years ago, but it was a pity that I couldn’t interfere with it. He died here in the end. How pitiful, how grievous.”

“In that battle all those years ago, the Grand Prime of the warring gods was slain by the Grand Exalt of the Sword Sect of Purple Heavens using the divine Azulet swords. Yet here, the person with the bloodline of the warring gods stands with he who inherits the Sword Sect of Purple Heavens. Is this a blessing, or is this a tragedy?”

“The esteemed ice god was heavily injured by the Grand Exalt of the Sword Sect of Purple Heavens and still has not fully recovered now. I wonder if the successor here is a reincarnation of that Grand Exalt...”

“Back then, three elders from the Sword Sect of Purple Heavens died by my hand, yet now, the successor of the sect is actually a sibling of the holy maiden...”

Chapter 943: Tie Ta's Sainthood

“The current situation is an absolute mess. I’ve waited here painfully for three million years, yet why does the holy maiden have to appear at this exact moment when the successor of the sword sect is here? And they have such a complicated relationship...”

“I don’t need to worry about the person of the warring gods. When he learns the truth in the future, I think he’ll make the right choice. If he takes the wrong one, he can only disappear. They’re born from the world anyway. With the death of this generation, another person of the warring gods will be born again after a few hundred thousand years or even a million years...”

The person in silver armor murmured to herself. Her voice was pleasant but it was also filled with coldness and lacked emotions.

Outside Flame City, the golden light around Tie Ta had already turned him into a blinding sun. No one could see him properly.

Tie Ta’s presence skyrocketed as the battle intent that flooded the surroundings became more and more powerful. When his presence reached its absolute limit, a thin streak of golden light shone from him, directly into the sky and possibly even beyond that.

At the same time, the energy of the world in the surroundings began to move violently. All of it within a radius of ten thousand kilometers gathered in his direction, before being absorbed by Tie

Ta like a whale taking in water. It gathered densely in Tie Ta's surroundings, actually forming a visible vortex.

The battle between the Extinguishing Alliance and the Flame Mercenaries continued. Everyone was affected by Tie Ta's battle intent. They forgot about their pain and even themselves. They felt no dread or fear; only one thought lingered in their heads: to fight! Fight! Fight non-stop!

Ming Dong, Dugu Feng, Wang Yifeng, Little Fatty, and the others were affected as well, massacring mindlessly among the army of the Extinguishing Alliance. Only the Saint Rulers managed to remain in control of themselves.

Tianmu Ling and the other people that had followed their seniors along were unconscious. They had been knocked out by their seniors, preventing them from being affected by the battle intent.

Tie Ta's body was like a bottomless hole as tremendous quantities of energy of the world poured toward him. He had yet to reach his limits, so nothing happened to him.

“Just what is he doing?”

“What are the origins of this person? He looks like he's undergoing some mutation by the looks of things.”

...

All the Saint Rulers who watched the battle began to speculate as they all stared at Tie Ta curiously.

Tie Ta's absorption lasted for quite some time before finally stopping. The energy gathered around him gradually dispersed, finally returning to peace once again. Even the golden light around him gradually disappeared, revealing his burly body once again.

All the blood on him had disappeared, only revealing his slightly-golden skin. His bulky, turgid muscles were physically striking, while a small and exquisite battle ax imprint had appeared between his eyebrows.

The battle intent in the surroundings gradually disappeared as well as it funneled into Tie Ta's body in the form of an invisible energy. Everyone had returned to peace in the blink of an eye.

Without the influence of the supreme battle intent, the millions of people from both sides returned to their senses. Immediately, heavy exhaustion flooded through their bodies to the point that they even became dizzy.

They seemed to have wasted all their power after entering the state of self-forgetfulness.

All of them could not help but think back to when they were in that state. They were all at a loss, while the more powerful Earth Saint Masters and Heaven Saint Masters reacted greatly as their faces were filled with shock.

They could clearly remember what had just happened, all the way up to this point in time where they came to a realization suddenly. They had lost control completely when they were in the forgetful state of battle before, as if their bodies and souls had been unknowingly controlled by someone in the dark.

Both sides lost all intent for battle after being influenced like this. They all backed off, returning to their respective bases. They left behind a field full of corpses and fresh blood, which testified for the violence of the battle before.

However, no one paid attention to either side right now. They all placed their focus on Tie Ta without any exceptions.

Tie Ta slowly descended. Even though the supreme killing intent had disappeared, his body was now replaced with an even more powerful presence. His long hair fluttered in the windless air as golden light seemed to flicker faintly on his burly body. An extremely powerful and violent energy would radiate from his body from time to time.

Although he just stood there at leisure, his giant body brought on an oddly powerful pressure to all the Saint Rulers.

Right now, he stood in the world like a war god, causing people to feel like he was invincible. Meanwhile, his great aura was no weaker than the presences of Saint Rulers.

“Has he broken through...”

“His presence is comparable to Saint Rulers. Is he a Heaven Saint Master or Saint Ruler...”

“Was that situation before the process of his breakthrough...”

“No mysteries of the world descended, nor did the rainbow clouds appeared. Did he reach Saint Ruler or not...”

...

Everyone, regardless of Saint Rulers from hermit clans or Saint Kings from ancient families, all murmured in their hearts.

They could all feel that although Tie Ta was powerful before, he was still a Heaven Saint Master. Now, he actually possessed the might of Saint Rulers after that process.

But no mysteries of the world descended, nor did any rainbow clouds appear. Was this still breaking through? Or was he always hiding his strength before?

A figure fell from the sky. The high-altitude battle between Bi Hai and Bi Jian had finally ended, and Bi Hai was not able to come out victorious. He was heavily injured by Bi Jian, falling out of the sky as he constantly vomited blood.

Bi Jian's face bore intense filling intent as he descended in pursuit. He swung the Saint Weapon in his hand, shooting a powerful sword Qi at Bi Hai.

Bi Hai's strength had been greatly reduced as he was injured but he still blocked Bi Jian's sword Qi with difficulty. It made his wounds even worse.

Bi Jian caught up with Bi Jian very quickly, locking him in by freezing space. He swung mercilessly toward Bi Hai's head as his Saint Weapon rippled with energy.

"Mysteries of war, Broken Void!" Tie Ta bellowed. With his great ax in hand, he swung a blow at Bi Jian as his weapon glowed with a faint golden light.

A visible projection of a giant ax broke through the air, fusing with an extremely-pure battle intent as it flew toward Bi Jian.

When the projection struck Bi Jian's frozen space, the space immediately shattered, while the projection continued onward without any decrease in force. It flew toward Bi Jian with great might and a towering battle intent.

A gleam of light flickered through Bi Jian's eyes and he gave up on Bi Hai. The Saint Weapon in his hand traveled toward the ax projection while being coated with a layer of World Force.

A great boom erupted when the two collided. Bi Hai successfully broke free, while Bi Jian was knocked a hundred meters away uncontrollably.

Bi Jian remained calm while his eyes shone. He stared fixedly at Tie Ta with a sharp gaze as he said coldly, “You’re not weak, but it’s a pity you stand with Jian Chen. There can only be death for you.” Bi Jian then fused with the surrounding space, shooting toward Tie Ta as a faint blur through the use of Spatial Force. The Saint Weapon in his hand radiated with light and energy that could shake up the void as it pierced toward Tie Ta.

Tie Ta did not show any weakness at all. Extremely pure battle intent burned violently on him as it filled him with fighting spirit and a desire for battle. An invincible spirit appeared on him as both his body and his ax shone with blinding gold light. Afterward, his body seemed to become one with the ax, chopping toward Bi Jian with unstoppable force. “Mysteries of war, Broken Mortality!”

Boom!

Tie Ta’s ax struck Bi Jian’s Saint Weapon ferociously, immediately producing a deafening boom. Wild residual energy wreaked havoc, turning the surroundings into a mess.

Bi Jian stumbled more than ten steps back from the blow, while Tie Ta’s huge body had also left the ground, flying back rapidly as the golden light on him dulled.

Bi Jian stabilized himself very quickly, before staring at Tie Ta in shock. He exclaimed, “What powerful strength! He’s clearly weaker than me, yet he can force me back with just his strength. What is this technique? It’s so odd!” If someone had looked carefully, they would clearly see that Bi Jian’s Saint Weapon was

trembling gently.

But very quickly, Bi Jian's face became filled with killing intent again. He said, "The more extraordinary you are, the more I cannot leave you alive. Die!" Bi Jian fused with the surrounding space once again to charge at Tie Ta. He caught up in the blink of an eye, locking Tie Ta by freezing space before stabbing out at lightning speed.

The golden light on Tie Ta's body flickered rapidly as he directly overcame Bi Jian's frozen space. He swung out once again but it was much weaker than before.

Bi Jian's body shook violently from the strike, but he did not take a step back this time. On the other hand, Tie Ta stumbled rapidly backward, leaving deep footprints in the ground.

"You're actually able to move freely in my frozen space!" Bi Jian exclaimed. His voice was full of shock, but he did not hesitate with his following moves, chasing up to Tie Ta once again and striking out.

"Mysteries of war, Celestial Movement!" Tie Ta bellowed. He suddenly disappeared as Bi Jian's Saint Weapon arrived, reappearing ten meters away.

Although he had dodged the attack, Bi Jian had left a small nick on his left arm. A golden fluid flowed from it.

“What! Golden blood!” Bi Jian immediately cried out when he saw golden blood bleed from Tie Ta’s wound. He was filled with disbelief, as if he had just discovered a whole new continent.

“How is that possible!? How can his blood be golden?” All the Saint Rulers also discovered Tie Ta’s peculiarity and cried out as well.

Tie Ta’s expression changed greatly and his giant ax immediately disappeared. He used his other hand to cover the wound tightly, concealing the golden blood. He was uneasy.

The golden blood had always been Tie Ta’s biggest secret. Only Jian Chen and Ming Dong knew about it, and he had told no one other than the two of them. This was because he had always been afraid that he would end up being treated as a monster if other people learned that his blood was golden.

Chapter 944: Gathering of the Powerful

Bi Jian stared at Tie Ta in astoundment. “Golden blood. It’s golden blood. How can it be golden? Are you not a human?”

“Who said I’m not a human? Other than my big stature, is there any part that seems non-human?” Tie Ta became frantic as he countered hurriedly. He worried about this the most and was afraid that people would label him as a monster or an outsider.

At this very moment, the space in the sky began to distort and a Space Gate formed very quickly. A white-robed, middle-aged man emerged.

“Ripping open space to construct a Space Gate is an ability of Saint Kings.” A similar thought appeared in the heads of all the Saint Rulers when they noticed the Space Gate above, already realizing the person’s strength.

Ming Dong rejoiced when he saw the man and immediately took to the skies toward him. Ming Dong called out, “Uncle Tian, uncle Tian, you’ve finally come.”

He was the grand elder of Mercenary City, Tian Jian.

Several dozen people immediately took to the air as they flew steadily toward Tian Jian. They were all Saint Rulers that originated from various large clans on the continent; there were even a few Saint Kings hidden in between them.

They stopped fifty meters from Tian Jian and clasped their hands in unison toward him, “We greet the grand elder!”

Bi Jian also flew from the ground, clasping his hands courteously toward Tian Jian. “One of the nine princes of the Felicity Empire, Bi Jian, greets the grand elder.” Bi Jian looked at Ming Dong from the corner of his eyes from time to time; the depths of his eyes revealing an extremely well-hidden but cold light.

“The grand elder? Is he the grand elder of Mercenary City?” The Saint Rulers who did not recognize Tian Jian guessed his identity and also went up to greet him with clasped hands.

“Everyone is too courteous,” Tian Jian said calmly toward all the people, before looking toward Ming Dong. Some traces of fondness appeared in his eyes. “Not bad, your strength has been increasing very fast in the past few years. It’s so great that even when I was your age, I was nowhere near you.”

Ignoring Ming Dong’s happiness, Tian Jian then looked toward Tie Ta. When he noticed Tie Ta’s golden blood, his eyes froze, while his eyebrows also became deeply furrowed.

“Golden blood...” Tian Jian murmured as he began to think. With a wave of his hand, an invisible force immediately wrapped around Tie Ta. It lifted him up into the air and brought him in front of the grand elder.

“Tie Ta, don’t be afraid. This is my uncle Tian. He won’t harm

you,” said Ming Dong.

Tie Ta nodded his head as he stared at Tian Jian. His hand remained on his wound as he pressed down tightly but golden flood still flowed through his fingers. It was eye-catching.

Tian Jian examined Tie Ta with his eyes. He revealed a frown, while his expression was torn between shock and doubt.

“Tie Ta, I never thought you’d be so powerful, to the point where you can even kill Saint Rulers. Oh right, just what type of powerful battle skills are Broken Void and Broken Mortality? Why have I never heard of them from you before? When did you learn them? Looking at their power, they should at least be high level Heaven Tier Battle Skills,” Ming Dong asked Tie Ta curiously. He was uncertain as to how Tie Ta had gained so many powerful battle skills.

Tie Ta shook his head in confusion as he replied with his soft, deep voice, “I don’t know what happened either. I-I- I just knew after I broke through.”

“What! You knew right after you broke through!” Ming Dong was stunned with disbelief.

“Mysteries of war, mysteries of war...” Tian Jian muttered softly as he thought deeply. He felt like he had seen the phrase somewhere before.

Suddenly, Tian Jian seemed to think of something. His expression changed suddenly as he stared at Tie Ta in shock. His eyes were filled with disbelief.

“Mysteries of war, golden blood, and an imprint of a battle ax between the eyebrows. Aren’t these all ancient records regarding the war god of the Hundred Races, Aergyns? P-perhaps he is the war god of the Hundred Races?” Tian Jian’s heart began to churn. After discovering the secret of Tie Ta’s identity, he struggled to remain calm even with his level of mental strength.

“Uncle Tian, what’s wrong?” Ming Dong saw how Tian Jian had reacted so violently, so he asked out of curiosity.

Bi Jian, the other Saint Rulers, and the few Saint Kings also realized Tian Jian’s reaction, which aroused their curiosity. They wondered exactly what could make the grand elder of Mercenary City react so violently. But despite their suspicions, no one dared to ask him so brazenly like Ming Dong.

Tian Jian sucked in a deep breath and slowly calmed himself down. His gaze toward Tie Ta had currently undergone an overwhelming change.

“Ming Dong, is this a friend of yours?” Tian Jian asked Ming Dong.

“Yeah, uncle Tian, Tie Ta’s one of my few friends. He’s Jian Chen’s friend as well,” replied Ming Dong.

Tian Jian was relieved. A joyful smile appeared on his face, before he exhaled deeply, “Sigh, the Winged Tiger God and the war god have reappeared. Supreme experts have been born for the Beast God Continent and the Hundred Races, while the sea goddess of the sea realm is still alive. I wonder where the supreme expert of our humanity is.”

In that moment, a strong uneasiness overwhelmed Tian Jian’s heart. He was worried about the safety of the Tian Yuan Continent. Of the four great races, only the Tian Yuan Continent’s supreme expert had yet to appear. If they were to return to how it was in the ancient times, how would the Tian Yuan Continent possess the power to contend with the three other races?

However, what made him slightly relieved was that both the Winged Tiger God and the war god were on great terms with Jian Chen and Ming Dong. They had yet to become enemies with the Tian Yuan Continent.

“I wonder how Jian Chen is like. He reached Saint Ruler in twenty years. His talent is the most outstanding on our current continent and he knows the spirit of the barrier as well. Is he the future hope of our continent?” Tian Jian began to think of Jian Chen this time and immediately experienced a wave of anticipation.

At that very moment, Tian Jian’s eyes suddenly narrowed. “Tie Ta, you should go to Mercenary City.” As he said that, he directly waved his sleeve. A heavy force wrapped around Tie Ta before he could even reply, forcefully dragging him away through the Space Gate.

Bi Jian's expression changed slightly when he saw Tie Ta taken away by Tian Jian. Tie Ta was someone he needed to kill. However, he said nothing.

“Uncle Tian, what are you doing?” Ming Dong looked toward Tian Jian in confusion.

As soon as he finished this sentence, the surrounding space began to distort violently once again. Several Space Gates appeared in unison, and experts of varying ages stepped out from within. To no surprise, they were all members of the ten protector clans.

All ten protector clans had gathered in the air above Mercenary City. Although the people who had come were not the most powerful in their clans, they were all still Saint Kings.

Another Space Gate opened up beside Bi Jian and his father Bi Yifei emerged. His face was rather pale and haggard.

His soul had been injured by Jian Chen's God Descent in the battle above the sea realm. A great elder of the Yiyuan Sect was injured too, while Bi Yifei had yet to fully recover.

Tian Jian stared calmly at all the people from the protector clans and said softly, “I never thought that all the protector clans would come.”

“Grand elder, Jian Chen is Changyang Xiangtian, while

Changyang Xiangtian is a member of the protector Changyang clan. The Flame Mercenaries he founded breaks the agreement that our ten clans initially set down, so they must be destroyed. We are currently dealing with our personal business, so I hope your Mercenary City does not interfere,” a great elder of the Yiyuan sect said to Tian Jian with clasped hands.

At this moment, another Space Gate opened up. Two ruddy old men emerged from within, arriving before Tian Jian as they glided through the air with a single step. They were the third and fourth elders of Mercenary City.

“Grand elder, we cannot interfere with the matters of the Tian Yuan Continent. We can’t forget what the city lord set down before,” said the third elder.

“Grand elder, the rules the city lord initially set down was that only when the entire continent was in danger. Only then could we come out and prevent internal conflicts, preventing our strength from waning. However, this small-scale conflict is not enough for us to interfere, and this is also classified as an internal affair between the ten protector clans. We can’t interfere,” added the fourth elder in persuasion.

Ming Dong immediately became worried when he heard that. “Uncle Tian, we spent several years worth of power and efforts to build this city. You can’t let others take it.”

Tian Jian sighed gently and said after some thought, “Ming Dong, I can’t help you with this.”

“Uncle Tian...” Ming Dong did not give up and wanted to continue his pleas. But before he could say anything, he was cut off by Tian Jian, “This is all because of Jian Chen. If you want to change this, only Jian Chen can do it. Once he becomes powerful enough, he’ll naturally be able to retake the city. Ming Dong, come back to Mercenary City with me and cultivate hard there. I’ll use all my extra time to assist you as much as I can.” Without even listening to Ming Dong’s reply, Tian Jian forcefully took Ming Dong away, returning to Mercenary City through the Space Gate.

The two elders of Mercenary City also left in unison with Tian Jian’s departure. They did not stay for long.

“Kong’er, come back with us.” Changyang Zu Yunxiao looked at Changyang Zu Yunkong. His voice was filled with helplessness.

Changyang Zu Yunkong had returned to the city walls with You Yue and Bi Lian again. Hearing Changyang Zu Yunxiao’s words, anger immediately appeared on his face. “Father, do you really want to just watch what your own grandson made after all these years and efforts be destroyed just like this?”

“Kong’er, it doesn’t matter how great of an organization he formed before he was a member of the protector Changyang clan. Now he is a member, we need to follow the agreement we had set down. I hope you can understand,” sighed Changyang Zu Yunxiao. Why would he not want to keep the city completely made of tungsten alloy? But the agreements was like that; he could not do what he wished. This was because as soon as the agreement was violated, their Changyang clan would become pressured by the

other nine clans.

“Changyang Zu Yunkong, the agreement set down all those years ago between us cannot be broken. As a member of a protector clan, you must follow through with the agreement. It’s best if you don’t interfere with what happens here,” an expert from the Pure Heart Pavilion said. He was an ordinary-looking middle-aged man who possessed an aura as if he had transcended worldly affairs.

Chapter 945: Third Layer of the Chaotic Body (One)

Changyang Zu Yunkong's expression darkened. He glanced back at the first city that had been constructed purely out of tungsten alloy and had over a hundred thousand members. His eyes were filled with pain.

He had only been able to break through to Saint Ruler and return to the continent because his grandson completely forsook his personal safety and risked his life to obtain Dragon's Saliva from the Fantasy Star Ocean. If it were not for the Dragon's Saliva, how would he have been able to return to the continent from Three Saint Island? He probably would still be waiting silently for the end of his life, never to be able to break through.

As a result, Changyang Zu Yunkong felt a deep gratitude toward his grandson. Yet right now, his grandson's Flame City was about to be taken by someone else, while all he could do was watch helplessly. This overwhelmed Changyang Zu Yunkong with pain and sadness.

This city was not any old city either but one that had been completely constructed out of tungsten alloy, which was ten times more valuable than purple coins. It would be able to stand parallel to the seven capitals of the continent.

"Kong'er, let's go. We can't interfere with the matters here at all," Changyang Zu Yeyun said softly. She too was torn between emotions. She clearly understood her son's pain. She also felt intense gratitude to Jian Chen because he allowed their family to

reunite. However, everything currently unfolding was beyond what they could help with.

You Yue and Bi Lian who stood beside Changyang Zu Yunkong were also overwhelmed by grief as clear tears rolled uncontrollably down their cheeks. The two of them knew that having Flame City taken away from them would become an unchangeable reality with everything like this now.

The city was Jian Chen's property. It was the task he had handed over to the two of them. They had devoted several years worth of painstaking effort and hard work on the city, almost exhausting all the resources that Jian Chen had left behind. It took them over a hundred thousand people to build, yet as soon as it was completed, such a tragedy occurred. It filled the two of them with absolute pain and an unwillingness to just stand down.

They had devoted so much, yet it would be taken by others in the end. They struggled to endure or accept this.

“Jian Chen, sorry. I failed to live up to your expectations. I couldn't keep Flame City,” You Yue sobbed softly. Her voice was filled with helplessness and a feeling of being wronged.

Wang Yifeng, Little Fatty, Dugu Feng, Yun Zheng, Senior An, and the other experts of the Flame Mercenaries all focused on the two girls. Each and every one of them was depressed and dejected, no longer possessing any will to fight.

Clearly, they already knew about the fate of the city.

Changyang Zu Yunkong hesitated for a very long time before sighing deeply, “Alright, let’s go. But I’m taking away everyone who is related to Jian Chen.” In that moment, Changyang Zu Yunkong seemed to grow a lot older.

No one on the Tian Yuan Continent had the power to interfere with what was unfolding before them as it was the decision of the ten protector clans.

Changyang Zu Yunkong waved his sleeve, slowly raising You Yue and the others into the air with his abilities as a Saint Ruler. He stood with Changyang Zu Yunxiao as he looked down. “Bi Hai, Jiede Tai, let’s return to the Changyang clan first.”

Bi Hai and Jiede Tai hesitated slightly before flying over as well. They planned on leaving with Changyang Zu Yunkong because they could already vaguely guess that the Extinguishing Alliance would not let them off if they continued to stay.

Bi Jian immediately became extremely ugly as he saw that everyone important to Jian Chen was about to be taken away. He bellowed, “Wait, as a member of the Changyang clan, you, Changyang Zu Yunkong, can naturally leave. But they’re not members of the protector clans, so they can’t leave.” Bi Jian had already set his eyes on the lives of those around Jian Chen, unwilling to let anyone off. How could he let them leave so easily?

Only with that could he vent his hatred for Jian Chen and relieve himself of this grudge.

Changyang Zu Yunkong's face darkened as cold light began to flicker in his eyes. Before he could even speak out, Changyang Zu Yunxiao's voice rang out, "When did you have the right to nitpick who the Changyang clan can take away? If you want to speak anymore, I won't be going easy on you, even if it may come off as bullying." Changyang Zu Yunxiao formed a glare. His voice was extremely stern, possessing the fury he struggled to conceal.

Although Changyang Zu Yunxiao lived in Lore City, he was a great elder of the protector Changyang clan so he knew about this matter. He knew that everything had only occurred because of Bi Jian and his father, so his hatred toward the two of them was very intense.

Bi Jian immediately shut up when faced with Changyang Zu Yunxiao's loud voice, unwilling to speak anymore. Although he was confident with his Saint King father supporting him, he did not dare to directly provoke the dignity of a protector clan's great elder.

Bi Jian went silent, tightening and releasing his hands several times. His heart was filled with an unwillingness to abide. He was unable to complete his revenge against Jian Chen now that all the people had been taken away.

You Yue stared at the city below tearfully. "Since you want this city, then take it. We, the Flame Mercenaries, surrender."

The Flame Mercenaries could only surrender with how the

current situation was like. Any resistance before the great army of the Flame Mercenaries and the twenty-odd Saint Rulers would be futile.

“How can it be that easy with just a surrender? Kill, people of the Extinguishing Alliance. Leave no one alive,” Bi Jian gave the order with bloodshot eyes. He seemed extremely savage.

Immediately, the cries of battle rang out again as the army of the Extinguishing Alliance surged toward Flame City.

“Sigh,” the Saint King from the Pure Heart Pavilion exhaled softly. He pointed out gently and the surrounding energy of the world immediately began to move, erecting a wall that was several hundred meters tall and over ten kilometers long. The wall blocked the Extinguishing Alliance, preventing their advance toward Flame City.

“The Flame Mercenaries have already surrendered, so why must you kill them all? They haven’t committed any unforgivable sins. Stop,” the person said gently, but his voice reached the ears of everyone. His voice was filled with peace, immediately wiping out all the rash and bloodthirsty feelings of the people below.

The army stopped, before retreating after some hesitation. All of them knew that since the protector clans had spoken out, even their captains would need to obey obediently.

“God dammit, you bastard. Doesn’t the Pure Heart Pavilion never interfere with things? Why have they started to mind other

people's businesses?" Bi Jian constantly swore inside but he did not dare to say it aloud. Even if he was a hundred times braver, he would not dare to curse the Saint King right in front of his face.

In the end, Changyang Zu Yunxiao left through a Space Gate with his group of people. He did not return to the protector clan but to the Changyang clan in Lore City.

Meanwhile, all the members of the Flame Mercenaries left the city dejectedly. A portion of them stayed behind, planning to travel a hundred thousand kilometers to Gesun Kingdom, while the others left the mercenaries all together, running off in all directions. With this, the Flame Mercenaries had been greatly affected; although they did not disband, their strength was far from before.

Flame City was taken over by the Extinguishing Alliance and renamed Extinguished City. It became a famed place that stood equal to the seven capitals of the continent.

Although Bi Jian had essentially ripped apart the Flame Mercenaries, he did not feel happy at all, as he failed to kill even a single person out of everyone important to Jian Chen. They were either taken away by the grand elder of Mercenary City or taken away by the Changyang clan.

Very soon, the battle of Flame City swept through the entire continent like a storm, throwing the entire continent into a huge uproar. Although the Flame Mercenaries were defeated in the end, their fame became even greater, far exceeding the Extinguishing Alliance that occupied Extinguished City.

This was because the Flame Mercenaries were the first mercenary group that required all ten protector clans to appear. Just that was enough for it to be renowned through the continent.

In a quiet little valley at the edge of the Cross Mountains, an old man sat on his bed with his eyes closed. He seemed like an old monk.

He slowly opened his eyes and sighed gently. “It’s fine if it’s taken, it’s not necessarily bad. Little Fatty should reach a better understanding of the importance of strength after this. If he wants to protect his homeland and family on the Tian Yuan Continent, he needs to have great strength. He needs to become so powerful that no one dares to provoke him.”

“Jian Chen is in the sea realm right now. I wonder what his current strength is. He needs to deal with the matter of Flame City himself. I hope that I don’t have to wait for too long until the day he gains the strength where he can contend with the protector clans.

“The pakchoi is almost all consumed. Time to plant some more...”

“The old man murmured as he made his way out with the plow on his shoulder. He had taken it from the corner of the room.

...

In the blink of an eye, four years passed. A fist-sized golden tower hovered in the air within the Octoterra Divine Hall as it shone with a faint golden light.

Jian Chen currently sat in the center of a huge hall within the artifact space. The Azulet sword spirits had materialized above his head. They constantly refined monster cores and divine quality crystals into the purest energy, which Jian Chen then absorbed.

The mountainous piles of high class monster cores, grand quality crystal coins, and divine quality crystals had all disappeared from around him. It had all been refined into pure energy, before being transformed into powerful Chaotic Force.

Jian Chen's chaotic neidan slowly revolved in his dantian. Strands of grey Chaotic Force coiled around the neidan, while the neidan itself had already reached the size of an adult's fist.

When the final monster core had been refined, Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes. He revealed joy that he struggled to conceal as he murmured, "Just one last step and my Chaotic Body will reach the third layer." With a wave of his hand, a ten-meter-tall piece of grand quality crystal emerged from his ring, landing heavily in the empty hall with a boom.

This crystal was the throne that Jian Chen had obtained on the first floor of the hall.

Jian Chen leaped onto the throne nimbly and sat down with his

legs crossed. He began to refine it.

Chapter 946: Third Layer of the Chaotic Body (Two)

The giant throne completely made from divine quality crystal constantly shrank. It transformed into strands of pure energy that entered Jian Chen's body under the refinement of the Azulet sword spirits. It then became a part of the Chaotic Force within Jian Chen.

Jian Chen was still at the initial stages of the Chaotic Body. As long as he had enough energy, he could refine it into Chaotic Force, while the sword spirits would help increase the rate of his refinement.

As the Chaotic Force constantly increased, Jian Chen's chaotic neidan constantly bulged as well, reaching its absolute limit very quickly.

Boom!

Suddenly, a violent sound erupted inside Jian Chen's dantian. It was extremely loud and clear and even people outside would be able to hear it. His chaotic neidan had shattered, turning into a large swathe of Chaotic Force that quickly wreaked havoc in his body.

Jian Chen seemed to be pumped full with air as he resisted the Chaotic Force, bulging at a visible rate. Very soon, he became a ten-meter-tall giant.

The tremendous Chaotic Force within him wreaked havoc wildly, rampaging everywhere like floodwater.

Jian Chen furrowed his eyebrows gently. The violent pain which he had not experienced in quite some time pierced his spirit once again, mercilessly devastating his nerves.

Jian Chen had already experienced a breakthrough of the Chaotic Body before, so it was an easy process due to experience. He immediately began to control the Chaotic Force within him and circulated it along a special, predetermined path recorded in the Azulet Sword Law.

Gradually, the Chaotic Force within him increased in purity, while its quantity rapidly decreased. The Chaotic Force was currently undergoing its third change, taking a qualitative metamorphosis.

As the Chaotic Force rapidly strengthened, it broke the balance within Jian Chen's Chaotic Body. The body was immediately damaged as heart-wrenching pain radiated from every inch of Jian Chen's body. He began to spasm uncontrollably.

Jian Chen gritted his teeth. Not only did the speed of change fail to decrease, it sped up instead, but he made no sounds as he resisted the pain that rapidly became more intense.

The sword spirits did not stop, continuing with their refinement of the huge throne. They provided energy to sufficient support the

transformation of Jian Chen's Chaotic Force.

The Chaotic Force within him rapidly decreased, while his body slowly shrunk as well. He returned to his original size soon enough, but he was now covered in blood. Blood had been forced through every pore of his skin, while each droplet of blood radiated with powerful ripples of energy. It was enough to easily kill off an Earth Saint Master.

Jian Chen's Chaotic Body was rapidly destroyed and healed. Each time it healed, some of the strengthened Chaotic Force would fuse in as well. His Chaotic Body was rapidly strengthening thanks to the qualitative increase of his Chaotic Force.

The evolution of the Chaotic Force and Chaotic Body lasted for half a month before the Chaotic Force inside Jian Chen finally calmed down. It stopped rampaging, while a thumb-sized chaotic neidan floated silently in his dantian. Strands of powerful Chaotic Force coiled slowly around it.

Jian Chen's clothes had been reduced to shreds long ago, while the throne beneath him had already shrunk to half its size. The blood all over him had disappeared as well, returning into Jian Chen through his pores.

Jian Chen slowly opened his eyes and suddenly stood up from the throne. Immediately, a tremendous presence began to radiate from him. His presence formed a whirlwind that slammed against the walls of the hall, making it tremble constantly.

At that moment, Jian Chen seemed to be a primordial beast that had just awakened from his slumber. He could make the earth shake just by his presence alone.

“Congratulations on reaching the third layer,” the sword spirits said at the same time.

Jian Chen tightened his fists as he felt his strengthened Chaotic Force and Chaotic Body. He could not help but smile.

“Third Heavenly Layer of Saint King. The third layer of the Chaotic Body allowed me to leap directly from the Seventh Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler to the Third Heavenly Layer of Saint King. I directly passed through four levels, the Eight and Ninth Heavenly Layers of Saint Ruler, and the First and Second Heavenly Layers of Saint King,” murmured Jian Chen. His voice was filled with joy that he struggled to hide.

With a flip of his hand, the King Armament appeared in his grip. Surging Chaotic Force was poured into the King Armament, immediately causing it to shine with a blinding dark light. An aura of destruction filled the hall, causing it to tremble.

“The Fifth Heavenly Layer of Saint King. The King Armament only increases my strength by two Heavenly Layers now,” Jian Chen murmured to himself but his eyes were filled with dissatisfaction.

When he was a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler, the King Armament would give him the strength of a Third Heavenly Layer

Saint King. It was five entire cultivation levels. Now that he had reached the Third Heavenly Layer himself, the King Armament only increased his strength by two cultivation levels. Its effect had decreased by over a half.

“The more powerful I become, the greater the gap between each level of cultivation. Maybe it’s because of that which leads to a smaller increase. I wonder how strong I’ll become if I use the Emperor Armament,” murmured Jian Chen. He quickly dismissed his thoughts, pulling out a new set of clothes from his Space Ring and wearing them. Afterward, he left the hall which he had stayed in for many years.

Jian Chen paid no attention to the shrunken throne. He planned on using it again in the future to refine Chaotic Force. He needed to find the Emperor Armament right now, to prevent Thysnich from gaining control over the divine hall.

Jian Chen saw Nubis at first glance as soon as he left the hall. Nubis’ strength had also increased greatly now that he had completely absorbed all of the old snake’s hidden essence. Not only did he reach Saint King, he was even of the Second Heavenly Layer.

Nubis’ eyes narrowed as soon as he saw Jian Chen. He cried out, “Jian Chen, what level of cultivation have you reached now? I actually can’t see through you, and I even feel a certain pressure from you. My god, did your strength exceed mine in these short five years?”

“I’ve reached the Third Heavenly Layer of Saint King,” smiled

Jian Chen.

“What! The Third Heavenly Layer! H-how is that possible!? It was only a short five years and you went from the Seventh Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler to the Third Heavenly Layer of Saint King. That’s unbelievable,” Nubis stared at Jian Chen dumbfoundedly. He was filled with disbelief.

He struggled to accept just how fast Jian Chen’s strength had grown.

In the past years, Nubis had only improved so quickly due to the absorption of the old snake’s hidden essence, yet Jian Chen had surpassed him just with his own cultivation. It was a great psychological blow to Nubis.

“Jian Chen, you’re only thirty years old right now. A thirty-year-old Saint King—i-i- i-if this makes its way out, both the sea realm and the Tian Yuan Continent will be thrown into an uproar,” said Nubis as he sighed emotionally.

“The Tian Yuan Continent...” Jian Chen immediately became distracted when he heard the Tian Yuan Continent; a deep yearning flooded his eyes. However, he returned to his senses very quickly, while his gaze became determined once again. He said, “Nubis, let’s go. We can’t give Thysnich too much time.”

Jian Chen and Nubis left the artifact space together, reappearing on the ninth floor of the hall once again. Nearby, the Empyrean Demon Orb hovered in the air as it shone with faint red light.

The saint artifact disappeared into Jian Chen's forehead as a streak of golden light. Jian Chen glanced at the Empyrean Demon Orb but did not pay too much attention to it. He was currently trapped within the Octoterra Divine Hall and whether he could leave or not was the problem. He had no time or energy to consider other things.

Nubis scanned the ceiling that led to the center of the divine hall and said, "Looks like the divine hall can't be controlled so easily. Thysnich is still not done. Jian Chen, why don't we see if we can break through the entrance right now?"

"Our strengths may have increased greatly, but it's far from enough to break through the entrance. We need to find the Emperor Armament as soon as possible. Once it's in my hands, I can display even greater strength, so I'll have greater confidence in breaking through the entrance," Jian Chen said gruffly. His voice was extremely stern.

"Alright, then let's go search for the Emperor Armament," said Nubis.

Jian Chen and Nubis immediately left the ninth floor as they made their way to the eighth. They constantly looked around, looking for any marks that the Emperor Armament may have left behind.

Very quickly, the two of them returned to the eighth floor. The formation there had disappeared, but the nine blood-red pillars

remained.

As soon as they reached the ninth floor, the pillars began to shine with bright red light and the formation was activated once again.

But this time, Jian Chen and Nubis both remained composed. Jian Chen flipped his hand and the King Armament appeared in his grasps. He directly lashed out, shooting a powerful sword Qi toward one of the pillars as his weapon radiated with an aura of destruction.

Boom!

The pillar shattered loudly. With its destruction, the formation was immediately broken and the blood-red light in the air slowly disappeared. Jian Chen had destroyed the formation in one strike before it could even be activated completely.

Jian Chen put the King Armament away and looked around. He began to frown slightly as he murmured, “There are actually no signs of the Emperor Armament. Just where has it run off to?”

“We found no marks at all as we made our way from the ninth floor to here. The Emperor Armament can’t have disappeared, right?” Nubis’ eyebrows were furrowed slightly as well as he asked in confusion.

Jian Chen pondered silently for a while as he looked at the path toward the seventh floor. He said, “Let’s go down. The Emperor

Armament should be extremely familiar with this hall, so I'm guessing it must have used a path that we don't know of to leave the hall. It must be outside."

Chapter 947: Controlling the Emperor Armament

Jian Chen and Nubis continued their way down, but the passageway to the seventh floor had been blocked by an extremely tough stone door. The door was made of the same material as the one for the treasury on the second layer, which had required a very long time to break through under the attacks of several dozen Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers and over twenty Tian Level Saint Techniques.

“I wonder if we can smash through this door with our current strength,” murmured Jian Chen. He quickly drew his King Armament from his Space Ring and poured Chaotic Force into it. It immediately began to glow with a dark light as its aura of destruction filled the entire hall.

Nubis’ expression changed slightly as he involuntarily took several steps back. He was secretly shocked. Jian Chen was already more powerful than him without the King Armament. With the King Armament right now, he felt a tremendous pressure from his aura.

Nubis felt like Jian Chen was invincible right now.

“In just a few short years, Jian Chen reached such a level with his strength. If he continues like this, he’ll be able to reach Saint Emperor in less than a hundred years, or maybe just a few decades,” thought Nubis.

Jian Chen's eyes narrowed as he became one with his sword. The King Armament was thrust toward the center of the stone door with lightning speed.

Boom!

A wild energy immediately emerged and wreaked havoc in the surroundings. It rampaged against the walls of the hall, causing it to shake gently.

Jian Chen's strike was as powerful as an attack from a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King, but he still failed to destroy the door in one stroke even with such a powerful attack. The sharp tip of the sword was embedded in the door, while a thin crack had that covered the entire surface appeared.

Jian Chen wrenched his King Armament from the door, before striking out once again with a tremendous aura.

The door began to shake gently, while the cracks became wider and denser.

Afterward, Jian Chen's third, fourth, and fifth strike followed closely. The door finally broke after the five attacks, turning into countless pieces of rock that scattered everywhere.

Jian Chen put his sword away and smiled involuntarily. If he had come across this door several years ago, he definitely would not have been able to break through it. It took a very long time even

when several dozen Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Rulers and over twenty Tian Level Saint Techniques pummeled it constantly.

Yet now, he easily destroyed it with five attacks. He felt extremely satisfied with his current strength.

Jian Chen and Nubis descended to the seventh floor. Several years ago, they were in a state of constant fear with every step, yet now they walked boldly. They did not fear of any formations hidden in the surroundings. This was because the formations were no longer able to trap them or even stop their steps. Jian Chen could break through them all with a single stroke.

Jian Chen and Nubis made their way down the floors, searching for the Emperor Armament everywhere. They reached the first floor very quickly, before directly passing through the hall's main entrance.

The barrier around the hall remained, while the corpses of a few Sea race experts lay scattered outside. They had shriveled up long ago, while the mountainous piles of vicious beasts had all disappeared.

Jian Chen and Nubis struck the barrier together, forming a crack that they left through.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom...

They heard a muffled sound as soon as they made their way out,

which was coupled with powerful energy ripples.

Jian Chen and Nubis' eyes immediately lit up. They could already guess that the activity was from the Emperor Armament. It was striking the main entrance of the divine hall repeatedly.

“As I thought, the Emperor Armament has run outside,” Jian Chen's eyes burned with anticipation. He immediately shot off toward the direction of the sound.

As the hall was surrounded by the barrier, it cut off all sounds from outside. This was why the two of them had sensed nothing from outside. Only when they passed through the barrier could they detect the huge disturbance caused by the Emperor Armament.

Jian Chen and Nubis traveled as fast as they could. As they rapidly drew closer, the sounds of beast roars gradually grew louder as well.

Very soon, the two of them arrived at the location of the main entrance of the hall. The thirty-meter-long Emperor Armament floated ten meters in the air as it constantly rammed against the door, while several Fifth and Sixth Heavenly Layer Class 8 Magical Beasts roared furiously. They constantly bit at the Emperor Armament with their large jaws but the weapon avoided them with agility. They could not touch the Emperor Armament at all.

Meanwhile, all the beasts were covered in horrifying wounds. Their blood had already dyed them all red, they had clearly been

injured by the Emperor Armament.

“Emperor Armament, I’ve finally found you,” Jian Chen ravished with joy. Chaotic Force circulated and filled every inch of him, pushing the toughness of his body to its absolute limit. Afterward, he used the Illusory Flash, shooting toward the Emperor Armament in the form of a blur.

The Emperor Armament had clearly noticed Jian Chen as well. It stopped its attacks at the door and turned around, before turning into a blurry figure. It actually began to flee into the distance with lightning speed, before directly piercing the barrier around the hall and disappearing into it.

“Where do you think you’re going!?” Jian Chen roared. He immediately chased behind it as a blur, traversing several kilometers in the blink of an eye. He arrived at the gap in the barrier that the Emperor Armament had passed through and widened it just as it was about to close. He then threw himself through the gap as well.

Jian Chen chased the Emperor Armament from the first floor to the ninth. As soon as it made it up there, it dodged Jian Chen’s claws before charging back to the first floor, breaking through the barrier and returning outside the hall.

Jian Chen shot out from the gap created by the Emperor Armament with lightning speed. A golden light fell from the center of his eyebrows and landed in his hand. He had pulled out the saint artifact.

Jian Chen tossed the saint artifact into the air, “Artifact spirit, hide here. Once the Emperor Armament flies over, suck it into the artifact space immediately.” Jian Chen paid no more attention to the saint artifact, continuing his pursuit of the Emperor Armament.

The saint artifact hovered in the air as its golden light gradually disappeared. It shrank rapidly, before descending onto the ground as a thumb-sized tower. It used a corpse to hide itself.

Jian Chen and the Emperor Armament rampaged everywhere in the divine hall. Due to the Illusory Flash, a long trail of blurs followed Jian Chen everywhere. The other Class 8 beasts all tailed behind as they were unwilling to let the two go. The beasts constantly roared out angrily.

When the Emperor Armament flew toward the hall once again, the saint artifact finally struck out. It turned into a ten-meter-tall tower in the blink of an eye, radiating with a blinding light. Following it, a door suddenly opened along the path of the Emperor Armament, attempting to get the Emperor Armament to enter by itself.

However, things did not unfold as planned. At the most crucial moment, the Emperor Armament actually forced itself to come to a screeching stop. It did not dive into the artifact space. Clearly, it still remembered what had happened several years ago.

But with this delay, Jian Chen finally caught up to it. His hand

was coated in a thick layer of Chaotic Force as he directly grabbed the thick hilt of the Emperor Armament.

The Emperor Armament began to tremble violently as it resonated clearly. A powerful layer of sword Qi shot out and enveloped Jian Chen, constantly striking him.

Jian Chen's clothes were turned to shreds at that very moment. White marks appeared all over him due to the sword Qi from the Emperor Armament.

The third layer of the Chaotic Body allowed Jian Chen to withstand attacks from Saint Kings of the Third Heavenly Layer. Although the Emperor Armament was powerful, it struggled to injure Jian Chen as it was not under anyone's control.

Jian Cen roared out and Chaotic Force flowed unceasingly into the Emperor Armament. With the injection of Chaotic Force, the Emperor Armament gradually became suppressed and its sword Qi weakened rapidly, before completely disappearing. The light on the weapon itself had become duller and duller, slowly replaced by a dark light filled with the aura of destruction.

The Emperor Armament was completely calm now; it was now completely under Jian Chen's control. At the same time, Jian Chen could feel the existence of a soul within the Emperor Armament. It was extremely weak, as if it was currently in a slumber.

“Looks like it's mostly due to this soul that the Emperor Armament possesses this level of intelligence. It should be left

behind by its original owner.” Jian Chen suddenly reached an understanding, and he also realized why the Emperor Armament had behaved like before. It was all due to the instincts of the soul, an instinct to avoid danger. Its actions had not been committed on purpose.

“Shrink!” Jian Chen called out. The Emperor Armament quickly began to shrink, turning into a 1.3 meter long sword the width of two fingers. It radiated with an exceptionally powerful aura.

“Jian Chen, you’ve finally obtained the Emperor Armament,” Nubis said joyfully as he ran over. Their chances of breaking through the entrance to the center of the divine hall were even greater with the Emperor Armament now.

Jian Chen’s face was also full of joy. With a wave of his hand, a terrifying sword Qi shot out immediately toward the barrier.

The sword Qi and the barrier collided and a huge hole was soundlessly formed. Afterward, the sword Qi continued onward with no reduction in force.

Boom! The entire hall trembled violently. It was not just the hall; even the entire divine hall was greatly affected, swaying gently.

“This Emperor Armament is innately effective against barriers, so the barrier was weakened greatly before the sword Qi.” Jian Chen ravished in joy and surprise as he watched everything unfold.

“My god Jian Chen, that strike is at least of the Sixth Heavenly Layer or even the Seventh Heavenly Layer.” Nubis was filled with shock.

Chapter 948: Fighting the Divine Hall

Jian Chen struggled to hide the excitement in his heart as he stared at the trembling hall. He knew extremely well that his attack while wielding the Emperor Armament was at least of the Sixth or even the Seventh Heavenly Layer of Saint King. Moreover, this was just a casual strike from him; if he used everything he had, it would be much more powerful.

Roar! Several huge vicious beasts charged toward the two of them threateningly.

Jian Chen grasped his Emperor Armament as he glanced back at the beasts. He said, “We better go and stop Thysnich. We can’t waste too much time here.”

“You’re right. We can’t keep wasting time. Maybe just an extra hour will give Thysnich enough time to gain full control over the divine hall,” said Nubis with a gruff voice.

Jian Chen and Nubis left together, continuing into the hall. They arrived on the ninth floor very quickly once again.

The entry on the ceiling remained the same as before, it had not changed in the past few years. It seemed to have completely fused with the ceiling, making it very hard to discover it with the naked eye.

Jian Chen and Nubis arrived directly below the entry as they stared up grimly. The Emperor Armament in Jian Chen’s hand

erupted with black light once again as Chaotic Force surged into the Emperor Armament. He was currently charging up his most powerful attack.

Immediately, a tremendous pressure filled the entire hall and in that instant, air itself seemed to freeze. The space around Jian Chen began to distort, turning him into a blur.

If this were to happen on the Tian Yuan Continent, the space would have probably collapsed long ago, unable to endure the vast pressure.

A dense layer of golden light emerged from Jian Chen like some burning flames. Tremendous ripples of energy radiated from Nubis as well, causing the surrounding space to tremble gently. At that moment, Nubis used every inch of his Second Heavenly Layer strength. As a beast of antiquity, his attack had completely exceeded his cultivation level. It was no weaker than a strike from a Third Heavenly Layer Saint King.

“Do it!” Jian Chen immediately called out when he saw that Nubis had finished charging up. He swung the Emperor Armament toward the ceiling with lightning speed.

Immediately, a humongous sword Qi shot toward the entrance in the form of a dark streak of light that radiated with an aura of destruction. It struck the ceiling brutally.

At the same time, Nubis struck out as well. He swung his hands abruptly and energy ripples began to surge out from his body. It

turned into the projection of a long golden snake, striking the ceiling.

Boom!

Jian Chen and Nubis struck the entrance with their most powerful attacks at the same time, causing a deafening boom to erupt immediately. Wild energy rampaged in all directions, causing the hall to rumble each time they struck the walls.

The entire hall shook violently as if it was amidst a great earthquake. On the ninth floor, the fragments of decor left behind countless years ago turned into powder.

After a very long time, an extremely small crack appeared on the entrance after all the rampaging energy calmed down.

Although the strike had failed to break through the entrance, Nubis and Jian Chen both smiled.

“Fantastic. The entrance to the center of the hall really isn’t as strong as the divine hall itself. It doesn’t need Saint Emperors to break it. We can definitely get through it if we strike it a few more time.” Jian Chen’s voice was filled with some joy.

“Let’s continue,” said Nubis. Energy began to surge out from his body once again.

“Hahahahaha, pity, it’s such a pity that you two moved too late.”

At that very moment, a loud laughter filled the hall. It was impossible to discern its origins.

“It’s Thysnich. Has he already gained control over the divine hall?” Jian Chen’s expression changed and he immediately became grim.

Nubis also revealed a terrible expression. “It’s not good now. If Thysnich has control over the divine hall, he can use it to deal with us. The divine hall is as strong as a Saint Emperor. Even with our great improvements, we can’t go toe-to-toe with Saint Emperors.”

“Hahahahaha, never did I think that you would still be alive, ruler of the Turtle clan. Your body wasn’t possessed by the Octoterra Emperor. But this is perfect. You’re easier to deal with than the Octoterra Emperor.” Thysnich’s voice rang out everywhere again and the ceiling suddenly opened up. Thysnich descended slowly as a visible energy coiled around him.

This energy possessed a tremendous aura. It was so powerful that even Jian Chen’s expression changed.

This was the power of the divine hall, something that stood on equal grounds with Saint Emperors.

Jian Chen and Nubis shot backward, pulling far away from Thysnich. They could see the layer of the divine hall’s power around Thysnich that protected him. It definitely would not be as easy to harm him with its protection.

Thysnich hovered three meters above the ground. His face was filled with arrogance, while his gaze toward the two of them was filled with scorn.

Currently, he was like a lofty monarch, able to look down on everything.

“Ruler of the Turtle clan, Nubis. I didn’t originally plan on killing the two of you. But since you have no idea what’s best for you and wanted to break through the entrance to the center of the hall, it can no longer be my fault,” sneered Thysnich. His eyes were filled with killing intent and with a wave of his hand, a strand of power from the divine hall immediately condensed. It shot toward the two of them with lightning speed as it rippled with great energy.

With a flash, Nubis dodged the attack, while Jian Chen directly swung his Emperor Armament at it. He struck out as hard as he could. Jian Chen wanted to forcefully repel it and see just how great the power was.

The Emperor Armament collided with the divine hall’s power with a loud boom. Jian Chen immediately felt an extremely great power smash into his body viciously, throwing him backward. He directly flew into a wall of the ninth floor, causing the entire hall to shake gently.

Jian Chen produced a deep grunt. From the attack, all his organs had been shaken up. However, a large portion of the power had been nullified through his attack. Along with the fact that his Chaotic Body was tough, the blow did not cause him any great

injury.

“How is this possible? I didn’t even injure you!?” Thysnich stared at Jian Chen with his eyes wide open as disbelief flooded his face.

Jian Chen stood up steadily and sneered, “And I had wondered just how powerful you would become after you controlled the power of the divine hall but it looks like it’s not that great. In my opinion, you haven’t fully gained control over the hall. Even though you can use some of the divine hall’s power right now, this is why your attacks are still weak. It’s nowhere near the level of Saint Emperors, only at the Eight or Ninth Heavenly Layer of Saint King at most.”

Chapter 949: Thysnich's Death

Thysnich's expression changed slightly when he heard Jian Chen's words, but a cold light soon flashed across his eyes. He laughed loudly and said, "Ruler of the Turtle clan, you sure do have some knowledge. You are able to see through my secret and can tell that I have yet to completely control the divine hall. You're right, it's just as you've said. I still haven't gained full control over the divine hall and can only use a portion of its power. But it's still not something you can contend with, even if it's far from the power of an emperor."

"I may not have injured you earlier with that strand of power, but it was still enough for you to use everything you had to block it. I wonder how many more attacks at that level you can resist."

Thysnich suddenly pushed out with one hand when he finished what he said. Immediately, several strands of power shot toward Jian Chen with a devastating aura.

Jian Chen became grim. Blocking the attack from before was his absolute limit, yet now he was faced with several of them. It was impossible for him to match up with all of them, even if he had the Emperor Armament.

Currently, Jian Chen could only display strength at the peak of the Seventh Layer with the Emperor Armament. Meanwhile, the divine hall's power was at least at the Eighth or Ninth Heavenly Layer. It was beyond what he could face up against.

With a thought, a golden streak of light immediately shot out from the center of his eyebrows, forming a golden tower in front of him in the blink of an eye. It enlarged quickly, instantly reaching as high as thirty meters as it stood before Jian Chen.

Boom!

The divine hall's power struck the golden tower and erupted with a deafening sound. Wild residual energy rampaged in the hall, forming a storm of energy.

The golden tower did not even tremble when it took on all the attacks. The power of Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings could not even leave a scratch on it.

Jian Chen hid behind the saint artifact as he struck out heavily with his left hand. His attack immediately shot off toward Thysnich after Jian Chen's heavy palm strike.

Jian Chen wielded his Emperor Armament in his right hand; he stuck close to the saint artifact, rapidly approaching Thysnich while the artifact covered him.

"Hmph, I'd like to see just how many times your golden tower can resist my attacks," sneered Thysnich. Thysnich did not even fear 16th Star Seasoul Warriors within the hall now that he controlled a portion of the divine hall's power. He completely looked down on Jian Chen thanks to his overconfidence.

Thysnich swung out with both his arms. Suddenly, the energy of the divine hall transformed into finger-sized sword Qi as it constantly shot toward the saint artifact. However, each strand of sword Qi was no weaker than before.

Violent sounds rang out with no signs of stopping as the power of the divine hall struck the saint artifact constantly. A terrifying force formed from the wild ripples of energy stopped the advance of the saint artifact, preventing it from getting closer than thirty meters.

Suddenly, a powerful golden light began to radiate from the saint artifact. It enveloped a radius of a hundred meters, and the entire area had basically become the domain of the saint artifact. In that area, the saint artifact could suck anyone in or let them out, given that they did not resist.

In the next moment, a wild energy of destruction suddenly appeared behind Thysnich. The Emperor Armament stabbed out with an unbelievable speed toward him as it shone with dazzling dark light.

Although Thysnich controlled a portion of the divine hall's power, he was still a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. He completely failed to react to the sudden strike that Jian Chen had delivered from behind.

The Emperor Armament stabbed toward Thysnich's back but it was blocked by the divine hall's energy around him. The energy immediately began to churn wildly after taking on the attack but it stabilized very quickly.

Jian Chen's arm suddenly began to jolt, striking out with speed. The Emperor Armament had completely become a flurry of blurs in his hand. It consecutively struck the layer of energy with speed that made it difficult to discern the weapon itself with the naked eye.

Jian Chen's speed was unbelievable. In just a mere moment, he had stabbed out several dozen times. Each strike possessed the strength of a peak Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King, and it all landed in the exact same spot.

Although the power protecting Thysnich was very strong, it was unable to withstand these torrential attacks. A small hole formed in the end.

Jian Chen's eyes lit up as killing intent radiated from him without the slightest concealment. He immediately drove the Emperor Armament into the gap, breaking through the defense and mercilessly piercing Thysnich.

Spurt! The Emperor Armament emerged from Thysnich's chest as bright-red blood dripped down the tip of the sword. Meanwhile, Chaotic Force churned within the weapon, entering Thysnich's body in a rampage.

"Argh!" Thysnich could not help but cry out miserably. The Chaotic Force that had entered his body was extremely powerful, so powerful that only a third layer Chaotic Body could withstand it. How could his fragile body endure its devastation? Wherever

the Chaotic Force passed by, the flesh and blood of Thysnich's would explode with muffled sputters. Blood rained everywhere.

“Ruler of the Turtle clan, even if I have to die here, I'm going to pull you down with me,” Thysnich produced a chilling shriek and a sliver of determination appeared in his eyes. He wanted to use the sliver of emperor's power within him to kill them both.

Jian Chen understood what Thysnich wanted to do. His eyes immediately grew cold and he slapped his left hand against Thysnich's head with lightning speed. The powerful palm strike directly passed through his head and turned it into pieces, wiping out his soul.

Without Thysnich's soul, the power of the divine hall had lost master as well. It began to slowly disperse.

Swish!

The thirty-meter-tall saint artifact returned to its original size, shooting back into Jian Chen's forehead as a golden streak of light. It had returned to Jian Chen's sea of consciousness.

Nubis walked over afar. He looked at Thysnich who was dead on the ground. He could not help but sigh deeply. “This bastard is finally dead. The divine hall's power he controlled before allowed him to produce Eighth Heavenly Layer Saint King attacks. It brought me a great fright, but he still wasn't your opponent in the end.” Nubis' frantic heart finally calmed down.

Jian Chen secretly produced a sigh of relief as he stared at Thysnich's corpse with mixed emotions. He placed the Emperor Armament back into his Space Ring, before slowly squatting down to Thysnich's corpse. He put his hand on top of the corpse's chest.

An extremely powerful ripple of energy immediately emerged from the chest. Following it closely, a thumb-sized ball of pure power was drawn from Thysnich by Jian Chen. It was an emperor's power.

Jian Chen carefully placed the power into his hand. He was extremely stern. He knew very well that this was the true power of a Saint Emperor, far greater than the power of the divine hall that Thysnich had controlled.

“Jian Chen, do you plan on keeping the power with you?” Nubis stared at Jian Chen in shock.

Jian Chen nodded slightly. “Correct, that's what I intend to do. The power is extremely great; even though there's only enough for a single strike, it's enough to heavily injure a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King. If it's used well, it can even kill a Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint King.”

Jian Chen took away the emperor's power. However, he did not dare to deposit it in his own body. Instead, he placed it in the artifact space to get the artifact spirit to guard against it. With that, the artifact spirit could block the emperor's power even if it suddenly erupted.

“Although I can refine the emperor’s power into Chaotic Force, it’ll only be an extremely limited amount and won’t be of much help at all. Meanwhile, I can even threaten Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings if I use it against enemies. That’s the way to get all the value from it,” thought Jian Chen.

“Jian Chen, you’ve done it indeed. You have not made me disappointed.” Suddenly, a gentle and pleasant voice rang out.

The sudden voice stunned both Jian Chen and Nubis as they raised their heads immediately. Before them, a blurry image appeared. It was a female with an obscured face.

“Sea goddess, it’s actually you,” Jian Chen and Nubis were both surprised as soon as they noticed who the woman was.

“Jian Chen, you’ve obtained the Emperor Armament left behind by the death of a human emperor, and this divine hall has fallen into your hands as well. Are you satisfied with what you have obtained from this Octoterra Divine Hall?” The sea goddess’ voice rang out. It was extremely pleasant, like the music played by some immortal.

“Your majesty, since you can enter the Octoterra Divine Hall at will, you must know about the scheme of the divine hall, right?” Jian Chen asked grimly.

“Correct. I indeed knew about everything here, including the matters of the Blood Demon Emperor and the Psalmic Emperor. But do not worry, I had told you to come here because I was

thinking for you. I had no intentions of harming you, and everything that happened in here can be considered as a type of test for you,” said the sea goddess.

Jian Chen became silent. The goddess of the Sea race was one of the four supreme champions from the ancient times, an existence that had surpassed Saint Emperor. Her abilities extended far beyond Jian Chen’s reckoning. Jian Chen knew that probably everything that happened within the Octoterra Divine Hall was monitored by the sea goddess.

“Your majesty, you have helped me so many times. May I ask what you need me to do for you?” Jian Chen asked.

The sea goddess went silent for a while before finally speaking out, “Jian Chen, I want you to go to a place to retrieve some items for me. This is the reason why I have helped you.”

“May I asked what exactly are the items? With your identity as the goddess of the Sea race, are there no other experts that are able to assist you?” Jian Chen was curious.

“No. Probably only you can enter that place. It will only bring death to other people who enter, even if they are Saint Emperors,” said the sea goddess.

Chapter 950: Owner of the Divine Hall

Jian Chen immediately felt shocked when he heard the sea goddess' words. However, he felt even more curious about the existence of such a place.

“Sea goddess, may I ask exactly where this place is? And how dangerous is it inside that it can even kill Saint Emperors? I'm still weak, nowhere near the level of Saint Emperors, so it'll probably just be even more dangerous for me if I enter,” said Jian Chen.

The sea goddess shook her head. “Very few people in the sea realm know of this place, but the level of weirdness and danger inside is incomparable to any other place within the sea realm. This is because the mysteries of the world do not exist in there. The place does not possess any flow of the energy of the world. A mysterious power exists inside, which suppresses all the abilities and power within people. As a result, Saint Kings or even Saint Emperors will lose all their abilities once they enter that place and become as weak as an ordinary human. They won't be able to face up against the dangers in there at all.”

“In the past years, not only did I search through the entire sea realm time after time to find someone suitable, I even enveloped the Tian Yuan Continent, the Beast God Continent and the continent of the Hundred Races with my soul. Unfortunately, I failed to find a single person in over a hundred thousand years until you appeared.” The sea goddess' voice was strewn with emotions, filled with melancholy and a dash of excitement.

“Jian Chen, you're the only person I've discovered in all these

years who can enter that place and come out alive. This is because you cultivate along a different path. You do not comprehend the mysteries of the world, and the power you use is completely different from any of the powers known on the Tian Yuan Continent. It's a mysterious power that even I have never even heard of, much less seen. I can feel the strength and terror of your power, and it definitely won't be suppressed in there. Your body is extremely tough as well, to the point where attacks below the Third Heavenly Layer of Saint King would struggle to harm you. Even if your powers become suppressed in there, your body is tough enough to protect you. This is why only you can return from that place alive, Jian Chen. Please help me with this."

Jian Chen understood everything when he heard the sea goddess' explanation. No wonder the goddess of the Sea race would come looking for him randomly to help her. As it turned out, it was because he cultivated the Chaotic Body and was different from other people.

"Your majesty, may I ask exactly what are the items that you want me to retrieve from that place? And is my current strength enough to fulfill this request right now?" Jian Chen asked with clasped hands.

"I will tell you when the time comes exactly what you need to retrieve. Your current strength is already more than enough to enter there. The biggest threat in that place is the fact that even Saint Emperors are suppressed; the mysterious power that turns Saint Emperors into ordinary people. If it weren't for it, any 16th Star expert would be enough to enter the place without any worry."

“The energy in the sea realm experiences a worldly ebb once every ten thousand years. That place will only appear when the worldly ebb occurs. It will be the time for you to enter it when this next ebb happens. It has been close to ten thousand years since the last one, so the next ebb shouldn’t be very far away. If I estimate by looking at previous occurrences, it should occur within fifty years at most,” said the sea goddess.

Jian Chen paused for a while before continuing, “Sea goddess, I am a person who takes vengeance and returns favors. Since you have helped me so much, I will definitely do everything I can to obtain the items you need.”

“Very well, Jian Chen. Once you obtain the items, I will thank you. You will be an eternal friend of my Sea race.” The sea goddess’ voice was filled with unconcealable joy, “Jian Chen, this Octoterra Divine Hall was constructed by the Blood Demon Emperor and then modified by the Psalmic Emperor and the Octoterra Emperor. It’s become extremely powerful, if you hide in it, anything below Saint Emperor will struggle to harm you. You should go refine the divine hall now.”

“Yes, your majesty.” Jian Chen was filled with unconcealable joy. With the divine hall by his side, he no longer feared the power of the ten protector clans.

The projection of the sea goddess slowly hovered its way to the Empyrean Demon Orb. She pointed at it gently; it immediately drifted toward Jian Chen as it shone with a faint red light. She then said, “Take this orb with you. Remember, you must find a new host for it within ten years.”

“A new host within ten years? Why?” Jian Chen asked in confusion.

The sea goddess shook her head gently. “I don’t know either. This was what the Winged Tiger God told me all those years ago, and this orb originated from him as well.”

“What? The Empyrean Demon Orb came from the Winged Tiger God?” Jian Chen was absolutely astounded.

“Correct. This orb is indeed from the Winged Tiger God. Back then, he communicated with me through a mental message and got me to look after the orb for him. Once the host of the orb passes away, a new host needs to be found within ten years. He said the orb could not exist by itself for more than ten years, or he would come and flatten my sea realm,” the sea goddess’ voice became slightly forced toward the end.

Jian Chen could not help but secretly gasp when he heard about how the Winged Tiger God would flatten the sea realm. He then asked out of curiosity, “Didn’t the Winged Tiger God disappear long ago? What use would this threat be now?”

“The Winged Tiger God has indeed disappeared for many years now, but I was in debt to his guidance back then. The reason why I can still assist you today is all because of him. This is why I have always been paying some attention to the matter of the orb throughout the years, as a way to return the Winged Tiger God’s kindness,” said the sea goddess.

Jian Chen felt even more astounded. Only now did he finally learn why the sea goddess managed to survive for so long; it was all because of the Winged Tiger God. What filled him with even more disbelief was that the sea goddess was indebted to the Winged Tiger God for his guidance.

After all, the sea goddess, Winged Tiger God, Mo Tian Yun, and Aergyns were figures who possessed equal fame in the ancient times. They were the four supreme champions of the four races.

“Looks like even though all four supreme champions surpassed Saint Emperor in the ancient times, they didn’t stand on the same level,” Jian Chen thought. Meanwhile, Nubis who listened behind had already become stunned. It was a huge psychological blow to Nubis when he heard what the sea goddess had said.

No one on the Tian Yuan Continent knew about these secrets, and no one would have believed it if it did not come out of the sea goddess’ mouth.

Jian Chen slowly extended his hand toward the orb and grabbed it. He asked, “Your majesty, may I ask if there are any dangers to the host once the Empyrean Demon Orb enters their body?”

“I’ve observed it for several hundred thousand years. In all those years, the orb has traveled through all four continents, gaining several hundred hosts. However, there was nothing, where even the cultivation method and power used was the same. It should not be able to harm its host,” said the sea goddess.

Jian Chen hesitated slightly before finally placing the orb into his Space Ring. He began to consider his options with the Empyrean Demon Orb.

“Jian Chen, remember, the orb cannot exist by itself for more than ten years. It has already stayed in the Octoterra Divine Hall by itself for five years, so you need to find a new host for it in the remaining five years.” The voice of the sea goddess rang out as her figure gradually faded. When she finished speaking, she had disappeared entirely, having departed from the divine hall.

Jian Chen dismissed his thoughts quickly after the sea goddess left. He looked toward the entrance in the ceiling and flew into the center of the divine hall directly. He planned to refine the divine hall.

The speed at which Jian Chen refined the hall was miraculous. Thysnich failed to refine the whole thing even after five years, which was why he could only use a small portion of the divine hall's power. On the other hand, Jian Chen gained full control in just three months.

Jian Chen's soul had fused with the divine hall after he gained full control. It seemed to become a part of him. Not only could he clearly feel everything inside, he could even control all of its power.

Jian Chen could control the power that rivaled Saint Emperors at will in the divine hall. The only problem was that it could not be

used against people outside the divine hall.

Jian Chen could clearly feel several Class 8 Magical Beasts present in the hall. Moreover, there were two extremely huge skeletons in a hidden area of the divine hall. They were skeletons of Sea race members; an extremely pure and vast energy rippled from them.

“Skeletons of Saint Emperors.” Jian Chen immediately recognized the owners of the two skeletons. They were, without a doubt, the Psalmic Emperor and the Octoterra Emperor. This filled Jian Chen’s heart with joy.

Jian Chen left the center of the divine hall, returning to the ninth floor of the hall. Nubis had spent the entire three months waiting outside, currently cultivating quietly as he sat to one side. He did not sense Jian Chen’s appearance.

Jian Chen looked at Nubis and smiled. “Nubis, it’s time we left.”

Nubis slowly opened his eyes and revealed a sliver of excitement. “Jian Chen, you’ve successfully gained control over the hall?”

Jian Chen smiled before opening his hand. Space Rings immediately flew over from the entrance of the hall, all gathering above his palm. There were over a hundred of them.

The Space Rings belonged to the people who had died within the divine hall and had all been collected by Jian Chen through the

divine hall's power.

Nubis immediately understood that Jian Chen had refined the divine hall completely when he saw this demonstration. He immediately rejoiced, "Fantastic. With this divine hall protecting us, we have no need to fear even if we come across hall elders. My god, wasn't it horrible when we were chased around by those experts from the Serpent God Hall and the Heaven's Spirit Hall? We can't let them off now that we're strong enough. Let's go Jian Chen, let's go kill our way to the Serpent God Hall and the Heaven's Spirit Hall for revenge."

Chapter 951: Five Years

A cold light flickered through Jian Chen's eyes as soon as he heard what Nubis said. He clenched his fists tightly as he gnashed his teeth. "I will definitely go to the Serpent God Hall and the Heaven's Spirit Hall. And that divine general who took my golden silkmail; I will let them know that my things can't just be taken that easily."

"Jian Chen, do you want to directly kill our way up to the Serpent God Hall as soon as we get out?" Nubis had already begun rubbing his fists.

Jian Chen pondered for a while, before finally shaking his head. "There's no hurry. We should return to the Turtle clan first. The five years are up with the Taihong clan, so we can't delay it any further. Otherwise, I fear that things may happen to the Turtle clan. I may not actually be the ruler of the clan, but their grand elder died to save me. His final wish was to revitalize the Turtle clan, so I can't let him down. I'll go immediately to the Serpent God Hall for my things as soon as I deal with the Taihong clan. I'll end this once and for all."

Jian Chen deposited all the Space Rings in his hand into the saint artifact, before leaving the divine hall with Nubis. He did not have the time to sort through the items inside the rings; he even left the two Saint Emperor corpses where they were in the divine hall.

Outside, the experts from the three halls remained motionless. They had waited for five years already, but no one chose to leave during this time. They all wanted to see the final victor emerge

from the Octoterra Divine Hall. They also wanted to see what treasures their own clansmen had obtained from the divine hall.

In these five years, the grand divine hall hovered in place. No one could see what had happened inside. Even the great disturbances from the Emperor Armament ramming into the hall and the battle with Thysnich toward the end did not carry through to the outside.

“It has been five years since they’ve entered, yet no one has come out. Something seems off.” A similar opinion would emerge from the crowd from time to time. A hundred and sixty people had entered at the very beginning, yet no one had emerged during all this time. Many people felt suspicious over this, because there would definitely be people who would emerge from time to time if it was an ordinary treasure hunt.

“I wonder what the situation is like inside. Is Jian Chen still fine? Has he obtained full control over the divine hall? He’s someone that the hall master treats with importance, so hopefully no accidents happen to him,” thought hall elder Hong.

Another hall elder of the Sea Goddess Hall stood beside him. She was a woman with a blurred appearance and a staff in hand. She seemed very similar to Atlantis, the strongest below Saint Emperor, but she was a different person.

She floated silently in mid-air. Her eyes contained no emotions as she stared at the divine hall. She said nothing. She had remained quiet like this for all five years.

“Hm? Look, someone’s come out.” A cry of surprise rang out at this very moment. With the voice, everyone’s eyes lit up and they immediately cast their attention toward the people exiting.

Two figures floated high up near the Octoterra Divine Hall. Their sudden appearances did not produce any signs of movement. Even the six hall elders present had no idea when they had appeared.

“Jian Chen. It’s actually Jian Chen. He has come out from the divine hall,” murmured elder Hong as he noticed the two of them at first glance.

It was Jian Chen and Nubis who had appeared silently above the divine hall.

The eyes of the woman beside elder Hong narrowed and she finally spoke, “No, their strength has increased drastically. They’re both 15th Star experts now.” The woman’s voice possessed some surprise.

Elder Hong was surprised when he heard that. “You’re right, their presences have indeed become much stronger. They’re both of the 15th Star now. They must have gained a lot from this journey into the divine hall. I just wonder where the others are.”

Jian Chen and Nubis gazed calmly at the experts from the three factions, before flying toward the side of the Sea Goddess Hall.

“Why have only the two of you returned? What about the others...”

“What happened in the Octoterra Divine Hall? Why did it take five years, and why have only two people have emerged? Where are the others...”

“Who obtained the legacy of the Octoterra Emperor in the end...”

...

The people from the Serpent God Hall and the Heaven’s Spirit Hall constantly asked questions, wanting to know what had happened inside the divine hall and the predicaments of their people.

The two of them paid no attention to the questions and arrived directly before elder Hong. “We greet elder Hong!”

Elder Hong carried a faint smile as he constantly observed Jian Chen. He said, “I can already tell that the two of you have probably benefited greatly from the Octoterra Divine Hall. Your strength has actually increased by this much. Jian Chen, have you obtained the legacy of the Octoterra Emperor?”

Although elder Hong spoke very softly and everyone else was quite far away, they all heard it clearly. Immediately, everyone’s attention gathered on the two of them, including the hall elders from the other halls.

Jian Chen shook his head gently, “Elder Hong, I’ll hide nothing. I have not obtained the legacy. The Octoterra Divine Hall was actually all a trick, all a scheme.”

Elder Hong’s face tensed up, “Explain.”

After a slight pause, Jian Chen continued, “Does elder Hong know about the Blood Demon Emperor?”

“The Blood Demon Emperor! You mean that Blood Demon Emperor that fought the three hall masters several tens of thousands of years ago?” Elder Hong was shocked. He stared at Jian Chen fixedly, already understanding some things.

“Correct, that Blood Demon Emperor. The Octoterra Divine Hall originally belonged to him and it was called the Blood Demon Divine Hall. When he fought the three hall masters in outer space, his soul was not wiped up. It had fled into the Blood Demon Divine Hall and hid well. Afterward, he devoured the souls of both the Psalmic Emperor and the Octoterra Emperor who took the divine hall for themselves. The Blood Demon Emperor changed the divine hall into a trap. He then spread the word to draw everyone in, using the traps he had set up to kill them all and revive his weakened soul through their blood. He wanted to take our bodies and come back. As a result, only the two of us are still alive from the initial hundred and sixty,” explained Jian Chen.

“How is that possible? How is the Octoterra Divine Hall a trap of the Blood Demon Emperor...”

“The Octoterra Emperor and the Psalmic Emperor were both Saint Emperors, so how did they get devoured by the Blood Demon Emperor...”

“Emperors only have a lifespan of ten thousand years, while the Blood Demon Emperor was an emperor from several tens of thousands of years ago. How could he survive for so long as just a soul...”

“Don’t listen to him, everyone. These are all lies he has spun...”

The people immediately fell into a great uproar after they heard what Jian Chen had said. In that moment, everyone struggled to remain calm, including the six hall elders.

The Octoterra Divine Hall was actually a scheme by the Blood Demon Emperor, a scheme for revival. Everyone struggled to believe this.

This was because the Blood Demon Emperor was infamously vicious several tens of thousands of years ago, yet emperors could only live for ten thousand years. The Blood Demon Emperor had not died even after so much time. This was undoubtedly equivalent to a great bomb dropped on them.

“Ruler of the Turtle clan, why has everyone else died except for you two if you say it’s a scheme for the Blood Demon Emperor’s revival? Perhaps you possess the power to be victorious over the Blood Demon Emperor’s soul?” asked an old man. His voice was

powerful. He was a hall elder of the Heaven's Spirit Hall.

“Correct. The soul of the Blood Demon Emperor was indeed felled by my hands,” Jian Chen hid nothing and spoke nonchalantly.

“Where's the ruler of our Serpent God Hall, Thysnich?” asked a hall elder of the Serpent God Hall. His complexion was very ugly.

“Thysnich also died inside.” Jian Chen stared coldly at the hall elder. He had no good impressions of the Serpent God Hall.

“Impossible. That is impossible. Thysnich possesses an emperor's power, which was deposited into him by the hall master. How could he have fallen in the divine hall? You're lying!” the hall elder yelled out. His face was extremely sunken and he seemed terrifying.

“I've already told you the truth. Whether you believe it or not is up to you.” Jian Chen glanced at the people from the two halls. He felt no fear. Afterward, the huge divine hall quickly began to shrink at a visible rate with a thought of his. It reached the size of a palm before flying into Jian Chen's hand. It had become a tiny divine hall.

“How is that possible!? He has gained control over the Octoterra Divine Hall...”

“The divine hall has actually fallen into his hands. It's now in his

control...”

Jian Chen’s action caused another series of cries. In that moment, everyone tossed the fates of their people to the back of their mind, all staring at the divine hall in Jian Chen’s hand with illuminated eyes. They were filled with unconcealable greed and even the various experts of the Serpent God Hall were the same.

“Good, good, good. Jian Chen, you really have gained control over the divine hall,” elder Hong chuckled. His eyes were filled with admiration.

Jian Chen sneered when he noticed everyone’s gazes. He lifted up the divine hall in his hand and called out, “Come get it if you want the divine hall.”

Chapter 952: Submission of the Taihong Clan

Jian Chen sneered when he noticed everyone's gazes. He lifted up the divine hall in his hand and called out, "Come get it if you want the divine hall."

Many of their faces immediately sank. Fury boiled in their hearts when they saw how arrogantly Jian Chen behaved, especially with his words that completely looked down on them.

Without exception, all the people who had come here were the supreme experts of various tribes in the sea realm. Every single one of them was an old monster who had lived for thousands of years and placed their dignity on a pedestal. How could they endure the reckless behavior of a junior?

"How dare you look down on me! I'll teach you a good lesson in the place of your seniors. I'll teach you what it means when they say there are always people better than you out there," a wrinkly, hunchbacked old man immediately roared out. He charged toward Jian Chen with lightning speed from the Serpent God Hall's side. He struck toward Jian Chen with his skinny hands coated in a powerful energy

This old man was a 16th Star Seasoul Warrior, someone who had reached the Fifth Heavenly Layer of Saint King. He was quite a famous person within the territory of the Serpent God Hall.

The hall elders of the Serpent God Hall did not stop him. Instead,

they glared at the two hall elders from the Sea Goddess Hall. A tremendous aura secretly radiated from them, locking up the two hall elders.

Elder Hong's face sank as his eyes became sharp as well. He stared back at the two hall elders with a piercing gaze.

The woman beside him also looked at back them with shining eyes, staring coldly at the two hall elders. Killing intent bubbled in her eyes.

The two hall elders of the Sea Goddess Hall were secretly busy with the hall elders of the Serpent God Hall. If they struck out to help Jian Chen, they would definitely have to face the fierce attacks from the other two hall elders.

Jian Chen stared coldly at the old man who charged toward him. He sneered, "Come at me." With a flip of his hand, the Emperor Armament appeared. He poured Chaotic Force into it, and a brilliant dark light immediately began to shine from the Emperor Armament. An aura of destruction filled the surrounding space, causing everyone to react and their expressions to change.

The expression of the person who had charged toward Jian Chen also changed drastically. He felt frightened by the power of the energy that had erupted from the Emperor Armament. It would definitely be an attack he could not match up to.

"How is this possible? How can his strength become so great? What is this power? It's terrifying." The old man was shocked.

Just as he wanted to dodge, the Emperor Armament stabbed toward him as a streak of dark light.

“F*ck it!” With no other choice, a sliver of determination flashed across the old man’s eyes. A spear suddenly appeared in his hand and he struck out as hard as he could to meet the Emperor Armament.

Boom!

The Emperor Armament and the spear collided violently. Jian Chen’s strike was as powerful as one from the Seventh Heavenly Layer of Saint King, while the old man was only of the Fifth Heavenly Layer. He could not contend against it, immediately flying backward as he spewed blood. His face paled, he was now heavily injured.

“This is what it means by there are always people better than you out there. Member of the Serpent God Hall, I will not be letting you go since you attacked me,” Jian Chen said coldly. He glared at the old man as he flew backward. Killing intent surged in Jian Chen’s eyes. He chopped out from afar, wanting to kill off the old man completely.

A tremendous sword Qi shot out from the Emperor Armament, transforming into a black dragon that targeted the old man. Its power seemed to be able to destroy the surroundings. Wherever it passed by, the space would crack, while the terrifying ripples of energy made the complexion of everyone vary.

The old man's eyes narrowed; his already-pale face paled some more. His eyes were filled with despair. He was heavily injured, so he could no longer dodge this threatening sword Qi. If he was struck by another attack like that, he would be left barely alive even if he avoided death.

“Stop!” At this very moment, a heavy voice rang out. A hall elder from the Serpent God Hall moved. He waved his sleeve gently, and a tremendous power immediately appeared. It collided with Jian Chen's sword Qi.

With a boom, his sword Qi was personally blocked by the hall elder. The tremendous power had disappeared with the sword Qi, nullifying each other.

Jian Chen stared at the hall elder coldly for some time, before saying to the old man, “I'll spare your life this time, but you won't be this lucky next time.” He looked around once again as he said that, before calling out, “Come at me if you want the divine hall.”

This time, the surroundings fell into an utter silence. No one dared to speak out any more, while everyone's gazes toward Jian Chen had undergone an overwhelming change. The power that could casually injure a 16th Star expert heavily frightened many people.

Right now, Jian Chen possessed the strength to keep the divine hall.

“Good, good, good, Jian Chen. You really do make me more and

more surprised. Never did I think that you'd actually obtain the divine hall, you've also found an Emperor Armament that was left behind by a human emperor when they passed away from old age. What terrifying strength you have when you use the Emperor Armament," chuckled elder Hong. His words were full of praise.

The faces of the two hall elders from the Serpent God Hall darkened greatly. Their hatred for Jian Chen had just peaked. Before, Jian Chen had stolen the Abyssal Crystal from them and fled to the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall, yet right now he made them seem pathetic. The two of them felt rather ashamed.

But most importantly, they suspected that Thysnich had been slain by Jian Chen. Thysnich was the ruler of the Serpent Dragon clan. He was treated with great importance by the hall master, where he had even been bestowed some the emperor's power. His death was a huge loss to the entire clan because it was extremely possible for Thysnich to become an emperor with his talent.

"Let's go!" A hall master from the Serpent God Hall called out, before leaving with his group first. He no longer bothered with anything else, because he knew very well that the current Jian Chen was probably no longer the weakling that could be harassed by them.

The people from the Heaven's Spirit Hall and the Sea Goddess Hall left at the same time with the Serpent God Hall's departure. However, everyone else other than Jian Chen and Nubis possessed a horrible countenance.

They had waited arduously for five years, originally believing

that their own clansmen could bring out some treasures from the divine hall to strengthen their clans. However, never did they imagine that the outcome would be like this. Only two people had returned from the hundred and sixty that entered.

Although they all knew that there were definitely many treasures from the divine hall, none of them dared to ask Jian Chen for it. This was because Jian Chen's strength was already at a level that they feared.

Jian Chen followed elder Hong and the others back to the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall. He rejected elder Hong's invitation to the hall, directly making way toward the Turtle clan with Nubis.

The five years which Jian Chen and the Taihong clan had agreed on had just passed several days ago. Naturally, the ancestor of the Taihong clan had brought a group of experts to the Turtle clan and was currently waiting there.

“Don't worry. The five years may be up, but we won't trouble you. I know the ruler of the Turtle clan has yet to come out from the Octoterra Divine Hall, so we'll just wait here until he does come out. But if he dies in there, it would be your loss in our agreement, and the Turtle clan will belong to the Taihong clan.” The ancestor of the Taihong clan stood in the square of the Turtle clan with crossed arms. He was calm, as he was filled with confidence. He believed that he would be able to achieve victory in the agreement he had with Jian Chen. This was because he just did not believe that Jian Chen could reach a level where he could go toe-to-toe with him in just a short five years.

The Taihong clan did not trouble the Turtle clan. Their objective was to bring the Turtle clan under their control. Right now, they were more likely to win the hearts of the people if they acted more amiable. After all, the second and third elders of the clan had already reached an agreement with them. As such, with the persuasion from the two respected elders, they would face far fewer obstacles in the submission of the Turtle clan.

The experts of the Turtle clan gathered around the people of the Taihong clan. Even the second and third elders were present.

“The magnanimity of the Taihong clan really puts us to shame. We cannot be people who break our word. It doesn’t matter the reasons why the ruler cannot fulfill his word, he has already broken it and embarrassed the entire clan. I will now announce that if the esteemed ruler does not return in three days, it will be our loss. We will submit to the Taihong clan according to the previous agreement and become a part of them,” the second elder said righteously.

“The second elder is correct. We may have waned, but we are still an ancient clan with a lengthy history. How can we not keep our word? I agree with the second elder’s suggestion. If the ruler does not return in three days, we will become a part of the Taihong clan,” the third elder said as well.

The members of the Turtle clan all looked at each other, but they could not find ways to rebuke. Although the second and third elder’s suggestion favored the Taihong clan, it was not without reason.

“Second elder, third elder, when did the fate of the Turtle clan fall into your hands?” A loud voice rang out from the air at this very moment. The sound echoed everywhere, so it was impossible to determine its origins.

“Ruler! It’s the ruler’s voice! The ruler has returned...”

“Our ruler has returned...”

Many people realized the owner of the voice and rejoiced, while the faces of the second and third elders darkened.

Two fingers cut through the sky like comets, flying over with lightning speed. In the end, they slowly descended under the welcoming gazes of the entire clan. They were Jian Chen and Nubis.

Jian Chen and Nubis had their presences retracted, so their strengths were hidden. They seemed like two ordinary people. No one could tell just how powerful they were.

Chapter 953: Trial of the Two Elders

Jian Chen's sudden return stunned the ancestor of the Taihong clan slightly, but he returned to his senses quickly. He laughed aloud and said, "Speak of the devil. I wonder if the ruler has been well on his trip to the Octoterra Divine Hall?"

Jian Chen and Nubis stood five meters away from him. Jian Chen looked at him calmly and said, "I have no need to tell you about these matters. Tai Dou, the five years are up now. It's about time we put an end to the matter between us."

Jian Chen had immediately agitated the other experts of the Taihong clan because he called the ancestor's name directly. A Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler pointed at him and called out, "How dare you call the ancestor directly by name! Are you sick of living? Why don't you hurry up and apologize? Considering the fact that your Turtle clan will soon become a subsidiary of the Taihong clan, I'll forgive your disrespect if you apologize."

Currently, everyone from the Taihong clan's group had begun to treat the Turtle clan as a subsidiary of their own clan long ago. Although Jian Chen was a ruler, he was still not worthy of any respect in their eyes. Because to them, the Turtle clan was full of people with tough defense but weak attack. They could not pose much threat.

Jian Chen's eyes grew cold, but before he could do anything, Nubis had already charged at the person in the form of a golden streak. Before he could even react, Nubis used his hand to impale the Taihong Clan's expert through the chest, digging out his

bloody heart.

“Argh!” the person shrieked miserably. He was filled with agony. Although it was not enough to end his life, the pain of having his heart dug out was unbearable.

Nubis crushed the heart in his hand as he stared at the person coldly. “This is what you get for insulting my brother. Next time, I, the great Nubis, will be taking your life.” Nubis was cold and did not show any respect toward the Taihong clan.

The atmosphere immediately became stifled after what happened. Everyone gathered their attention on Nubis’ bloody hand, immediately revealing deep dread.

The second and third elders were also shocked by Nubis’ ruthlessness. He definitely was both extremely powerful and courageous to dig out someone’s heart right before the ancestor of the Taihong clan.

What shocked them even more was Nubis’ strength that he had suddenly exploded with. It was no weaker than their own strength.

Tai Dou turned pale-white. He could not tell Nubis’ strength before, and never thought that he would suddenly move against one of his clansmen. This was why he had been careless, allowing Nubis to injure one of his people right before him.

“Sire, you do talk big. Show me just what you are capable of to

act so brazenly before me,” growled the ancestor. Sharp killing intent immediately appeared in his eyes.

“Tai Dou, I am your opponent.” Jian Chen blocked Nubis and stared emotionlessly at the ancestor.

Tai Dou’s politeness had already completely disappeared. He sneered, “Fine then. Ruler of the Turtle clan, let me subdue you first before I teach that arrogant brat a lesson.”

Jian Chen sneered as well, “Tai Dou, don’t forget about our agreement. If I lose this battle, then the Turtle clan will belong to your Taihong clan, but if you lose, it will be the other way around.” Jian Chen took to the skies as soon as he finished speaking.

“Alright, if I lose, my Taihong clan will devote themselves to the Turtle clan. But ruler of the Turtle clan, do you really think I can lose?” Tai Dou was filled with confidence. He knew Jian Chen’s strength extremely well. Even if he had entered the Octoterra Divine Hall, it was impossible for him to be at more than the 14th Star. At most, he would be at the peak of the 14th Star. He refused to believe that Jian Chen had reached a level where he could go toe-to-toe with himself in these five short years.

In order to not injure the people of the clan, Jian Chen and Tai Dou took the battlefield several dozen kilometers away. They stopped above a mountain range, while a number of experts from both clans hurried over to watch from the surroundings.

“Ruler of the Turtle clan, I won’t bully you, so I’ll give you ten moves. Go ahead,” Tai Dou said arrogantly as he hung in the air with his arms crossed.

Nubis could not help but laugh aloud when he heard everything that Tai Dou had said. Nubis said, “Jian Chen, you hear that? He said he wants to give you ten moves first. You can’t disappoint him.”

Jian Chen’s lips curled with scorn as he looked at Tai Dou with some disdain. “Tai Dou, you still don’t have the right to receive ten moves from me. I only need a single strike from my sword to heavily injure you.” As he spoke, a vast presence surged from Jian Chen. It was the power of a Third Heavenly Layer Saint King. At the same time, the Emperor Armament also appeared in his hand. It began to shine brightly with dark light, flooding the surrounding space with an aura of destruction. It formed a tremendous pressure on the surroundings, causing drastic changes in the expressions of the observers.

In that moment, everyone’s gaze toward Jian Chen underwent some changes, including Tai Dou. Their eyes were filled with deep fear and disbelief.

Jian Chen raised the Emperor Armament with his right hand, and it immediately began to radiate with a towering sword Qi. He directly chopped out from several hundred meters away, shooting out a powerful sword Qi in the form of a black streak of light. It flew toward Tai Dou.

Tai Dou became unprecedentedly stern. He could clearly sense

the power of the strike and did not dare to hesitate at all. He immediately forced out all his power, using World Force to condense a three-meter-wide circular shield to block the incoming sword Qi.

Boom! As soon as the shield came into contact with the sword Qi, it shattered loudly while the sword Qi continued onward with no decrease in force. It continued toward Tai Dou, passing through his chest.

“Argh!” Tai Dou howled painfully. He could no longer remain in the air, falling out of the sky and slamming heavily into the ground.

Everyone became stunned with this, especially the small group of people from the Tai Hong clan. They were all absolutely dumbfounded. Tai Dou was the most powerful person in their clan, yet he had just been defeated so easily with a single strike. They struggled to believe that this unimaginable matter had just occurred.

The experts of the Turtle clan, including the second and third elders, all became wide-eyed as well. They stared in disbelief, all struggling to accept that this had happened.

The ancestor of the Taihong clan was a 16th Star expert, yet he could not even receive a single attack from the ruler of the Turtle clan. They all felt deeply shocked.

Jian Chen descended and arrived before him. “Do you give in?”

Tai Dou was pale as he stood up with difficulty. He looked at Jian Chen, still shaken badly, while deep dread lingered in his eyes. He said gloomily, “I’ve lost. From today onward, my Taihong clan will belong to the Turtle clan.”

“Let’s return then,” Jian Chen said to Tai Dou. Afterward, he signaled to everyone else, returning to the Turtle clan.

The ruler’s victory over the ancestor of the Taihong clan spread through the entire clan very quickly, causing them all to leap in joy. Triumph was present everywhere, but there were even more people who discussed just what strength the ruler now possessed.

The upper echelon of the Turtle clan gathered in the hall with the people of the Taihong clan and Jian Chen. Jian Chen sat on the throne as he stared downward sharply. He possessed an aura that could not be denied.

“Tai Dou, tell everyone what relationship the second and the third elder have with your Taihong clan. Why do they always speak for you?” Jian Chen stared fixedly at Tai Dou below.

The expressions of the two elders changed when they heard that. They immediately knew that Jian Chen was about to take action against the two of them. They could not help but regret that they had once opposed Jian Chen in everything. But it was all too late now.

The second elder immediately stood up to explain, “Ruler, please

do not make baseless assumptions. Correct, the two of us have indeed done a few things that made the ruler unhappy, but we were completely thinking for the clan regarding the matters with the Taihong clan. We had no other intentions. It was impossible for us to contend with the Taihong clan with our strength back then. If we waged war, the Turtle clan would suffer greatly for sure.”

“The second elder is right. When we gave in to the Taihong clan before, we were completely thinking of the Turtle clan. We had no other intentions. Please look into the very details of this, ruler. Please do not put innocent people in the wrong,” the third elder explained as well. They no longer dared to speak to Jian Chen like before, now possessing much more courtesy.

Jian Chen paid no attention to the two of them and asked Tai Dou, “Tai Dou, explain what this is all about. I hope you do not lie, because you should know the consequences.”

Tai Dou hesitated slightly before standing up from his seat. He clasped his hands toward Jian Chen and said, “Replying to the ruler, the second and third elders have been bribed by our Taihong clan several years ago, and have already reached an agreement with our Taihong clan. As soon as the grand elder passed away, they would immediately lead the Turtle clan to become a part of the Taihong clan.”

“What! The second and third elders were actually spies. They’re traitors of the Turtle clan!” Discussions immediately broke out in the hall. All of them were greatly shocked.

“You lie. Ruler, don’t listen to Tai Dou’s lies. He wants us to turn on each other and get the Turtle clan to infight.”

“Tai Dou is lying. You cannot believe a single word of his.”

The second and third elder began to quibble, unwilling to admit it even upon death. They knew what type of punishment was in for them if they were convicted.

The Turtle clan had existed for many, many years. It possessed an extremely strict set of rules, and the outcome for betrayal was recorded clearly within it.

Tai Dou pulled out a piece of beast leather and said, “Ruler, this was the agreement my clan had with the elders back then. The soul imprints are still present on it. It’s definitely true.”

Jian Chen waved his hand and the beast leather immediately flew into his grasps. Once he read the entire thing, his face immediately sunk. He tossed it to the people below and said, “Everyone have a look!”

The beast leather was passed along through everyone. Soon enough, everyone had read it, and they all revealed ugly expressions soon after.

The second and third elder both paled, while despair flooded their eyes.

A Saint Ruler walked up at this moment and clasped his hands toward Jian Chen. “Ruler, I am the elder in charge of the law. The second and third elder have been working with outsiders and should suffer the punishment for treachery. They cannot be forgiven, and should be put to death on the spot.”

Chapter 954: Visiting the Serpent God Hall (One)

A Saint Ruler walked up at this moment and clasped his hands toward Jian Chen. “Ruler, I am the elder in charge of the law. The second and third elder have been working with outsiders and should suffer the punishment of treachery. They cannot be forgiven, and should be put to death on the spot.”

“You’re right. The two elders have worked with outsiders in an attempt to commit detrimental actions to the clan. They have committed an unforgivable crime, and should be put to death on the spot.” Agreement immediately rang through the entire hall as several members of the Turtle clan added.

Although the two elders were well-respected figures in the clan, their actions had agitated everyone.

The faces of the two elders became extremely ugly. They looked at each other and knew that there was nothing they could do. They immediately leaped out of the hall in flight.

Jian Chen suddenly stood up from the throne and his Emperor Armament instantly appeared in his hand. He chopped out twice toward the two people. The sword Qi shot out like a streak of light, overcoming the limitations of space and catching up with the two elders instantly. It passed through their heads, wiping out their souls and killing them off entirely.

“Do you see? This is the outcome for traitors.” Jian Chen put his

sword away and said coldly as he stood dead-straight. His sharp gaze swept past everyone below. All the people who met his eyes lowered their heads involuntarily.

“Tai Dou, once your injuries heal, immediately return and give out the news that the Taihong clan is now a part of the Turtle clan,” ordered Jian Chen.

“Yes, ruler!” Tai Dou replied with clasped hands.

A Saint Ruler of the Turtle clan stood up and clasped his hands courteously toward Jian Chen. “Ruler, many of the crystal mines that once belonged to our clan have been taken away by other organizations. We hope that the ruler can lead us as we take them back.”

Jian Chen nodded and then looked toward Tai Dou. “Tai Dou, after you deal with the matters at the Taihong clan, immediately lead the experts of the Turtle clan to take back all the crystal mines that were taken away from us. If you encounter anyone you cannot defeat, report back to me immediately.”

“Your wish is my command,” replied Tai Dou. He had already sworn a blood oath before to bow down to the Turtle clan, so he was completely loyal to Jian Chen now.

Jian Chen and Nubis both went into seclusion after dealing with all the matters of the Turtle clan. He passed full authority to manage the clan to the other members of the upper echelon.

A golden tower currently floated inside a heavily-guarded room of the Turtle clan. Jian Chen and Nubis were currently combing through the Space Rings they had collected from the divine hall.

There were a lot of things in the Space Rings, and some Space Rings even hid more Space Rings. This led to the initial hundred-odd to increase to over four hundred rings.

Jian Chen and Nubis worked for more than ten days before sorting through everything in the rings. Not only did they receive a great amount of wealth, everything from the Octoterra Divine Hall ended up in their hands.

They gathered all the pieces of the Tian Level Saint Technique stone plate, as well as the Octoterra Emperor's comprehensions on cultivation and his diary. They also assembled a cultivation method.

Jian Chen and Nubis looked through the diary and comprehensions of the late Octoterra Emperor. Although it did not increase their strength, they still benefited greatly and broadened their horizons.

The diary of the Octoterra Emperor described the cultivation beyond Saint Emperor, as well as how to break through. However, it was filled with pity.

“Emperors gather origin energy as power and use it to cultivate. In the current world, there is no more origin energy left. The only way is to convert it from absorbing vast amounts of energy of the

world. Progress is slow, and it is completely impossible to breakthrough within the lifespan of an emperor. The four supreme experts of the ancient times will never be able to appear again.”

Jian Chen knew that there was no origin energy in the world, and it was all due to the Lunastron Pit on the Dragon Island. All of the origin energy had been sucked away by the Yinyang Saint Rock, leaving nothing behind. This was why there were so few Saint Emperors now.

Jian Chen could vaguely guess that the Saint Emperors now would absorb tremendous quantities of energy to slowly refine into origin energy, and hence strengthen themselves from what the Octoterra Emperor had written. However, the progress would be extremely slow, so it was impossible to reach the peak with the ten-thousand-year lifespan of Saint Emperors, making it impossible to break through.

Finally, the cultivation method they had assembled was the Octoterra Emperor's cultivation method. However, Jian Chen and Nubis could not use the cultivation methods of the Sea race, so all they could do in the end was find Xie Wang, letting him take advantage of it for free.

Xie Wang was naturally ecstatic when he obtained the cultivation method. He immediately went off to cultivate once he obtained it. Although it could not guarantee his breakthrough to Saint King, it possessed a few secret techniques of the Sea race. His battle prowess would definitely increase drastically once he grasped them.

Jian Chen could not try to comprehend the Tian Level Saint Technique on the stone plate, because it was only suitable for members of the Sea race. They would need to transform into their original form to cast it, so it was unsuitable for Jian Chen.

However, Nubis began to comprehend it with great interest. As a magical beast, he had almost fulfilled the requirements to use it. He did not wish to master it, only to comprehend it and use it as a reference to modify it accordingly.

Other than those items, there were mountainous piles of crystal coins, large quantities of divine quality crystals, and high class monster cores. It replenished all the supplies Jian Chen had consumed to break through to the third layer of the Chaotic Body, which put Jian Chen in a good mood for quite some time. If he refined all of it, it was enough to strengthen his chaotic neidan even though it was not enough for him to reach the fourth layer.

The few Class 8 Magical Beasts living in the divine hall were not put to death by Jian Chen. He left them alive, planning to turn them into the guardian beasts of the divine hall. He divided up the divine hall to give them a region where they could live.

Jian Chen left the artifact space by himself after dealing with all the matters. Nubis and Xie Wang stayed behind. One was comprehending a Tian Level Saint Technique, while the other was studying the cultivation method of the Octoterra Emperor.

When Jian Chen re-emerged in the Turtle clan, the Taihong clan had already formally become a part of them. Tai Dou had also gathered a group of experts from the two clans, beginning to take

back the crystal mines that were once theirs.

Jian Chen did not stay at the clan for long. He handed over some matters before leaving, first visiting the grand elder's grave then making his way directly for the Sea Goddess Hall.

A humongous and majestic divine hall hung in the center of the Sea Goddess Hall's territory. It was where all the powers of the territory were concentrated, as well as where countless experts gathered.

Jian Chen entered the divine hall without any obstructions with his guest's medallion. He found hall elder Hong, and began conversing with him, before reaching the main topic. "Elder Hong, I wish to see the hall master. I hope you can pass on the word."

Elder Hong paused slightly, before he agreed and said, "Alright, allow me to notify her majesty." He did not ask why. He slowly closed his eyes as he spoke.

Jian Chen sat at ease opposite of elder Hong. He was not surprised at all.

A while later, elder Hong slowly opened his eyes. He said, "Her majesty has agreed. Come with me, I'll take you there."

Chapter 955: Visiting the Serpent God Hall (Two)

Jian Chen followed elder Hong into the very depths of the divine hall. In the end, he arrived at the grand hall, before directly entering through the door.

The hall was splendid inside, though it was empty without anyone present. Jian Chen and elder Hong arrived at the very center and the elder said to Jian Chen, “Jian Chen, wait here.”

“Yes, elder Hong,” replied Jian Chen. He looked around curiously.

Elder Hong backed out and the heavy door was closed once again. The hall immediately fell into a deathly silence.

Jian Chen stood quietly by himself as he waited. He was calm and composed, without any signs of anxiety.

A while later, Jian Chen’s eyes suddenly narrowed. He turned around and saw that a girl had appeared at some unknown time on the throne that was empty before. She had appeared with no prior signs, preventing Jian Chen from sensing her arrival.

The woman seemed to be in her twenties. She was extremely beautiful, to the point where even alluring was not enough to describe her. Her beauty was indescribable, so pretty that people would forget to breathe, so pretty that it could make all the men in

the world go crazy.

She was like a flower fairy that belonged in the heavens, consecrated, noble and inviolable. She did not belong in the mortal realm.

The woman wore a blue dress as her jade-green hair carried a faint blue tint. It ran down her shoulders and back naturally like a waterfall. Currently, she sat with her legs crossed on the throne as she stared at Jian Chen with her piercing eyes.

Even with Jian Chen's mental fortitude, he could not help but become dazed. Probably only the Heavenly Enchantress could rival her beauty out of all the women he had seen.

"Is this the appearance of the hall master?" Jian Chen thought. This was the first time he had seen the supreme beauty of the Saint Emperor.

Jian Chen returned to his senses very quickly, immediately clasping his hands courteously toward her. "Jian Chen greets the hall master."

"Jian Chen, why do you seek me?" the hall master asked. Her gentle and moving voice was also filled with ruthless coldness, without the slightest emotion whatsoever. Her gaze toward Jian Chen was emotionless as well, like stagnant water.

"Hall master, I want to go to the Serpent God Hall and the

Heaven's Spirit Hall to take revenge and take back was mine," said Jian Chen.

The hall master replied only after some time, "You want me to keep the other two hall masters busy?"

"Correct, that is my intentions. I hope the hall master can assist me," said Jian Chen. He needed to keep the two Saint Emperors busy before he made his way to the other two halls, or even with the Octoterra Divine Hall and the saint artifact protecting him, it was unlikely he would be able to leave alive.

Saint Emperors could destroy both the saint artifact and the Octoterra Divine Hall.

The hall master hesitated slightly. "People of the halls cannot cross the borders on their whim, but you're only a guest of the Sea Goddess Hall. You're not a member, so you can proceed to the territories of the other two halls as you wish. When you go, pass it off as taking revenge. It's best if you don't impinge on the dignity of the two other halls, so that their hall elders don't move out. I will help you keep the two hall masters busy. You can go."

"I thank your majesty." Jian Chen clasped his hands in gratitude as his face lit up with joy. With the hall master keeping them busy secretly, he no longer needed to worry.

Qing Yixuan sat on her bed in a side hall within the divine hall as she cultivated. In that moment, her face twitched and she slowly opened her eyes. With a thought, she removed the barrier around

the hall and said, “Come in.”

Very quickly, a young man in the uniform of an emissary made his way in. He clasped his hands at Qing Yixuan, “Esteemed senior Qing Yixuan, the person you have told me to keep an eye out for has appeared. He has just come to the divine hall and is currently making his way toward the center.”

A gleam of light flashed through her eyes and her face immediately became cold. She said, “I see. You can go.”

“Yes, senior,” the emissary replied courteously before slowly making his way out.

With the emissary’s departure, Qing Yixuan stood up from the bed and gnashed her teeth. “I never thought you would come out of the Octoterra Divine Hall alive. The map fragment may be gone now, but I have to get you back for the shame you caused me all those years ago. Now that the old turtle is no longer by your side, I’d like to see who will protect you now. Once I capture you, I’ll torture you well and vent my hatred.” Qing Yixuan immediately made her way out of her hall.

Jian Chen left the hall master’s hall before going to elder Hong’s place. He sat for a while before leaving hurriedly, directly making his way to the territory of the Serpent God Hall.

Jian Chen flew against the wild wind, traveling several tens of thousands of kilometers from the central hall very quickly. He arrived above a desolate mountain range.

Jian Chen stopped there, standing dead-straight on the highest peak. His lips curled into a jeering smile. “Qing Yixuan, I wonder when are you going to stop following me.”

A severe killing intent suddenly appeared, filling up the surroundings as soon as Jian Chen finished speaking. A sword that shone with an azure light abruptly appeared behind him, stabbing toward Jian Chen with lightning speed.

Jian Chen snorted gently. He did not even turn around as the Emperor Armament appeared in his hand, immediately stabbing out backward.

Ding! The sword from behind was parried by the Emperor Armament with a crisp sound. The armament had knocked aside the sword.

“An Emperor Armament! It’s an Emperor Armament! Impossible! How is this possible!? How do you have an Emperor Armament!?” A shocked voice rang out from behind. Qing Yixuan appeared out of nowhere. Right now, her small mouth was agape as she stared at the weapon in Jian Chen’s hand.

Jian Chen slowly turned around and said, “Senior Qing Yixuan, I’m no longer a person that you can bully at will now. My strength has increased greatly, and I have obtained an Emperor Armament. You are no longer my opponent.”

Qing Yixuan became grim. She looked toward Jian Chen in envy

and jealousy as she said through gritted teeth, “Brat, I didn’t think you’d be so lucky to obtain an Emperor Armament. You must have obtained it from the Octoterra Divine Hall.”

Jian Chen casually waved the Emperor Armament and smiled. “Correct. I indeed obtained this from the Octoterra Divine Hall. I need to thank senior Qing Yixuan for your map fragment. If it weren't for that, I would not have been able to enter the divine hall, much less obtain this Emperor Armament.”

Qing Yixuan’s eyes immediately burned with fury as she thought about the scene when the map fragment had been stolen from her. Her gaze made her seem like she wanted to eat Jian Chen’s flesh and drink his blood.

Jian Chen also thought back to when he had stolen the map fragment from her when he saw how she behaved. A sliver of awkwardness appeared on his face and he smiled gently. “Senior, I have offended you over the matter before. I will definitely make it up to you in the future. I have matters to attend to today, so I cannot stick around. I hope senior does not follow me.” Jian Chen turned around and continued on his way after throwing that down.

Qing Yixuan hovered in the air with a pale face. Her chest heaved heavily from anger as her teeth screeched from being grinded. Her hatred for Jian Chen had peaked just now but she had no way to vent it, which made it even worse.

She could already tell from the strike before that she was no longer Jian Chen’s opponent. He was not the weakling that had

been chased everywhere by her before.

“Argh!” Qing Yixuan howled loudly at the sky. Her voice was so loud that it echoed in the surroundings like a clap of thunder, causing the sky to rumble. All she could do now was scream to vent her grievances.

Huang Luan currently sat uneasily in the center of a secret room below the Huanggu clan as she constantly looked around.

“I’ve sensed problems with master’s cultivation method long ago. I sent a message to the ancestor several days ago, so why hasn’t he come to pick me up yet?” Huang Luan thought. Her face possessed a sliver of worry and anxiety.

At this very moment, the door to the room suddenly opened. The ancestor of the Huanggu clan walked in.

“I greet master.” Huang Luan immediately stood up and greeted him.

The ancestor’s eyes flickered with a glimmer of light as he observed Huang Luan closely. He smiled and said, “My dear disciple, may I ask, which part have you cultivated up to with the cultivation method I have given you? How have you been progressing?”

“Master, I haven’t returned home in a very long time and have always been thinking about my family in the past few days, so I

have been unable to settle down and cultivate. I plead master to let me home so I can see my parent,” pleaded Huang Luang.

The ancestor’s eyes grew cold when he heard that, but he hid it very quickly. He maintained his smile. “This is a very crucial step right now. You need to settle down and cultivate. Do not think of other things, or it’ll affect your future achievements greatly. You should cultivate here without worry. Once you reach the higher levels of the cultivation method, I will naturally let you go home.”

Huang Luan’s heart sank slightly. After some hesitation, she said forcefully, “Master, if I cannot go home, I will stop cultivating.”

“How dare you disobey your master!” The ancestor’s face sank as he abruptly roared out. Even his gaze turned into a glare.

Huang Luan bit her lip gently and said nothing. She was only a Heaven Saint Master right now, while the ancestor was a Saint Ruler. She had no power to resist.

The ancestor stared silently at Huang Luan with his darkened face as the light in his eyes flickered. He thought, “Looks like this girl has realized some things.”

The ancestor left the secret room, before returning quickly afterward. This time, he carried a person in his hands. It was a pale-faced old man, currently with his hands chained up behind him.

When Huang Luan saw the chained-up old man, she immediately paled in fright and cried out, “Ancestor!”

The old man was the ancestor of the Huang family, Huang Tianba.

Chapter 956: Visiting the Serpent God Hall (Three)

“Grandfather, grandfather...” Huang Luan cried out as she lunged at Huang Tianba. Her voice was filled with panic and terror as her tears flowed like a fountain.

Huang Tianba slowly opened his eyes. His face was dull and he struggled to hide his weakness.

“Luan’er, it was your grandfather who caused you harm. I shouldn’t have agreed for you to become a disciple of this mongrel,” Huang Tianba said weakly. He was furious.

“Grandfather...” sobbed Huang Luan. She had never thought that the ancestor of her clan would be captured by the ancestor of the Huanggu clan. Not only did it completely shatter their relationship, the two of them would probably not be able to leave this place either.

Huang Tianba raised his head with difficulty to stare viciously at the ancestor of the Huanggu clan. He gnashed his teeth and said, “You mongrel. I trusted you so much, treating your clan as a friend. Never did I think you would do something like this. What is the absolute secret you’re keeping that requires you to lock up the two of us here?”

Several days ago, Huang Tianba had received Huang Luan’s message. As he had no idea what circumstances Huang Luan faced, he ran over from the Huang family without any preparations. He

just wanted to see Huang Luan. But he had never imagined that the ancestor of the Huanggu clan would suddenly attack him when he was unprepared. The ancestor of the Huanggu clan heavily injured him and locked him up, before sealing up his strength with a secret technique. It made him as weak as an ordinary person.

Even until now, Huang Tianba had no idea why he was treated like this.

The ancestor of the Huanggu clan sneered, “Huang Tian, there’s no need for you to know about this. Just spend this period of time at our clan without worry. I definitely won’t mistreat you.”

“You mongrel! Luan’er’s relationship with Jian Chen is very deep, and my family has a close friendship with the person in charge of the Changyang clan. The Changyang clan will never let you go!” Huang Tianba cried out.

The ancestor of the Huanggu clan sniggered, “Huang Tianba, do you think I don’t know? Your relationship with the Changyang clan is completely built off Jian Chen. Now that Jian Chen is not here, the Changyang clan wouldn’t care about your Huang family at all. Moreover, how would the Changyang clan learn about everything that has happened here? Huang Tianba, you better give up on that thought.”

“You mongrel, there’s not going to be a good end to this for you,” roared Huang Tianba.

A cold light flickered through the eyes of the Huanggu clan

ancestor. He sneered, “Hmph. Huang Tianba, you’ve said enough.” He directly struck Huang Tianba’s back with his palm, causing blood to spray from his mouth. Huang Tianba became even more dejected.

“Don’t harm grandfather!” Huang Luan cried out hysterically. She felt a heart-wrenching pain when she saw Huang Tianba’s state.

The Huanggu clan ancestor smiled evilly and said, “My dear disciple, your grandfather’s life will now be in your hands. If you want him to be safe and sound, you better use the cultivation method I gave you.” He left the secret room after saying that, locking Huang Luan inside once again.

Huang Luan sobbed quietly as she knelt on the ground. Originally, her only hope was Huang Tianba. But now that he had been captured and constrained, she had nothing to count on anymore. Trapped in the dark, windowless room, she was completely cut off from the world. She felt like the sky was collapsing. That was how helpless she felt.

“Jian Chen, where are you right now?” Huang Luan sobbed. In this despairing situation, she could not help but think of him.

Only Jian Chen—who was on good terms with the Huang family—could contend against the Huanggu clan now.

No one outside knew what was happening in the Huanggu clan. Even the Huang family was clueless, as Huang Tianba had told no

one where he was going before he left. Meanwhile, the Changyang clan of Lore City would never think that Huang Tianba would fall into such a horrible situation.

...

Jian Chen entered the territory of the Serpent God Hall all by himself. He whistled through the air as he radiated with a tremendous aura, directly flying over countless clans and organizations. This alerted many people. However, with his current strength, no one dared to come looking for trouble. Even a few people stronger than him did not want to aggravate a powerful opponent over these small matters as this could bring endless troubles to their clans.

There were many more experts at each level of cultivation in the sea realm than on the Tian Yuan Continent, but being a Saint King was still enough to move freely through most places.

Jian Chen flew through the territory of the Serpent God Hall without maintaining a low profile, traveling directly to the center of the land with a hostile aura. He finally arrived before the huge divine hall after two whole days of traveling.

The divine hall was jet-black throughout and hung in the air like a huge castle. It was covered with the engravings of serpent dragons. These serpent dragons were sometimes roaring at the sky. At other times, they displayed their teeth and talons. They all seemed different from one another yet they were all life-like.

A huge, thirty-thousand-meter-long black serpent dragon coiled at the very top of the structure. It was like a ruler looking down on the world. It radiated with dignity, giving people the feeling that it was the one and only overlord.

Jian Chen floated in the air with crossed arms as he radiated with a tremendous pressure. It formed many layers, constantly ramming against the divine hall. Although it could not even move the divine hall, it was filled with provocation.

“Who dares to act so brazenly before our divine hall!?” A thunderous roar immediately rang out from inside, and several Saint Ruler emissaries emerged furiously.

A cold light flickered through Jian Chen’s eyes. Once the emissaries had completely left the divine hall, he flipped his right hand and the Emperor Armament immediately appeared. He swung it directly at the emissaries.

A huge, crescent-shaped sword Qi shot out, surging toward the emissaries with a destructive energy. It directly chopped through their chests and bisected their bodies.

The emissaries all howled out miserably as they fell from the air while bleeding profusely.

Jian Chen’s sword Qi continued onward with no decrease in force, ramming heavily against the huge divine hall. A muffled boom erupted as the entire structure shook gently.

This action immediately alerted all the experts within. Several tremendous auras immediately flooded out from the divine hall, and several dozen figures all took to the air. They flew out with lightning speed.

They were all elders of the Serpent God Hall. Almost half of the Saint Kings in the territory of the Serpent God Hall had appeared, while even more emissaries followed behind them.

In the blink of an eye, a large group gathered around Jian Chen. Other than the several dozen Saint Kings, there were hundreds of emissaries.

The group formed a huge ring as they surrounded Jian Chen tightly. A vast aura radiated from the mass, crisscrossing in mid-air to form a net that enveloped Jian Chen.

“Who are you? Name yourself...”

“Are you sick of living? Harming our emissaries and attacking our divine hall...”

“You brat, do you want to die for acting wildly before our divine hall...”

...

Countless angry cries rang out from the surroundings as they all stared at Jian Chen as a cold light flickered in their eyes. Killing

intent surged as well, but even more of them focused their attention on the Emperor Armament in Jian Chen's hand.

A sharp light flickered in Jian Chen's eyes. He raised his sword toward the sky and shook it. Immediately, it began to glow with a blinding dark light as a destructive aura flooded a radius of several dozen kilometers. He called out, "Don't blame me for being merciless to those who don't shut up!"

The various sounds immediately disappeared. At that moment, the surroundings became utterly silent. Everyone stared at Jian Chen blankly.

They had not been frightened by Jian Chen but surprised. In all these years, there had never been someone in the sea realm who dared to speak so brazenly before so many experts, much less come all by himself to challenge the Serpent God Hall's dignity.

Jian Chen was the first.

"Hmph, you ignorant brat. You overestimate yourself in challenging our hall's dignity. I'll show you what strength really is," growled a white-haired old man. He immediately charged at Jian Chen with a trident in his hand.

Jian Chen glanced at the old man as his lips curled up in scorn. He sneered, "A Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King. You still don't have the right to do that." Jian Chen suddenly stabbed out with his Emperor Armament and a huge sword Qi shot toward the old man.

A great boom erupted when the two collided, like a clap of thunder. It echoed to several hundred kilometers away.

The old man grunted and a mouthful of blood sprayed out. He shot back at a speed even greater than what he had initially charged with. In the end, he heavily crashed into the divine hall behind him before finally coming to a stop. At that moment, he vomited another mouthful of blood involuntarily. He had already become pale.

The crowd broke into an uproar as everyone's opinion of Jian Chen changed. They all felt shocked as they witnessed a 16th Star expert knocked backward and vomiting blood from just a single bout.

“The hall elders have arrived!

A clear voice rang out from the hall. Six people of different ages flew out slowly as they traveled next to one another. They did not radiate with any presence or aura, seeming just like ordinary people.

Jian Chen immediately looked over and his eyes narrowed. He discovered that he had seen two of the six before. They were the two that accompanied the Serpent God Hall's group to the Octoterra Divine Hall.

“There are actually six hall elders in the Serpent God Hall. That's six Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings.” Jian Chen's heart shivered.

Chapter 957: Visiting the Serpent God Hall

(Four)

“We greet the hall elders.” The surrounding people all bowed toward the six hall elders. Their faces were filled with respect and admiration.

The 15th and 16th Star elders all stepped aside to form a path for the hall elders.

The six hall elders flew over with sunken faces as they glared at Jian Chen. When two of them recognized him, their eyes were immediately filled with intense killing intent.

“Jian Chen, I never thought it would be you. Hmph, we didn’t go looking for you, yet you’ve come knocking on our door yourself today. Do you really think you can go against our Serpent God Hall just with your Emperor Armament?” a hall elder said coldly.

The eyes of the other hall elders narrowed when they heard that this was Jian Chen. They looked up and down to examine him. One of them said in a gruff voice, “So you’re Jian Chen, that person who stole the treasure of the Serpent God Hall and obtained the Octoterra Divine Hall.”

“Jian Chen, do you think you can act brazenly now that you’ve obtained the divine hall? Do you believe that we’ll smash your hall today?” A rather short-tempered hall elder called out. His eyes formed a vicious glare.

All the surrounding elders looked toward Jian Chen in surprise when they heard that he was the one who had obtained the Octoterra Divine Hall. Envy and jealousy appeared in their eyes.

Jian Chen hovered in the air calmly as he faced the people of the Serpent God Hall. Even though he was trapped in an encirclement, he was not nervous at all.

“Esteemed hall elders, you have put it too strongly. I have not come today to challenge the dignity of your Serpent God Hall. Even if I was very confident, I definitely do not believe that I possess the strength to go against the Serpent God Hall just by myself,” smiled Jian Chen with clasped hands.

“Hmph, you dare to put it like that. First, you wound our emissaries, and then you harm an elder of ours. Do you really think that we’re easy to just trample over? Don’t think that you can look down on everyone now that the Octoterra Divine Hall is in your hands,” a hall elder called out. His tone was very hostile.

“The people of the Serpent God Hall naturally aren’t easy to trample over, but at the same time, neither am I. I injured them before because they were looking for it themselves. You can’t blame others,” said Jian Chen with a smile.

“Hmph, nice excuse. Then show me just what you’re made of, Jian Chen.” A cold sliver of light flashed through hall elder Charlie’s eyes. He was about to move against Jian Chen.

Jian Chen remained smiling in mid-air. His smile had become rather evil and rather cold. Suddenly, a huge divine hall appeared out of nowhere. It was grand and majestic, radiating with a mighty pressure. It blotted out the sky.

“The Octoterra Divine Hall!” Calls rang out from the surroundings. The emissaries and the elders all stared at it with burning passion. A powerful desire to take it for themselves flooded their heads.

Jian Chen immediately flew inside and fused his soul with the divine hall. He had become the divine hall, while the divine hall was him. He could now use the power hidden inside at will.

Charlie immediately calmed down when the divine hall appeared. He stared at it fixedly and grimly.

“Esteemed hall elders, do you dare to fight me in the divine hall?” Jian Chen’s voice rang out from inside. It was extremely loud, reverberating through a radius of several hundred kilometers.

Jian Chen did not fear the hall elders at all when inside the divine hall. Although the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall had told him that it would be best if he did not offend the hall elders of the Serpent God Hall, Jian Chen had been forced into such a horrible position by them before. He needed to take revenge for the previous matters now that the opportunity had arisen.

Jian Chen had already made up his mind about trampling over

the hall elders' dignity before he had come. Even though he could not harm them, he utterly humiliated them.

The six elders paled from fury after hearing Jian Chen's arrogant words. Flames of rage burned within them, but none of them dared to fight Jian Chen in the divine hall. Even the brash Charlie did not dare to.

If they really entered the divine hall, there would only be death for them given that their strengths were only at the peak of Saint King. They would not be facing up against a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King but a Saint Emperor.

"Esteemed hall elders, do you dare to take me on?" Jian Chen's voice rang out once again. He could not help but think about how his group of three were pursued by the experts of the Serpent God Hall all those years ago and had almost lost their lives.

At that time, they probably would have been imprisoned by the two halls if the experts of the Sea Goddess Hall had not come to rescue them at the most crucial moment. He would not be standing here gloriously.

"Jian Chen, you're too presumptuous," a hall elder cursed in anger. Normally, he was someone who stood above others. He could end lives or change fates with a wave of his hand. How could he endure such embarrassment, let alone the one embarrassing them had been treated as a mere ant by them a few years ago?

"Let's work together and attack the divine hall. Let's break it,"

Charlie said furiously, powerful ripples of energy had already appeared around him.

The six hall elders moved together, striking the divine hall as hard as they could.

Immediately, a terrifying ripple of residual energy was formed and began wreaking havoc in the surroundings like a storm. Meanwhile, the divine hall also began to tremble violently. The attacks from the six hall elders were not able to break the divine hall, but it was enough to shake the hall up.

The divine hall enlarged abruptly, reaching over ten thousand meters in length. It hung in the sky like a dark cloud that blotted out the sun. Afterward, it began to fall with a tremendous aura, smashing heavily toward all of them.

The elders and the emissaries were also under the divine hall beside the hall elders. The elders were all Saint Kings, while the emissaries ranged from Heaven Saint Master to Saint Ruler. Regardless, they all fled toward the surroundings.

The divine hall fell extremely fast, so fast that they could not dodge at all. The cold, heavy surface came into contact with them very quickly, pushing them down from the air.

“Push!” A hall elder roared. He placed both his hands on the bottom of the hall in an attempt to stop its descent.

Unfortunately, the divine hall was just too heavy. It was several million times heavier than mountains, so they could not stop it at all even when they worked together.

Boom!

The Octoterra Divine Hall struck the ground heavily. At that moment, the entire world seemed to shake. The surrounding ground trembled violently as if a huge earthquake had just occurred.

The giant divine hall smashed into the ground, causing half of it to be submerged underground. It formed a deep pit, while the six hall elders, the various elders, and the emissaries were all buried under it.

“Jian Chen, don’t you even think that you can leave our territory alive today,” someone roared out from below. The voice was filled with utter rage. The six hall elders carved out a tunnel from underground, emerging from beside the hall. A few elders followed behind them. None of the group had been injured, other than seeming ruffled. On the other hand, the Heaven Saint Master emissaries suffered wounds that varied in intensity.

Rumble! The Octoterra Divine Hall trembled gently in the ground and slowly rose up into the air. It faced and floated a distance from the divine hall of the Serpent God Hall as if it was challenging it.

“You sure talk big. If I want to leave, just you won’t be enough to

stop me. It'll only be possible if your hall master personally comes out." Jian Chen's voice rang out from the divine hall. It was filled with confidence.

The six hall elders floated far away and looked at each other. Afterward, they gritted their teeth and knelt on one knee together, calling out loudly, "We request for the hall master to personally punish the person who impinges on our hall's dignity."

Once Jian Chen hid inside his Octoterra Divine Hall, the six hall elders could do nothing to him.

A while later, their faces were all replaced with shock and they immediately stood up. They eyed the Octoterra Divine Hall viciously.

"Jian Chen, no wonder you're brave enough to come provoke our hall just by yourself. So you've persuaded the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall to keep our hall master busy," growled a hall elder.

Jian Chen knew that the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall had probably already fought with the hall master of the Serpent God Hall when he heard that. He immediately rejoiced.

"Whatever, Jian Chen. You win. Speak. How can we get you to stop today?" The hall elders finally gave in. Although they were completely unwilling, they had no other choice.

“My requests are very simple. First, return the item that the four divine generals of your hall stole from me all those years ago. Second, let me have a battle to the death with the four of them, where no one can interfere,” said Jian Chen.

The six hall elders hesitated slightly, before agreeing in the end.

“Third, there were once three people who ambushed me in the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall. They were Li Fengxing, Zhou Tianzi, and Zhou Yunzi. I want you to hand over the three of them,” said Jian Chen.

The faces of the six hall elders became rather ugly. They looked at each other, before agreeing in the end. Only their hall master could break the Octoterra Divine Hall right now, yet he was currently busy with the hall master of the Sea Goddess Hall and could not help them at all. They could do nothing to Jian Chen just by themselves, and if they remained in this stalemate, it would just make the Serpent God Hall seem even worse. Their top priority was to chase away this vengeful and troublesome person.

“Alright, we agree. We will hand Li Fengxing to you, but Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi aren’t part of the Serpent God Hall. If you want the two of them, you need to go to the Heaven’s Spirit Hall,” said a hall elder.

Chapter 958: Taking Revenge

“Someone go and call the four divine generals and Li Fengxing,” a hall elder ordered.

Immediately, an elder in a horrible shape flew into the divine hall, inviting the four divine generals and Li Fengxing outside.

Five powerful presences began to radiate from within the divine hall, and the four divine generals and Li Fengxing flew out. The two divine generals that had been captured by Atlantis were bought back by the Serpent God Hall with a huge ransom fee.

Jian Chen’s eyes immediately became filled with killing intent when he saw his former enemies. He glared at the five of them.

The divine generals and Li Fengxing clearly already knew about the situation at hand. Their complexions were very ugly and possessed some grimness.

“We greet the hall elders,” the five of them simultaneously clasped their hands at the six hall elders.

“Four Divine Generals, Li Fengxing, the warrior Jian Chen wants to challenge you. You shall fight him and represent the Serpent God Hall,” a hall elder said, sighing gently.

The five of them all looked toward the huge Octoterra Divine Hall when they heard that. They were all bitter-faced.

Although they had remained in the divine hall throughout the entire process, they knew exactly what was happening outside. However, they struggled to accept that Jian Chen—who had been so powerless against them several years ago—was now terrifying. With the Octoterra Divine Hall, even the six hall elders could do nothing against him.

Jian Chen appeared at the entrance of the divine hall and said to the six hall elders, “I hope none of you interfere as I fight them. Otherwise, I won’t be ending the matter here. I will definitely create a big mess out of the Serpent God Hall.”

“Naturally. You do not have to worry. No other person from the Serpent God Hall will be fighting except the five of them,” a hall elder said with a darkened face. Their Serpent God Hall had been completely humiliated with how everything had unfolded.

Jian Chen floated out with the Emperor Armament in hand. He did not put the Octoterra Divine Hall away, leaving it to hover high up above everyone. It was like a dark cloud, darkening the surroundings.

“Divine generals, where is the item you stole from me all those years ago?” Jian Chen stared coldly at the divine generals.

A divine general ripped off his clothes, revealing a glimmering golden silkmail underneath. He said coldly, “I’m wearing it. If you have the ability, come take it.”

Jian Chen's gaze became even colder. "You still don't have the right to wear it. I'll take it back in the exact same way you took it from me back then. Come at me, the five of you."

Seeing how Jian Chen wanted to take on the five of them at the same time so arrogantly, Li Fengxing could not help but laugh aloud. "Alright, Jian Chen. That was what you said. I hope you don't try to take it back later." Li Fengxing then turned to the four divine generals and sneered, "Let's go and teach that ignorant bastard a solid lesson."

The four divine generals sneered as they celebrated inside. They knew that Jian Chen was now powerful. It would be difficult for them to be victorious if they were to fight him one-on-one. However, Jian Chen actually stated brazenly that he wanted to take all five of them on at the same time. This filled them with confidence.

Li Fengxiang was a Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint King, the most powerful magical beast present in the sea realm, while the four divine generals were all Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings and commonly used joint attacks. The four of them had worked together for many years, reaching a level of tacit understanding in battle. When the five of them fought together, they would even be able to take on a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King.

The four divine generals and Li Fengxing were all beasts, and their most powerful weapons were their claws. Their hands immediately turned into huge dragon claws or hairy black bear paws, which they swung simultaneously. A chain of powerful energy shot toward Jian Chen.

Jian Chen swung his Emperor Armament and a huge, crescent-shaped sword Qi shot out. It dispersed all five attacks.

“This type of attack can’t hurt me at all. Is this all the four divine generals and the strongest magical beast has?” Jian Chen said coldly.

A sliver of fierce light flashed through the eyes of the four divine generals and Li Fengxing. They all bellowed as tremendous energy surged out of them. It coiled around them, gradually forming four three-hundred-meter-long serpent dragons and an extremely huge black bear.

Roar! The black bear produced a deafening roar and fell to its four paws and charged menacingly toward Jian Chen.

The four huge serpent dragons that were condensed out of energy roared at the sky angrily as well, before actually slowly fusing together.

The black bear was also condensed from vast amounts of energy and World Force. It ran extremely quickly, arriving before Jian Chen in the blink of an eye.

Jian Chen directly chopped at the black bear as his Emperor Armament shone with a dazzling dark light. He remained cool and composed throughout.

Before the sword Qi had struck the black bear, the black bear exploded in mid-air with a deafening boom. A terrifying storm of energy erupted and started to ruin the surroundings. It caused the surrounding space to distort and turn into a blur.

With a series of movements, Jian Chen shot backward under the pummeling of the energy storm. This was the effects of Li Fengxing's full-power strike. Jian Chen was unable to block it as he was in mid-air.

At that moment, a figure shot out from the center of the explosion toward Jian Chen. Two huge bear paws that radiated with a powerful energy swept toward Jian Chen's throat and head.

Jian Chen's lips curled into a disdainful smile. His Emperor Armament immediately became a black streak of light as he counterattacked.

Li Fengxing yelled out, and his two paws changed directions to catch the Emperor Armament. They were both coated by a powerful energy; he wanted to grab Jian Chen's Emperor Armament if given the opportunity.

However, the Emperor Armament could not be grabbed that easily. As soon as the hands came into contact with the Emperor Armament, a screeching of metal rang out and the powerful force turned his hands numb.

Swish!

Before Li Fengxing could respond, Jian Chen's second strike had arrived. The Emperor Armament flashed past his paws in the form of a dark light, lopping off the two of them.

"Argh!" Li Fengxing cried out miserably. He used his remaining stumps to grab his paws before quickly backing off.

Just as Jian Chen wanted to pursue him, a deafening roar rang out. The four serpent dragons condensed by the divine generals had fused completely, forming a three-thousand-meter-long black serpent dragon which charged threateningly toward Jian Chen.

The four divine generals had cast a secret technique together. The power and might of the black dragon were enough to heavily injure Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings, and even Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Kings needed to face it seriously.

Jian Chen expression remained nonchalant. He struck out as hard as he could with the Emperor Armament. His battle prowess was at the peak of the Seventh Heavenly Layer and extremely close to the eighth. As a result, he did not treat the black dragon importantly despite its power.

Jian Chen swung the Emperor Armament with all his strength, creating a huge sword Qi to meet the serpent dragon. It collided intensely with it mid-air.

The surroundings darkened from the violent residual energy from the boom. This time, the clash between the supreme attacks was enough to destroy the surroundings completely. The sea water

above began to churn violently, forming great waves on the sea surface.

The sword Qi and the black dragon swelled in mid-air, before finally dispersing after being mutually consumed.

The four divine generals became even more stern. The full-power attack from the four of them had been neutralized so easily by Jian Chen, overwhelming them inside with the bad turn of events. The strength of their opponent had completely surprised them.

Jian Chen used the Illusory Flash to arrive before the four of them in the blink of an eye. His arm shook violently as the Emperor Armament transformed into a flurry of blurs that encased them. He struck out consecutively toward the divine generals.

The divine generals were now covered by a layer of closely-packed scales, while their hands were now the claws of serpent dragons. They poured all their strengths into blocking Jian Chen's attacks, while their claws became coated with a thick layer of energy.

However, they were not Jian Chen's opponent at such a close range. Every stab possessed the power from the Seventh Heavenly Layer of Saint King, so they ran out of power in just two mere bouts. Their claws were chopped off one by one by Jian Chen as they grunted constantly from the pain.

The Emperor Armament constantly slashed across their bodies after the claws were gone, leaving behind vicious wounds all over

their bodies.

Jian Chen did not hurry to kill them. Instead, he tortured them to his heart's content. He wanted to return the pain they had brought to him those years ago a hundredfold.

Chapter 959: Serpent God's Fury

The four divine generals were covered with wounds as a layer of blood dyed them completely red. They were in a horrible shape.

The experts who watched on from the side were filled with deep shock. Not only did Jian Chen have the Octoterra Divine Hall protecting him, he was so powerful as well. It was enough to place him among the supreme experts of the sea realm. They were sure that Jian Chen's name would resound through the entire sea realm after this storm with the Serpent God Hall blew over. He would be regarded as one of the great experts within the sea realm.

The six hall elders all furrowed their brows tightly. They could all tell that Jian Chen was torturing the four divine generals, but they had an agreement before to not interfere at all. They were filled with helplessness even though they did not want the four divine generals to suffer the merciless torture of Jian Chen.

The Emperor Armament lashed out as a blur time after time toward the four divine generals, causing their wounds to multiply.

The four divine generals had fallen to the point where they could not even counterattack under Jian Chen's storm-like blows. If it were not for the fact that Jian Chen wanted to torture them, they would have passed away long ago.

The four divine generals quickly retreated, before separating in the end. Only when they shot off in different directions did they break free from Jian Chen, but that only applied to three people.

The last person still faced Jian Chen's rain of attacks as he fled. He was the one who had taken Jian Chen's golden silkmail.

"Jian Chen, even if I die here today, I won't let you have it easy." Soaring fury burned in the divine general's eyes as he suddenly began to bulge. His clothes were ripped to shred and he became a three-hundred-meter long serpent dragon in the blink of an eye.

The golden silkmail on him bulge as well but it did not rip. It was expanded by countless times, becoming like a belt. It wounded around the upper-half of the serpent dragon's body tightly but it was unable to completely cover it.

Roar! The serpent dragon roared furiously at the sky and a thick layer of blood-red light began to shine from it. Its presence also began to skyrocket at an unbelievable rate with the appearance of the light, reaching the Sixth Heavenly Layer of Saint King.

Jian Chen's eyes narrowed. He knew that his opponent had used a secret technique that temporarily increased his strength, but it would definitely cause great harm to the user afterward.

Next, a senseless incantation began to ring out from the serpent dragon's mouth, becoming louder and louder. It echoed through the surroundings like a song.

The expressions of the six hall elders began to darken. One of them said involuntarily, "This is the Serpent God's Fury. He actually cast that. Doesn't he know just how severe the consequences are?"

The Serpent God's Fury was the most powerful secret technique that belonged to the Serpent Dragon clan. It could only be learned by members who had reached Saint King.

The Serpent God's Fury was like the forbidden arte of the Radiant Saint Master Union, except it was not as terrifying. However, the price to cast it was just as heavy. Not only would the user fall back to the previous level of cultivation, it would make any further breakthroughs in the future even more difficult. It would also consume a large amount of the user's soul and essence.

The Serpent God's Fury had always been a forbidden technique of the Serpent Dragon clan. Unless they were forced to, no one would use it so easily. Clearly, the divine general had only used it when he had run out of options.

"Serpent God's Fury!" The serpent dragon roared in the language of humans; a powerful energy of soul and essence leaked out of its body, surging into the sky.

The sky immediately began to churn. A stormy cloud suddenly appeared, blotting out the sky and making the surrounding even darker in that instant.

A series of deep and muffled roars rang out from the cloud as it constantly churned. It seemed like a serpent dragon was currently swimming inside.

Suddenly, a huge claw shot out from the cloud, swooping toward

Jian Chen's with lightning speed. The claw was completely condensed from the dark clouds, and it was attached to the remaining clouds on the other end.

Jian Chen finally became slightly stern. This strike was no trivial matter, as he could clearly feel the might hidden within. It was something that only a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King would possess, or maybe even one at the peak of the Seventh Heavenly Layer.

Although the attack was powerful enough to threaten Jian Chen, he felt no fear. He stabbed at the claw as hard as he could as the Emperor Armament shone with blinding light.

The sword and claw collided intensely, immediately producing a violent boom. The threatening manner of the claw immediately weakened.

Jian Chen did not hesitate at all, stabbing out several times again. He did not hold back at all, pouring all his strength into each attack.

Several strikes later, the huge claw abruptly collapsed, dispersing into the surroundings as energy of the world.

The divine general vomited blood as the Serpent God's Fury had been defeated. He could no longer remain in the serpent dragon form, falling out of the sky in human form. He was in despair.

“It’s a pity that he only comprehended the first layer of the Serpent God’s Fury. If he reached the third layer, he would have been able to project the entire serpent god and the outcome would be completely different. He would not be able to harm Jian Chen under the divine hall’s protection, but it would be enough to protect himself,” said a hall elder with a sigh.

Jian Chen had already charged toward the divine general murderously. Arriving before him, he directly ripped off the golden silkmail from his body, before chopping toward his head mercilessly.

“Third brother!”

“Third bro!”

The three other divine generals all called out when they saw this. They paid no attention to the danger and charged over in an attempt to save the divine general.

However, they were not as fast as Jian Chen’s sword. With a crack, Jian Chen lopped off the divine general’s head with a single stroke.

“Today, the four divine generals of the Serpent God Hall will cease to exist,” sneered Jian Chen. The Emperor Armament in his hands turned into a black streak of light as he stabbed toward the head, wanting to disperse the soul within.

Chapter 960: Proceeding to the Heaven's Spirit Hall

“From today onward, the four divine generals of the Serpent God Hall shall cease to exist,” sneered Jian Chen. The Emperor Armament in his hand immediately turned into another black streak of light. It stabbed out, wanting to wipe out the soul in the head.

An extremely great energy shot over from nearby at this very moment and struck Jian Chen's weapon forcefully. A hall elder had struck out at this crucial moment.

With a boom, it knocked away the weapon. At the same time, the upper skull of the divine general exploded. A soul flew out from within, quickly flying toward the hall elders.

Immediately, one of them pulled out a bottle that shone with a faint blue light from his Space Ring and collected the soul.

Jian Chen was immediately enraged when he saw that the divine general that was about to fall to his hand being saved so easily by a hall elder. He suddenly glared toward the hall elder and growled, “Hall elder, did you really forget our agreement so quickly? Are you saying that the esteemed hall elders of the Serpent God Hall, those who stand above millions, are people who break their word?” Jian Chen's voice was filled with sarcasm.

The hall elders looked at each other and revealed a sliver of helplessness. After all, the four divine generals were all 16th Star

experts, so they were a part of the divine hall's absolute power. They were unwilling to watch someone like this just die before them.

“Jian Chen, you've already won your battle with the four divine generals. The four of them are not your opponents,” said a hall elder with a sigh.

Jian Chen became extremely pale and said coldly, “I said before that I wanted to have a fight to the death with the divine generals, and you promised that you would not interfere with this at all. I don't want victory, I want their lives.” A sliver of killing intent flashed through his eyes, then he charged toward the other three divine generals.

All three divine generals were completely dumbstruck when they personally witnessed Jian Chen breaking through the Serpent God's Fury. They had lost the confidence to battle long ago. They could not help but feel fear as Jian Chen charged toward them.

Although the four of them all knew the forbidden technique, their comprehensions of the Serpent God's Fury was only at the first layer. All they could do was project the claw of the serpent god, which was unable to harm Jian Chen. Moreover, it would also consume much of their vital essence and result in a decrease of strength. It was just not worth it.

“Save us, hall elders!” A divine general began to call out for help. The three of them knew that it would entirely depend on the hall elders if they could make it out alive today or not.

A hall elder produced a soft sigh, before appearing before the three of them with a slight movement. He blocked Jian Chen.

Jian Chen's expression changed slightly and he came to a screeching stop. With a thought, the huge, cloud-like divine hall suddenly began to descend forcefully. It stopped twenty meters above Jian Chen.

The expressions of the hall elders and the other experts all changed, becoming slightly grim when they saw this.

They had all experienced the power of the Octoterra Divine Hall. Although it was unable to cause much threat to them outside, it was enough to reduce them to a horrible shape if it was used like before.

Jian Chen was filled with confidence as he had the protection of the divine hall. He stared icily at the hall elder and asked, "Hall elder, may I ask of your intentions?" Secretly, Jian Chen had made the preparations to enter the divine hall at anytime. He was no opponent of the hall elder without it.

"Jian Chen, you've already forced us into such a horrible position. You've completely taken revenge for the humiliation you've suffered before, and you must have vented all your anger already. Why don't both of us take a step back and stop here and the Serpent God Hall will no longer go looking for any trouble with you," the hall elder said tactfully.

It was more than enough to see exactly what Jian Chen had forced the Serpent God Hall into for a mighty hall elder to speak so tactfully.

Unfortunately, Jian Chen begged to differ. He would not give up on the matter of the pursuit all those years ago with just a few words. This was because he had sacrificed five hundred years of his life to deal with the people who chased them before.

Jian Chen flew into the divine hall and a grand, loud voice rang out, “I will be taking the lives of the four divine generals no matter what! Hall elders, since you have failed to keep your word, it is no longer my fault if I completely humiliate you. Today, your floating divine hall shall be smashed into the ground.”

“How dare you, Jian Chen!” A few hall elders cried out in unison.

Jian Chen immediately allowed the divine hall to fly high up, arriving above the Serpent God Hall’s divine hall directly before smashing downward viciously.

At this moment, an extremely terrifying presence appeared from within the divine hall, containing towering anger and horrifying killing intent.

All the surrounding energy of the world calmed down with its appearance as if it was in fear.

Jian Chen, on the other hand, felt an extremely terrifying aura

tightly lock onto the entire Octoterra Divine Hall, causing it to come to a stop.

“Saint Emperor of the Serpent God Hall!” Jian Chen was shocked and immediately realized that the hall master of the Serpent God Hall was about to strike out.

“It’s the hall master! We plead the hall master to destroy his Octoterra Divine Hall!” The people from the Serpent God Hall lit up when they sensed the aura’s appearance and immediately knelt down.

“Jian Chen, don’t go overboard.” A harsh, heavy voice cut through the Octoterra Divine Hall and Jian Chen heard it clearly. It was not difficult to tell from the voice that it was a middle-aged man.

“This is the voice of the Serpent God Hall hall master.” Jian Chen immediately guessed the person’s identity. Other than the hall master, he could not think of anyone else who possessed such terrifying strength.

“Jian Chen, this is enough. You should stop.” Another voice rang out in Jian Chen’s head. It was gentle but cold, the voice of the Sea Goddess Hall hall master.

In the end, the Octoterra Divine Hall came to a slow stop without colliding into the Serpent God Hall’s divine hall. Jian Chen then emerged from his divine hall and said, “Hall elders, I’ll leave the lives of the divine generals with you for now, but it’s best if you

don't interfere when I deal with Li Fengxing." With that, Jian Chen immediately charged toward the magical beast.

Li Fengxing's expression changed slightly. Seeing how the hall elders had no intentions of helping him out, he shot upward from the ground toward the sky without the slightest hesitation.

Li Fengxing was one of the murders of the Turtle clan's grand elder, so Jian Chen would not let him go no matter what. He followed quickly, disappearing high up into the sky as he tailed Li Fengxing.

The two of them moved extremely fast, reaching the barrier of the sea realm in the blink of an eye. Without any reluctance, Li Fengxing directly passed through the barrier before turning around to laugh. "I've stayed in the sea realm for long enough. It's about time I left. Jian Chen, if you want to kill me, come find me on the Beast God Continent. I will be waiting for you there." With that, he ripped open a Space Gate and left through it.

The barrier of the sea realm isolated it as an independent world, where Saint Kings were unable to create Space Gates. However, this limitation did not exist outside the barrier.

Jian Chen stopped at the edge of the barrier as he stared darkly at Li Fengxing who had already fled. He said coldly, "I will be going to the Beast God Continent sooner or later. At that time, I'd like to see where you will flee to." Jian Chen returned from his pursuit with nothing in the end. The barrier only obstructed the entry of foreign Saint Kings; if a foreign Saint King left through it, they would not be able to return.

Jian Chen descended from the sky and landed on the Octoterra Divine Hall. He said coldly, “I will be taking the lives of the divine generals no matter what. Be aware, people of the Serpent God Hall, I will be returning one day in the future. At that time, even you hall elders won’t be able to stop me personally.”

Jian Chen left the area in the Octoterra Divine Hall, only leaving behind a group of people standing around uglily. No one dared to utter a word about it.

Jian Chen failed to kill the four divine generals in this trip to the Serpent God Hall as he had initially intended. Despite this, he managed to snatch back his golden silkmail. At the same time, he managed to create turmoil for the Serpent God Hall and humiliated them.

The hall elders of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall all gathered in a conference room at the very top of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall’s supreme divine hall not long after Jian Chen had left the Serpent God Hall. They stood in a line, all bearing expressions of respect.

Before them sat a blurry man on a throne. His appearance could not be seen clearly at all.

“You probably all know what has happened at the Serpent God Hall. Jian Chen’s currently making his way toward our Heaven’s Spirit Hall. Besides me, even if you all work together, you won’t be able to break through the Octoterra Divine Hall. However, Jian Chen also has the support of the hall master from the Sea Goddess

Hall. As such, if I attempt to strike out, she will definitely keep me busy. So, when Jian Chen comes, do not agitate him. Try to fulfill his wishes to the best of your ability,” the figure on the throne said.

“Hall master, what should we do if he asks for the lives of the three disciplinary elders?” A hall elder asked.

“I’ll leave it up to you. Just try not to offend Jian Chen. His growth is too fast, reaching the 16th Star from the 14th Star in just a few short years. Someone with talent like that is no one ordinary. He can also use the Emperor Armament from human emperors, so I deduce that he’s not from the sea realm. He is probably a human from the Tian Yuan Continent. If it’s possible, do all you can do pull him to our side. When he becomes an emperor, he may be able to help us significantly by fulfilling my greatest wish,” said the Heaven’s Spirit Hall hall master.

“Yes, hall master. We know what we should do,” replied the hall masters.

“Also, don’t we have quite a few humans and magical beasts in the sea realm? Send some of them to the Tian Yuan Continent to investigate Jian Chen’s background.”

Chapter 961: Three Underlings

Jian Chen traveled away from the Serpent God Hall in the Octoterra Divine Hall, before leaving the divine hall after confirming that there was no one in pursuit. He then directly flew toward the Heaven's Spirit Hall in the air. Although the Octoterra Divine Hall could fly as well, it was much slower than Jian Chen traveling personally. He could only travel like this to reach the Heaven's Spirit Hall in the shortest amount of time.

However, the divine hall was still in Jian Chen's possession after all. Even if hall elder-level people from the Serpent God Hall came to deal with him, he would be able to hide in the divine hall in time. This would allow him to fend them off using the divine hall's power.

After all, Jian Chen had completely humiliated the Serpent God Hall this time. No one could be certain that experts from the Serpent God Hall would not tail him secretly and ambush him.

Jian Chen flew cautiously, but it was peaceful along the way. He entered the territory of the Heaven's Spirit Hall very quickly.

Jian Chen finally made his way to the divine hall of the Heaven's Spirit Hall after some more traveling. When he arrived, many experts were gathered outside the hall. There were even a few hall elders standing at the forefront. It was like they had been waiting for a long time.

"You must be warrior Jian Chen," a hall elder said with clasped

hands. His voice was steady, bearing no arrogance or pride at all.

Jian Chen stood in the air with the Octoterra Divine Hall in hand. He gazed past all the people coldly and said, “Correct, I am Jian Chen. Looks like you’ve received the news long ago and have spent quite the time waiting here sternly.”

The hall elder smiled, “Spot on, warrior Jian Chen. You must have come for the business a few years ago.”

“Since you’ve already guessed my intentions, let’s cut to the chase. Hand over the three disciplinary elders that pursued me before, as well as Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi,” Jian Chen said coldly.

A hall elder waved his hand and called out to the back, “Bring them over.”

Two black-robed young men that seemed around thirty-years old brought up five tied-up individuals from behind very quickly. Two of them seemed exactly the same, making it extremely difficult to distinguish between the two.

Jian Chen’s eyes immediately became filled with killing intent when he saw the twins. He said coldly, “Zhou Tianzi, Zhou Yunzi, never have you thought that a day like this would come, have you?”

Zhou Yunzi and Zhou Tianzi both had their strength personally

sealed up by the hall elders, so they were completely equivalent to normal people.

The two of them stared at the hall elders in fury and gnashed their teeth. “Never did we think that the great Heaven’s Spirit Hall would do such wretched things. We two brothers have worked for your hall for so many years as guest elders. We’ve done quite a lot in these years; it may not necessarily be meritorious but it was still hard work. Let alone the fact that we two only went to hunt Jian Chen under your orders. Now that he’s become strong, you toss out the two of us as scapegoats. Hmph, we sure are blind. If we knew that your hall possessed such ungrateful people, we would have never taken up the position of guest elders.”

The hall elder furrowed slightly after hearing their words and growled, “Seal their lips.”

An elder immediately took a step forward, directly pointing at their throats. They lost the ability to talk.

Afterward, the tied-up brothers and the three disciplinary elders were all brought before Jian Chen. Jian Chen could not help but frown slightly when he saw this; he had not thought that the Heaven’s Spirit Hall would follow along so meekly. They had tied up two powerful guest elders like this so straightforwardly. It did not match up at all with what he believed would happen.

“Warrior Jian Chen, we are handing over Zhou Yunzi and Zhou Tianzi who hunted you all those years ago to you. You can deal with them as you wish. We, the Heaven’s Spirit Hall, will definitely not interfere,” the hall elder said with a smile.

“Do you plan on neutralizing my enmity with your hall by handing over the two of them?” Jian Chen asked expressionlessly.

“Correct, it’s just as what you have said. We do not want to be enemies with you, while everything that happened all those years ago was a misunderstanding. We originally planned on inviting you as a guest to our hall, but we never thought that everything would spiral out of control. This lead to all those misunderstandings between us. I am representing the Heaven’s Spirit Hall in giving the most sincere apology. I hope that you can forgive us for everything we have done from the misunderstandings all those years ago.” The hall elder’s words were filled with sincerity. He did not seem to be acting at all.

Jian Chen stared fixedly at the hall elders of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall as the light in his eyes flickered. This development of the situation had completely surprised him. He had originally thought that he would at least need to have a great battle with the Heaven’s Spirit Hall—just like what had happened with the Serpent God Hall—to resolve the matter. However, he had never thought that the Heaven’s Spirit Hall would apologize by themselves. He found this quite unbelievable.

After a period of hesitation, the divine hall in Jian Chen’s left hand suddenly expanded and then he tossed the two people into it. They could not resist at all, and the divine hall returned to his hand quickly afterward. Jian Chen said to the hall elder, “Just Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi is far from enough for us to reconcile over the matters from before.”

The hall elders seemed to have anticipated that Jian Chen would say something like this long ago. As such, without any reactions, one of them ordered, “Summon the three decon elders.”

Very quickly, the three people were summoned from the divine hall of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall. They remained as usual, bearing no particular emotions.

“Warrior Jian Chen, the three disciplinary elders have come. Why don’t we get the three of them to apologize to you and clean off the slate with that,” a hall elder added in suggestion.

“A simple apology won’t be enough,” Jian Chen said as he shook his head gently. Although the Heaven’s Spirit Hall had behaved extremely kindly, a simple apology definitely would not be enough to make up for the time that they had tried to hunt him down all those years ago.

“Warrior Jian Chen, may I ask what you need such that you can let this matter go?” A hall elder asked with no particular emotion, but some anger had already sprouted in his heart. They were one of the three great halls; they had never ever spoken so kindly and meekly to someone. Jian Chen was a first.

“There’s only one way to resolve it, and that is for me to personally end their lives in vengeance,” Jian Chen said sharply. He was unwilling to give in.

“Jian Chen, you’ve gone overboard...” The expressions of a few hall elders changed in reaction to his words and someone

immediately called out involuntarily. He was filled with anger.

The three disciplinary elders were all members of the upper echelon, the true core members of the Heaven's Spirit Hall. Their status could not be compared to Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi, as the two of them were foreigners. They could be cast aside at any time, but they could not lose the three disciplinary elders.

Jian Chen's face sank and the Octoterra Divine Hall immediately flew from his hand. It suddenly began to expand and at the same time, the Emperor Armament appeared in his right hand. It shone with a dazzling dark light while its aura of destruction flooded the region.

"Since you beg to differ, you will be up for a battle." Jian Chen's voice was icy while killing intent surged in his eyes. He had made the preparations for battle long ago. He would not let them go just because of the friendly manner of the Heaven's Spirit Hall.

The hall elders all became rather ugly from this development of the situation, but none of them planned to fight Jian Chen. Even if they ignored the fact that they could not harm Jian Chen at all since he had the Octoterra Divine Hall, their relationship would go downhill as soon as they began fighting. This was disobeying the order set down by the hall master.

"Fine, fine. Jian Chen, we will let you deal with the three disciplinary elders," a hall elder said helplessly.

The faces of the disciplinary elders all sank when they heard that.

A sliver of emptiness filled their eyes that now brimmed with despair.

The three disciplinary elders all stopped twenty meters away from Jian Chen and said proudly, “Jian Chen, we’re here. If you want to kill us, if you want to torture us, go ahead.” The three disciplinary elders carried no fear. They did not fear death.

The three of them knew very well that the Heaven’s Spirit Hall had abandoned them, but they had no complaints at all. After all, their loyalty to the Heaven’s Spirit Hall was undoubtedly great to be able to become disciplinary elders.

“Jian Chen, the three disciplinary elders are all central members of our hall. We don’t want to watch them just die here like this either. Why don’t we get the three of them to swear their loyalty to you in exchange for their lives.” An old voice boomed in Jian Chen’s ear at this very moment.

Jian Chen’s eyes lit up when he heard that, before glancing at the hall elders. He then said to the three disciplinary elders, “I’ll give you an opportunity to live. Swear your loyalty to me.”

The three disciplinary elders looked at each other when they heard this and immediately revealed a sliver of determination. They would rather die than obey. However, their faces changed very quickly and after some slight deliberation as if they were caught in a dilemma, they agreed to Jian Chen’s suggestion in the end. “Alright, the three of us will now completely devote ourselves to you.”

Chapter 962: The White Tiger's Breakthrough

Jian Chen immediately became filled with indescribable delight when he heard that all three of the disciplinary elders were actually willing to obey his words. All three of them had broken through during the years Jian Chen spent in the Octoterra Divine Hall and were now all Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings. The power Jian Chen possessed would increase once the three of them decided to follow him.

Before, Jian Chen had thought of trying to make the disciplinary elders and the divine generals submit to him. He had considered it but he had dismissed the thought as soon as it appeared. This was because he knew that both the divine generals and the disciplinary elders were people of great power in their respective halls. Their statuses were extraordinary, and with that naturally came a great pride. Subduing them and making them follow him would be extremely difficult.

The reason why the three of them had agreed so straightforwardly was all because the hall elders of the Heaven's Spirit Hall had been helping him secretly. The three disciplinary elders would have rather died than submit without the persuasion of the hall elders.

"Please use a secret technique to swear a blood oath that you will never betray me," Jian Chen maintained his calm demeanor and said.

The three disciplinary elders gnashed their teeth before they all

swore a blood oath. They used their own essence blood to draw up an ancient contract. They handed it over to Jian Chen. With this contract, Jian Chen basically held the lives of the three in his hands at all times.

“Warrior Jian Chen, does this satisfy your needs?” A hall elder asked calmly, though he felt quite heavy-hearted.

Jian Chen was obviously extremely happy after gaining the loyalty of three Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings but he showed none of it. He said nonchalantly, “Since your Heaven’s Spirit Hall is so sincere in your apology, I naturally won’t be petty. The enmity that once existed between us is now all wiped off the slate.”

Jian Chen left with the three disciplinary elders after resolving the matters with the Heaven’s Spirit Hall, making way directly to the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall. The hall elders had also dismissed the three disciplinary elders from their positions in the Heaven’s Spirit Hall. As such, they were now people completely unbound to anything. They could now move freely between the three territories of the sea realm.

The group of people outside the Heaven’s Spirit Hall did not disperse for quite some time even after Jian Chen had left. They all stood outside and stared off in the direction where the four people had left; they were all in complete dejection.

The three disciplinary elders were virtually people of the same age as the hall elders. The hall elders possessed a friendship of thousands of years with the three of them, so they were extremely close. Their departure naturally affected the hall elders by quite

some bit.

All the elders and emissaries were utterly dejected. They just could not understand why the esteemed hall elders would make such a decision. The great Heaven's Spirit Hall actually feared a junior; not only did they shy away from battle, they even sent away the three great disciplinary elders to satiate the person's anger. All of them struggled to find a reason even after much thought, feeling great disbelief for the whole matter.

This was completely different to how the Heaven's Spirit Hall would normally resolve matters.

“Let's go. Remember, do not leak a simple part of what has happened today to the outside, and do not seek revenge with Jian Chen. Those who do not comply will suffer the most severe punishment,” a hall elder said gruffly.

Everyone could not help but dismiss their thoughts of revenge when they heard the mention of the most severe punishment. They were in fear.

Jian Chen flew through the air with the three disciplinary elders. They traveled extremely quickly, shooting through the sky like meteors.

“Three elder, how may I refer to you?” Jian Chen smiled faintly as he turned around to ask.

These three people had once tried to hunt him down, but they were now completely people of his side. Jian Chen was also able to dismiss all his previous impressions of them as a result.

“Lan Jing!”

“Xin Pian!”

“Mochas!”

The three people all stated their names. They were all old men who seemed like they were in their seventies, and they all wore cloth robes. Their appearances were not striking in any shape or form, so it really was difficult to tell by appearance alone that they were Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings.

The three disciplinary elders clearly were unable to truly give into following Jian Chen. The three of them remained stern and said nothing else other than stating their names.

The four of them no longer spoke anymore for the rest of the trip. They directly arrived at the Turtle clan. Currently, virtually all the experts of the clan were out at war under Tai Dou’s lead. They were forcefully seizing back their former crystal mines, so the clan seemed quite empty.

“We greet the ruler!”

“We greet the ruler!”

As soon as Jian Chen returned to the clan, all the people he passed by knelt down and greeted him courteously. They looked toward Jian Chen in respect and admiration.

After organizing where the three disciplinary elders would live and allowing them to settle down, Jian Chen immediately locked himself up in a secret room and entered the saint artifact.

Nubis was still devoting himself to the study of the Tian Level Saint Technique and had no impression of time. Meanwhile, Xie Wang was using the cultivation method left behind by the Octoterra Emperor to cultivate.

Jian Chen did not disturb the two of them and instead made his way directly into the depths of the hall, before arriving before a thirty meter tall door.

Rumble! The door opened under the artifact spirit's secret control. As soon as even a crack had appeared, a vast pressure gushed out and filled the hall.

The pressure was still not powerful enough to affect Jian Chen in any way, but it was filled with a domineering aura. This aura was actually countless times denser than the aura of the serpent dragons on the divine hall of the Serpent God Hall.

With the door's opening, a harmonious white light suddenly shone out, illuminating the entire hall.

The origins of this harmonious white light was actually a huge white tiger that lay there with its eyes closed. It was thirty meters long and completely covered with snow-white fur, while each strand of its hair shone with harmonious light. Meanwhile, a pair of huge wings were unfurled comfortably in the space as they floated up and down slowly.

In the recent years, the white tiger had always spent its time in the saint artifact to increase its strength through consuming heavenly resources. Its strength really could have been described as skyrocketing, as it had just broken through to Class 7 right now.

Perhaps due to sensing Jian Chen's arrival, the white tiger's eyes suddenly snapped open. When it saw Jian Chen, its eyes lit up and it produced an excited cry. It then proceeded to run toward Jian Chen.

Mid-air, it shrank quickly and by the time it had landed on Jian Chen's shoulder, it had turned back to the size of a household cat.

"Mrrrrr..." The white tiger produced a deep purr. As it lied on Jian Chen's shoulder, it nibbled his hair while laying his front paws on Jian Chen's head. It seemed to be grumbling about why Jian Chen took so long to visit it.

Jian Chen could not help but smile from the bottom of his heart when he saw how mischievous the white tiger still was. He extended a hand to lift the white tiger from his shoulder to his lap, before gently rubbing its furry head.

Although the white tiger was now a Class 7 Magical Beast, its age was barely anything like that. It still possessed the temperament of a child even after his mind had grown up by quite a lot.

“Class 7 Magical Beasts can take on a human form. Xiao Bai, can you turn into a human now?” Jian Chen asked the white tiger.

The white tiger completely understood Jian Chen’s words, so it responded by shaking its head. Its bright little eyes were filled with confusion, clearly uncertain why it could not take a human form.

Jian Chen smiled gently and said, “You’re a Winged Tiger God, something that’s on a completely different level to ordinary magical beasts. Perhaps the reason you can’t take a human form is exactly because of that. Once you power up some more in the future, you’ll be able to take a human form sooner or later.” Jian Chen’s expression changed with that as he felt that the barrier he cast down outside had been tampered with by someone. He placated the white tiger before leaving directly.

Leaving the secret room, Jian Chen found a Saint Ruler of the Turtle clan standing outside pale-faced. Jian Chen could tell with a single glance that he was quite injured.

“I greet the ruler. This one has only disturbed the ruler’s seclusion because this one had no other choice. Please punish me,” the Saint Ruler knelt down immediately and said with respect.

Jian Chen looked at him sternly and asked, “What has happened,

and what's the reason for your injury?"

"When we went to take back our crystal mines, we were met with the obstruction of powerful foes. Many members of the Turtle clan has been injured, and the ancestor of the Taihong clan, Tai Dou, has also been injured by two experts that were of the same cultivation level as him," the Saint Ruler said deeply. His complexion was horrible.

Jian Chen's face sank when he heard that. "How dare they! Assemble the elders and experts of the Taihong clan immediately in the conference hall."

"Yes, ruler!"

Jian Chen sat expressionlessly on the throne in the conference hall, while a group of people gathered below. They all stood there quietly and no one spoke, causing the atmosphere to become rather heavy.

Almost half of them were pale-faced, clearly quite injured.

Jian Chen glanced past all of them and growled, "Tai Dou, tell me the strength of the opponent."

Tai Dou stepped up and said, "Ruler, the opponent is very powerful. They are a famed clan in the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall and possess two 16th Star experts. They are both as powerful as me, and they also possess a 15th Star expert and many 14th Star

Seasoul Warriors. Their strength completely exceeds us.”

“Alright, I understand,” Jian Chen replied softly, before sitting there quietly.

Three old men walked into the hall not long afterward. They walked in with their chests high, steps in sync and unhurriedly. They did not even glance at the experts in the hall, directly ignoring them.

They were the former three disciplinary elders of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall.

With their entry, the people who had no idea who they were revealed gazes of suspicion, secretly trying to guess their identities.

The three disciplinary elders walked right to the very front before stopping. They all looked at Jian Chen calmly and one of them asked, “Jian Chen, for what have you summoned the three of us?”

The disciplinary elder spoke to Jian Chen as an equal, without displaying any forms of respect.

Chapter 963: Dealing with Zhou Yunzi and Zhou Tianzi

Jian Chen stared at the three disciplinary elders calmly and said, “Elders, I have a mission for you. I hope that you can cooperate with the experts of the Turtle clan in completing it.”

All the experts from the Turtle clan and the Taihong clan were secretly surprised when they heard that Jian Chen wanted these three unknown old men to help them out. Everyone could not help but attempt to sense their strength, but none of them believed that the three old men were actually all of the 16th Star.

Among all of them, only Tai Dou vaguely sensed the strength of the three disciplinary elders as he was the only one at the Fifth Heavenly Layer. He was only slightly weaker than the three elders. Tai Dou could vaguely feel a slight pressure from the three people, which shocked him greatly. He struggled to understand where the ruler of the clan had found these three terrifying experts.

“What do you want the three of us to do?” Disciplinary elder Xin Pian asked as usual.

Jian Chen paid no attention to the attitudes of the trio and spoke to Tai Dou, “Tai Dou, these three elders are all experts no weaker than you. Lead the three of them with haste to the clan and take back our former crystal mine forcefully.”

“Yes, ruler!” Tai Dou was excited. With the help of the three elders that were stronger than him, they now possessed strength

far greater than the opponent. This filled him with confidence.

“This time, I will definitely teach them a solid lesson and pay them back for the humiliation,” Tai Dou swore secretly.

Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas left the Turtle clan with a group of experts under Tai Dou’s lead, making their way toward the opponent’s clan in a threatening manner.

Jian Chen did not re-enter the artifact space after their departure. Instead, he arrived at a beautiful mountain toward the back of the clan with two attendants. In the end, he stopped before a huge grave mound by a lake.

The mound was extremely large and possessed a vast presence. It was a hundred meters wide and thirty meters tall, while a three-hundred-meters tall gravestone stood before it. On it were the carved words: ‘Grave of the Grand Elder’.

This was where the grand elder of the Turtle clan had been laid to rest.

Jian Chen also became heavy-hearted after coming here. He stood before the gravestone and stared at the words in a daze.

In his daze, he felt like he saw the grand elder’s hunchbacked stature, his benevolent and concerning face. It was as if the grand elder was smiling at him, speaking to him silently. The grand elder seemed grateful.

“Grand elder...” Jian Chen subconsciously mumbled, while his face was filled with pain.

Back then, the grand elder of the Turtle clan had died to save him. He had turned into his true form and trapped Zhou Tianzi, Zhou Yunzi, and Li Fengxing into his shell, resisting the fierce attacks from these three great experts. In the end, the Tian Level Saint Techniques from Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi had wiped out his soul, shattering his shell into countless pieces where even his corpse no longer existed as a whole. He had suffered such a miserable death where even Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters could not revive him.

If it were not for the grand elder who sacrificed himself to keep the three experts busy, Jian Chen would not have been able to survive until the arrival of elder Hong. After all, he possessed no strength to resist when he was first hunted down by the three of them.

The sacrifice of the grand elder had touched Jian Chen deeply, striking gratitude deep into Jian Chen’s heart. Other than gratitude, Jian Chen also felt ashamed of himself and deep self-blame.

The grand elder was dead now, but Jian Chen had completely repaid the grand elder’s gratitude and had erased his self-shame.

He could still clearly remember that the will of the grand elder had lingered and failed to disperse even after his death. It was

fixated on the future of the Turtle clan, while Jian Chen would complete the grand elder's final wishes—reviving the Turtle clan and returning it to glory. That way, he could repay the grand elder's kindness and allow his spirit to finally rest properly.

Jian Chen stood absent-mindedly before the huge gravestone, forgetting any sense of time. The two attendants that had followed him here stood silently, afraid that they would disturb the esteemed ruler that they admired.

A violent gust of wind blew past, causing Jian Chen's long, white robes and hair to ruffle in the breeze. Unknowingly, he had already spent several days standing there.

At this very moment, an expert of the Turtle clan ran up the mountain and knelt on one knee twenty meters away. "Ruler, Tai Dou and the three elders have returned with an absolute victory. They have successfully seized back our former crystal mine."

"Send my order for all the clansmen and elders to gather here," Jian Chen's cold voice rang out.

"As the ruler wishes!" The expert replied courteously, before disappearing like the wind.

A deep horn rang out from the tribe far away after a short while. A great group of people hurried toward the mountain with the elders in the lead. They traveled very quickly and soon arrived before the grave of the grand elder.

“We greet the ruler!” All the people knelt on one knee and called out with a deafening voice. They all moved in sync without any disorder.

Jian Chen’s prestige in the Turtle clan was becoming greater and greater, now receiving the respect of everyone. Not only did the status and power of the clan increase greatly since his arrival, they were even slowly taking back their former mines. All the members of the clan believed that the time where they would return to glory had come.

Jian Chen released the tied-up Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi from the Octoterra Divine Hall. As their powers had been sealed up by the hall elders of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall, they were like ordinary people with no power to resist at all.

“Jian Chen, why don’t you hurry up and release us? We’ll show you what we’re made of after we break free ourselves if you don’t!” The two of them immediately began to yell at Jian Chen as soon as they appeared.

Jian Chen stared coldly at the two of them as killing intent surged within him. He said coldly, “How can the seal personally cast down by the hall elders of the Heaven’s Spirit Hall be broken through so easily by the two of you? Otherwise, their status would be nothing more than a name.”

Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi’s expressions changed slightly. They glanced past the huge gravestone and their faces immediately sank. The grand elder had been slain by the Tian Level Saint Techniques they had cast, so they immediately had a general sense of what

Jian Chen wanted to do by bringing them there.

“Jian Chen, what exactly do you want to do to us?” Zhou Tianzi growled.

Jian Chen stared at the gravestone in a daze and said hoarsely, “Blood for blood. I shall use your blood to comfort the grand elder’s spirit.”

“Don’t you dare, Jian Chen!” The expressions of Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi changed drastically, but they continued to glare at Jian Chen.

Jian Chen did not listen to the two of them anymore, turning around to the kneeling members of the Turtle clan. “Everyone, these two people were the ones who killed the grand elder all those years ago. They are both 16th Star experts. Today, I shall slaughter the two of them before all of you, to take revenge for the grand elder.” Jian Chen was basically yelling out hoarsely toward the end.

“To take revenge for the grand elder...”

“Kill the two of them and comfort the grand elder’s spirit...”

...

All of them immediately began to call out loudly, staring at the twins in hatred.

Both of their expressions changed once again. Although they were both Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings, their strength had been sealed up through a secret technique from the hall elders, causing them to become as fragile as ordinary people. They had no ability to flee at all under such circumstances.

The light in Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi's eyes flickered, before they seemingly made a decision. Determination appeared in their eyes. "Jian Chen, as long as you let the two of us off, we will follow you and work for you."

Jian Chen looked at the two of them sarcastically, while the Emperor Armament had already appeared in his hand. He sneered, "I never thought that two of the eight great human experts would have a time where they bow down. But you're the murderers of the grand elder. I won't let you off no matter what you say." Jian Chen slowly raised the Emperor Armament and it immediately began to shine with a blinding dark light.

The twins began to panic. "Jian Chen, the matter all those years ago was all under the orders of the Heaven's Spirit Hall. We were sent by the hall elders to deal with you, so your true enemy is the Heaven's Spirit Hall. Even if you kill us, you won't be able to deal with them. But if you let us go, we can fight the Heaven's Spirit Hall together and take revenge for the grand elder."

The coldness in Jian Chen's eyes deepened, but he was not swayed by their words. He suddenly stabbed out with the Emperor Armament, impaling the foreheads of Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi, and wiping out their souls.

The twins' voices stopped, while a mixture of red and white liquids poured from the wounds. In the end, they collapsed in their own pool of blood, dying on the spot.

This was how two Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings were killed off on a mountain. With their deaths, the eight great human experts of the sea realm became six.

Jian Chen removed their Space Rings before calling out hoarsely, "Come, drain their blood for the grand elder's spirit!"

Immediately, someone ran up to the two of them and created another wound on their bodies. He let the blood flow from their bodies, dyeing the area before the grand elder's gravestone red.

Jian Chen sighed deeply after killing off the two of them. He murmured, "There's just Li Fengxing now. Beast God Continent, I will be coming sooner or later." Jian Chen paused slightly at this point and looked at the space not too far away. He spoke again, this time coldly, "Qing Yixuan, you've seen enough. It's time you came out."

Chapter 964: Leaving the Sea Realm

Qing Yixuan gradually emerged from the space that Jian Chen had his eyes on once he finished speaking. She stared unblinkingly at Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi who lied in the pools of blood, her eyes filled with shock and stupefaction.

Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi were both among the eight great human experts of the sea realm. They were as powerful as her, all Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings. They were all very powerful people both in the sea realm and on the Tian Yuan Continent, yet two of them had just been slain so easily by Jian Chen. The process was like squashing an ant, making it very difficult for Qing Yixuan to accept. Her heart churned, feeling extremely shaken.

Jian Chen stared calmly at her and said nonchalantly, “Qing Yixuan, this is the important grounds of my Turtle clan. What intentions do you have for intruding? Name it, or I can only chase you away personally.” Jian Chen’s emotion had undergone some minute changes as well due to the grand elder. He was no longer as polite as before.

Qing Yixuan immediately became angered by Jian Chen’s threatening words, but she forcefully suppressed her emotions after thinking back to when Zhou Tianzi and Zhou Yunzi had died in his hands. She sucked in a deep breath and slowly calmed down, before looking at Jian Chen with mixed emotions. “I have something I want to discuss with you.”

Jian Chen hesitated slightly, before nodding in agreement in the end. “Come with me.” Jian Chen then flew off into the distance.

Jian Chen and Qing Yixuan stopped ten kilometers away. Jian Chen stood with his arms crossed and his back away from Qing Yixuan as he stared at the mountains in the distance. “Speak. What do you have to discuss with me?”

Qing Yixuan stared at Jian Chen’s back with bright eyes. “I wish for you to help me deal with the Tao family.”

“The Tao family? One of the most powerful clans in the sea realm, the Tao family?” A sliver of surprise appeared in Jian Chen’s eyes.

“Correct, one of the most powerful clans. The former patriarch of the clan possesses something I need very much. I wish for you to help me deal with them and assist me in obtaining that item,” she said.

“The Tao family’s a clan with quite impressive strength. I have no enmity with them, so why should I help you in offending a powerful clan for no reason?” Jian Chen sneered.

Qing Yixuan gnashed her teeth and said, “When I tried to steal the Octoterra Map fragment before, my intentions were to exchange it for the item with the former patriarch. Originally, the map fragment was already in my hands, but it was taken away by you with your despicable methods, wasting all my efforts. You even used it to enter the divine hall and benefited drastically from it. Not only did you obtain an Emperor Armament, the divine hall even ended up in your hands. The reason why you could obtain all

those and possess your current strength is partially due to me. If I didn't take the map fragment from the ancestor of the Hao family, which lead me to become heavily injured, did you really think you could face up against a 15th Star, or even 16th Star expert with your strength back then?"

Jian Chen paused slightly before speaking, "Qing Yixuan, what you've said is indeed quite reasonable, except I stole the map fragment from you purely with my own strength. Right now, I am expanding the Turtle clan. Just taking back the crystal mines already offends enough families, so I cannot help you at this crucial moment. However, feel free to contact the other human experts. I'm sure that they'll help you."

"Jian Chen, it looks like you don't understand the rule for us foreigners to stay in the sea realm. On the surface, we're guest elders of the Sea Goddess Hall so we have a certain status. However, if we do anything overboard in the territory of the Sea Goddess Hall, probably the first ones to punish us will be the hall elders. They definitely will not let us outsiders act as we wish in their territory." Qing Yixuan's eyes flickered as she continued, "But you're different. The status you possess is different from the guest elders. If you do it, the Sea Goddess Hall will not be able to trouble you."

"Qing Yixuan, it's the same as before. I will not be offending a powerful clan just for this small matter. Even though I personally don't fear them, I need to consider for the clansmen too. Farewell." With that, Jian Chen turned around and left.

Qing Yixuan began to panic. She cried out, "Jian Chen, if you

help me obtain that item, I will help you do ten things within my capabilities.”

However, Jian Chen did not turn back at all. He continued on his way. Qing Yixuan’s offer was not enough to tempt him.

Qing Yixuan gritted her teeth as she watched Jian Chen disappear. Fury appeared on her beautiful face, but within it was some helplessness and despair.

After completing the revenge for the grand elder, Jian Chen led the clansmen back to the tribe. Then, he sent out Lan Jing, Xin Pian, and Mochas with Tai Dou and a group of experts to reclaim more crystal mines.

With the three former disciplinary elders, their speed at taking back the crystal mines increased greatly as well. Very quickly, they took back half of what they had once possessed, strengthening the foundations of the clan.

Jian Chen was finally at leisure again as he guarded the clan. He passed his days easily, with no need to work exhaustively or fight for his life. He was no longer that weakling that was chased around by 15th Star experts all those years ago. He now possessed the strength to look down on the entire sea realm.

Jian Chen could not help but start reminiscing about his home in these easy days. Unknowingly, he had already spent several years in the sea realm and during this entire time, he had no idea what was going on in the Tian Yuan Continent.

“I have the power to fight off Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Kings with the Emperor Armament in hand, and anyone below Saint Emperor cannot harm me with the protection of the Octoterra Divine Hall. I now possess the strength to contend with the ten protector clans, so it’s about time I return,” Jian Chen mumbled in a garden. His eyes were filled with recollection.

“Now that I’m a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master, I can revive the dead. Mother and father’s bodies are still at Mercenary City, waiting for me to revive them. Additionally, Xiao Bai’s mother, Rum Guinness, needs my abilities as a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master to heal her. Sighs, it’s about time now.”

“So many years have passed. I wonder how the Flame Mercenaries are right now. It must have grown much more powerful than before under the management of You Yue and Lian’er, and the construction of Flame City should be complete by now. I wonder how big of a disturbance the completion of the city has made on the continent.”

Jian Chen murmured to himself as he paced around the garden. The yearning in his eyes became deeper and deeper, reaching a level where he struggled to suppress it.

Three days later, Jian Chen left the clan after handing over some matters. Xin Pian, Lan Jing, and Mochas did not go with him, staying behind under his request to guard the clan against any experts that came for revenge.

Jian Chen flew vertically upward in excitement, reaching the barrier of the sea realm very quickly. He was about to cross it.

“Jian Chen, remember to find a new host for the orb in the given time. When the worldly ebb arrives, you must return to the sea realm.” The sea goddess’ voice suddenly rang out.

In the faint blue barrier before him, the sea goddess’ figure suddenly appeared. She seemed to be completely part of the barrier, only appearing as a blurry figure.

Jian Chen nodded sternly and said, “Do not worry your majesty. I will definitely complete your request.”

The sea goddess continued, “Jian Chen, if you come across any opponents you cannot defeat on the continent, go to Mercenary City. The barrier of Mercenary City is extremely powerful. It can help you block enemies you cannot defeat.”

Jian Chen was secretly shocked when he heard that. He could not help but think of Xiao Ling’s naive face. He really struggled to believe that such a mischievous little girl would actually be so powerful, where she could block enemies he could not defeat.

“Looks like Xiao Ling is at least a Saint Emperor,” Jian Chen thought.

Jian Chen flew through the barrier and immediately became submerged in the icy-cold seawater. Without any hesitation, he

shot upward like an arrow toward the surface of the sea.

It was a cloudless sky, deep blue in color. The golden sun shone with a dazzling bright light that illuminated the world.

The surface of the sea was calm, while the deep-blue sea fused with the sky at the horizon. It seemed like they were one whole piece, making it impossible to see the end of it.

At this very moment, a ripple appeared in the calm sea. After that, the water suddenly exploded, creating a huge splash in all directions that seemed like the blooming of a water-blue flower.

A figure emerged from the center of the flow with lightning speed. He reached an altitude of several thousand meters in a slight moment, becoming a black speck smaller than an ant.

The figure was Jian Chen. He floated at the high altitude as he slowly closed his eyes and spread open his arms. He laid there with an intoxicated expression, letting the warm sunlight shine on his body.

“It’s been quite some time since I’ve been able to feel the warmth of the sun,” Jian Chen murmured. His voice was filled with excitement that he struggled to hide.

Chapter 965: Return to Three Saint Island

In the sky above the sea realm, Jian Chen slowly calmed himself down. A golden streak of light shot out from the center of his eyebrows, falling into his hand as a golden tower. A white light shot out from it; the cat-sized Xiao Bai had been let out of the artifact space, appearing before Jian Chen.

After spending five years in the artifact space, the white tiger was naturally extremely excited about finally leaving the place. It immediately began to purr excitedly, flying around with its wings in high spirits. It constantly flew around Jian Chen.

Jian Chen was also unknowingly affected by the white tiger's happiness. He could not help but reveal a smile from the bottom of his heart.

The white tiger played enough before finally returning to Jian Chen's shoulder. Its bright and naive eyes were filled with curiosity as they constantly looked around. It would leap from shoulder to shoulder from time to time.

Previously, Jian Chen could only send the white tiger into the artifact space to protect it after its identity had been revealed. Now, Jian Chen was much stronger, no longer the weakling before. He could now protect himself and the white tiger, so there was no longer any need to keep the white tiger in the artifact space like before.

The white tiger had already become a Class 7 Magical Beast as

well. As a beast god, its battle prowess was far greater than beasts of antiquity too. As such, it possessed the strength to protect itself as well. There would be very few people among all the Saint Rulers that could threaten it now.

Jian Chen allowed the white tiger to play around on his shoulders. He gained his bearings using the sun in the sky before fusing with the surrounding space, shooting off toward the Tian Yuan Continent through the use of Spatial Force.

Ripping open a Space Gate was an ability only Saint Kings possessed. Although Jian Chen now had the battle prowess of a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King, his comprehension of the mysteries of the world was just too low. The only reason his comprehension was at the Seventh Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler now was due to devouring the Blood Demon Emperor's soul. As such, he still had quite the distance from Saint King in terms of comprehension. This meant that Jian Chen could not form Space Gates despite his strength.

The sky and sea seemed to fuse as one, making it completely disorientating. Jian Chen borrowed the sun to find his directions, allowing him to move at high speeds over the ocean.

After two days of travel, a large island appeared in Jian Chen's view. Even though it was very far away, Jian Chen could read the stone tablet that clearly stood on the island. Three words were carved finely into it: Three Saint Island.

Unknowingly, he had already arrived at Three Saint Island. Jian Chen could not help but think of the Heavenly Enchantress'

supreme beauty the moment he saw the island, as well as everything that had once happened between the two of them in the Fantasy Star Island. These memories flashed through his head like a dream.

Jian Chen subconsciously slowed down and involuntarily landed on the island before he entered a forest by foot.

There was a city on Three Saint Island where the native fishermen lived. As Jian Chen walked into the city, he admired the unique local customs and practices compared to the Tian Yuan Continent.

All the people that lived on Three Saint Island fished as their primary occupation, so almost all of them were skilled at fishing. At the same time, there were quite a few fighters, ranging from the weakest fighter who had not even condensed their Saint Weapons to powerful Earth Saint Masters.

The people on the island virtually lived a half-hermit life. They knew about the Tian Yuan Continent and had seen some people from the continent but they have never gone there. This was because the distance between the two was just too great. Even Heaven Saint Masters would find it difficult to traverse, because they could lose their sense of direction even if they lost focus for just a moment.

As a result, the disputes of the Tian Yuan Continent were not able to infect Three Saint Island, allowing all the people who lived here to maintain some simplicity and honesty. Each and every one of them would bear naive and happy smiles.

As a foreigner, Jian Chen was immediately noticed by the natives as he entered the city. He immediately became surrounded by young men around his age that warmly greeted him. They bombarded him with questions.

These young men were not strong. The most powerful had only just become a Great Saint but Jian Chen did not act arrogantly. He smiled as he conversed with them, mentioning quite a few matters about the Tian Yuan Continent.

“Since you’re from the Tian Yuan Continent, you must have the strength needed to cross the sea. You must be a Heaven Saint Master, right?”

“Woah, Heaven Saint Master. That’s like equal to a few elders on the island. You don’t seem very old, but you’ve already reached such a level of cultivation. We really do admire you.”

The young men gathered around Jian Chen as they chattered.

At this moment, Jian Chen spoke out, “You’ve asked me so many questions. Shouldn’t it be my turn to ask now?”

“Ask as many as you want, brother. As long as we know it, we will definitely not hide it from you,” a young man patted his chest as he said.

“I want to know about the accomplishments of your island

mistress,” Jian Chen asked casually, but he was looking toward Three Saint Island in the distance.

The young men’s eyes lit up when they heard him mention the hall mistress. They immediately began to take turns in describing the island mistress’ accomplishments. All of them struggled to hide the respect in their eyes. It originated from the bottom of their hearts.

Jian Chen gained an even better understanding regarding the Heavenly Enchantress’ past from them. When he had learned everything the young men knew, he bid farewell to them, and directly flew toward Three Saint Mountain.

Jian Chen did not erase his presence after making his way to the mountain. A powerful presence radiated from him, but it was only at the level of Saint Ruler.

Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue both stopped cultivating and came out of their dwellings on the mountain when they sensed that arrival of a Saint Ruler. They recognized Jian Chen from afar and called out, “So it’s master Jian Chen who has suddenly come to visit.”

Jian Chen clasped his hands toward the two of them as he smiled and said, “I’ve come out of the blue. If I have caused any disturbances, please forgive me.”

“Master Jian Chen doesn’t need to be so polite. Please come in.” Xiao Qian and Xiao Yue did not treat Jian Chen as an outsider at all. They were very friendly.

Jian Chen followed the two of them into the mountain. After conversing a little, he expanded his presence and encased the entire mountain. However, he failed to find the Heavenly Enchantress' traces, so he asked, "Miss Xiao Qian, miss Xiao Qing, may I ask where your master is right now?"

"Master has already been in seclusion for several years. If master Jian Chen has come looking for master, you may have to leave disappointed," said Xiao Qian.

"Seclusion?" Jian Chen furrowed his eyebrows. He had scanned through the place where the Heavenly Enchantress planned to go into seclusion before, but he did not find her there.

"Perhaps the Heavenly Enchantress hasn't entered seclusion on the island and has gone elsewhere?" Jian Chen thought.

Jian Chen's eyes narrowed at this very moment. He suddenly raised his head toward the distance and saw a white-dressed girl standing afar with a zither in her hands. She stared at Jian Chen in a daze.

The girl was extremely pretty, seemingly able to outshine the moon. She possessed a rare beauty in the world. She was not very old, only around twenty years old it seemed. She appeared to be extremely gentle and quiet, possessing a natural sense of nobility due to her upbringing.

"Miss Qin Qin!" Jian Chen subconsciously called out as he stared

at the girl in shock and disbelief. This was the first time he had seen Qin Qin's appearance, but with his familiarity with her, he could naturally distinguish her at first glance. She was the young lady of the Tianqin clan.

Qin Qin slowly walked over with her zither in her hands as she stared unblinkingly at Jian Chen. Her eyes were filled with mixed emotions. "Master Jian Chen, I'd never thought you'd recognize me. It is my honor."

"Miss Qin Qin, weren't you with the Tianqin clan on the Tian Yuan Continent? Why've you suddenly appeared here?" Jian Chen asked in surprise.

"I've already taken the Heavenly Enchantress as my master. Master brought me here," said Qin Qin. Her voice was soft and filled with femininity.

"Miss Qin Qin's comprehension of the zither is very high. It truly is a joyous matter for you to be able to become a disciple of the Heavenly Enchantress," said Jian Chen with a smile. He felt happy for her from the bottom of his heart, but the only thing that caused him to worry was her gaze toward him.

Jian Chen had stopped being dense long ago. He could tell Qin Qin's crush on him, which caused his anguish.

Jian Chen sighed gently inside, no longer wanting to consider these annoying matters. He pulled out a piece of jade from his Space Ring and said, "Miss Qin Qin, the island is very far away

from the Tian Yuan Continent, and the Heavenly Enchantress also goes into seclusion often. If you want to visit home, just crush this piece of jade. I will hurry over at top speed to take you back so you can visit your home.”

“Thank you, master Jian Chen.” Qin Qin revealed a sweet smile on her face. She extended her soft, white hand to accept the piece of jade from Jian Chen, holding it in her hand like a piece of treasure.

“It’s about time I return to the Tian Yuan Continent. Miss Qin Qin, Miss Xiao Qian, and Miss Xiao Yue, hopefully, we will see each other some other time.” Jian Chen yearned for his family and had no interest in staying very long on the island. As a result, he immediately bid farewell to the three girls.

Hearing how Jian Chen wanted to leave for the Tian Yuan Continent, Qin Qin immediately began to panic. “Master Jian Chen, you can’t return to the Tian Yuan Continent. There are people looking for you everywhere right now. They want to take the Winged Tiger God.” She could not help but glance at the lazy white tiger on Jian Chen’s shoulder as she said that.

Jian Chen smiled and replied, “Don’t worry, they won’t dare to do anything to me.”

Jian Chen bid farewell to the three girls, before immediately leaving the island and flying toward the Tian Yuan Continent.

Chapter 966: Fury

Three Saint Island was extremely far away from the Tian Yuan Continent. With Jian Chen's speed, he had to travel for almost ten days before finally leaving the ocean, arriving at shore. However, he did not stop at all, continuing his way into the continent.

As he traveled, Jian Chen would come across merchants and mercenaries when he stopped to ask for the way. However, he learned nothing other than the fact that he was currently in a small kingdom.

Perhaps due to the distance or their limited knowledge and experience, they had not even heard of the eight great kingdoms of the Tian Yuan Continent. As a result, asking for the location of the Gesun Kingdom from them was impossible.

Jian Chen traveled for another four hours before stopping in a very busy king city within a kingdom. The Tian Yuan Continent was just too expansive, with an innumerable amount of kingdoms. He needed to find a map that allowed him to find the whereabouts of the Gesun Kingdom.

Jian Chen expanded his presence, encasing the entire city. In the end, he made his way toward the largest general store at the center.

Jian Chen conversed with the shopkeeper, before leaving the place with a map that recorded the Qinhuang Kingdom. It was the most detailed map in the store. Although it did not have the Gesun

Kingdom, it was more than enough for Jian Chen as once he made his way to the Qinhuang Kingdom, he could use their Space Gate to travel to the Gesun Kingdom.

As soon as he returned to the streets after buying the map, quite a large mercenary group passed by. The middle-aged men at the very front rode Class 4 Magical Beasts as they conversed.

“I heard the Extinguishing Mercenaries Alliance is currently mass-recruiting over the entire continent. Looks like it’s true that they want to become the greatest mercenary group on the continent,” a middle-aged burly and bare-chested man said.

A person clad in red armor beside him smiled disdainfully when he heard that. He replied, “They sure are ambitious if they want to become the greatest mercenary group. The continent is so big. Just how far do you think they can extend their tendrils just as a mercenary group? Do they really think they’re Mercenary City?”

“You better believe it, the Extinguishing Alliance is far greater than you can possibly imagine. It’s said that they have a Saint King supporting them, so they’re very powerful. I even heard that they had invited their supporting Saint King to personally move out for them, casting down several dozen Space Gates in Extinguished City so that they can go anywhere on the continent,” said the bare-chested man.

“Space Gates? What’re those?” The mercenaries of similar ages around the man all stuck their heads into the conversation as they asked out of curiosity.

The burly man lowered his head in thought. Then, he said with some uncertainty, “I don’t know what Space Gates are either, but I heard from other people that it seems to be an ability that can send people anywhere on the Tian Yuan Continent. Additionally, only Saint Kings can use it.”

The mercenaries on their Class 4 Magical Beasts all became shocked when they heard that. The red-armored man sighed and said, “If they really do have an ability that allows them to send anyone anywhere on the Tian Yuan Continent, it’s not impossible for them to become the greatest mercenary group.”

“Of course. Don’t forget that they’re in possession of the only city completely made of tungsten alloy in the entire history of the continent. Just the city is enough to contend with the seven capitals. Extinguished City has already taken up the nickname of the eighth capital,” the bare-chested man said enviously.

Jian Chen immediately stopped as he heard that when he walked past them. A sliver of curiosity appeared in his eyes as he mumbled, “What is this Extinguishing Alliance, to take the only tungsten alloy city on the entire continent? Weird. Wasn’t the first city of tungsten alloy going to be the Flame City of our Flame Mercenaries? Why’s there another city now? And why have I never heard of its name? Wait a second, extinguishing... extinguishing... extinguishing...” Jian Chen seemed to think of something. A light gradually began to shine in his eyes and with a slight movement, he disappeared from where he stood.

“The Extinguishing Alliance...” The bare-chested man continued

to chatter to his companions about the information he had recently learned of. However, he saw a blur flash past his eyes just as he was about to continue. A white-robed young man had suddenly appeared before him.

The young man stood with stability on the magical beast mount as he stared down at him. He said with a deep voice, “Tell me, what type of mercenary group are the Extinguishing Mercenaries? How did they take the first city completely made of tungsten alloy on the continent?”

The man possessed a rash personality and also had some background in the region. He immediately became enraged when he saw that someone dared to stand on his mount and speak to him like that. He slapped the back of the beast heavily and abruptly rose up, standing on the beast just like Jian Chen. He roared out, “How dare-”

However, he suddenly felt his neck tighten the moment he said those two words. The young man had already grabbed him by the neck with lightning speed, causing breathing to become difficult for him. He felt like he was suffocating.

The man tried to resist with his hands, but as soon as he tried to move, he discovered in horror that the space around him had already frozen. It locked his entire body in place, to the point where he could not even move a finger.

The sudden occurrence immediately caused the man to become terrified as he had never experienced the might of a Saint Ruler. His burning rage had been put out in that moment and was now

replaced by fear. Right now, no matter how ignorant he was, he knew that this young man was not someone he could offend.

“Who the hell are you to attack the people of our Venomous Snake Mercenaries? Give up your life!” The man’s companions all reacted by stabbing their Saint Weapons at Jian Chen.

“Piss off!” Jian Chen bellowed. Immediately, a vast aura exploded from his body, forming a powerful force that knocked them away.

They were all Earth Saint Masters, so they were knocked flying by Jian Chen’s aura without any ability to resist. They fell on the streets, all vomiting blood. They were heavily injured.

Jian Chen glared at the man and loosened his grip on the man’s neck. He growled, “Tell me, just where does this Extinguishing Alliance originate from? Where is the tungsten alloy city that they inhabit?”

The man had personally witnessed his companions being knocked flying just by his aura alone and was immediately frightened. It was so bad that he almost fainted. He knew extremely well that even Heaven Saint Masters could not do this, injuring a bunch of Earth Saint Masters so easily. Also, only Saint Rulers were rumored to be able to freeze space.

Recovering his ability to talk, the man no longer dared to be brutish. He had guessed Jian Chen’s strength, which caused him to be overwhelmed by fear. He immediately knelt down and began to plead, “Senior, please spare my life, please spare my life. This one

is blind and did not see the arrival of senior. I've offended senior. Please be magnanimous, senior. Please spare this one's life."

Jian Chen's face sank and said deeply, "Answer my question."

"Yes, yes, yes. This one will answer immediately, at once. This one does not know the exact origins of this Extinguishing Alliance because this one heard it from rumors as well. However, the Extinguished City that they inhabit is extremely far away from here. This does not know exactly how far away it is either but it's relatively closer to the Qinhuang Kingdom," the man said hurriedly.

"Closer to the Qinhuang Kingdom," Jian Chen murmured as his heart shivered. A sudden ill premonition began to strengthen in his heart.

"Do you know about the Flame Mercenaries?" Jian Chen asked.

"I know, I know. Of course I know. There's basically no mercenary on the continent who doesn't know the Flame Mercenaries. It's said that Extinguished City was originally constructed by them, but just as it had been completed, it was suddenly taken away by the Extinguishing Alliance." The man told Jian Chen everything he knew.

Jian Chen suddenly became stunned and rather lifeless. That final sentence from the man echoed in his head as he struggled to accept it.

“Taken away. The tungsten alloy city that they built after so many hardships has actually been taken away. No, this is impossible. How did it end up like this? How?” In that moment, Jian Chen seemed to become lifeless. Deep anguish filled his face.

Suddenly, You Yue, Bi Lian, and the others flashed through Jian Chen’s head, causing his expression to change drastically. He immediately used his arm to grab the man and bellowed, “What happened to the people of the Flame Mercenaries in the end!? Speak! What happened!?” Jian Chen’s voice was filled with urgency. Before, the ten protector clans had been searching for him everywhere. He feared that the Flame Mercenaries would be pulled into this matter or even harmed.

Before he had left, he had once asked Tian Jian to look after the mercenaries for him. Now that the city had been taken, even Tian Jian was unable to prevent it. This had basically confirmed for Jian Chen that the ten protector clans had interfered.

“I don’t know, I don’t know. I really don’t know. I just know that they were chased out, but I don’t know what happened because I haven’t heard about it at all.” The man was absolutely frightened, where even his voice began to tremble.

Jian Chen slowly released the man. He was sandwiched between sorrow and fury, with deep worry in between. However, in the next moment, it was all replaced by a tremendous killing intent.

Chapter 967: Monstrous Killing Intent

Jian Chen remained standing on the Class 4 Magical Beast, but it had already collapsed from terror. It trembled on the ground as fear flooded its eyes.

A powerful killing intent uncontrollably radiated from Jian Chen's body, surging directly toward the skies. The surrounding clouds and even the wind changed as a result. It was to the point where even the sun seemed to dull. It did not seem to be able to match up against the killing intent from Jian Chen.

Jian Chen was currently in a king city, as well as the imperial city of the kingdom. There was a beautiful palace a short distance from the city walls, and the eyes of several old men who were cultivating inside snapped open. They stared in the direction in shock as they emerged from the palace. They were all extremely grim.

The old men were all the peak-level experts of the kingdom and were all Heaven Saint Masters.

“What a vast presence and powerful killing intent. It's enough to even make me tremble inside. It's impossible for Heaven Saint Masters to have such a powerful presence. The owner of it must be a Saint Ruler,” an old man said hoarsely.

Other Heaven Saint Masters ran over from afar. One of them growled, “There's a Saint Ruler that has come to our city, and it seems like he has been irritated by someone. Let's quickly go have a look.”

Several Heaven Saint Masters immediately flew toward Jian Chen's direction.

At the same time, a ruddy old man sat with his legs crossed. He was cultivating in a quiet wooden hut several kilometers away from the city on a mountain. The space around him produced visible ripples slowly, while the old man's body seemed to become one with the surroundings.

This old man was a Saint Ruler.

Suddenly, the old man's eyes snapped open. With a movement of his body, he immediately left the wooden hut, reappearing several meters away on a mountaintop. He cast his gaze far sternly as deep shock filled his misty eyes. He said with his trembling old voice, "What a powerful presence and terrifying killing intent. This-this-this is a Saint King. Why has a supreme Saint King come to such a rural area and why are they radiating with such terrifying killing intent? Has someone aggravated him?"

"No, I need to go have a look." The old man fused with the surrounding space, shooting off as a faint blur.

Within the city, Jian Chen's fists were already tightly clenched. He gnashed his teeth and said, "The Extinguishing Alliance actually dares to take my Flame City and chase away my Flame Mercenaries. It matters not who's behind you. I will not forgive you."

At this moment, the Heaven Saint Masters flew over from within the palace. They stopped a hundred meters away from Jian Chen as they stared at him anxiously. After some slight deliberation, someone finally stepped out and clasped his hands and said, "Senior, we are the Imperial Advisors of the Amma Kingdom. May we ask what has aggravated senior? If there is anything we can help you with, we are extremely willing."

The Imperial Advisors were extremely polite as they were afraid of offending Jian Chen.

Jian Chen paid no attention to them and instead stared off into the distance. His eyes were completely bloodshot, possessing his residual fury and killing intent that he had yet to disperse.

A figure flew over like a bolt of lightning where Jian Chen stared, arriving before him in the blink of an eye. To no surprise, it was the old man who had been cultivating in the mountains.

The faces of the Imperial Advisors immediately lit up when they saw the arrival of the old man. They all bowed politely and said, "We greet the Imperial Protector."

The old man referred to as the Imperial Protector paid no attention to them and secretly examined Jian Chen. He was shocked inside, because under Jian Chen's gaze, he felt like his body had been impaled by two swords. He felt a slight aching pain; when he faced Jian Chen, he felt like he was not facing a person, but an unscalable mountain. He felt like he was as weak as an ant, pressuring him greatly.

“He sure is a Saint King. So strong as expected,” the old man thought. However, he maintained his polite appearance, bowing deeply toward Jian Chen. He said courteously, “Yan Zinan greets senior. May I inquire what is making senior so furious? If there is anything senior needs, I am willing to do everything I can.”

The Imperial Advisors were greatly shocked when they saw the esteemed Saint Ruler Imperial Protector treat Jian Chen so courteously, and even refer to him as senior. Their gazes toward Jian Chen also underwent an overwhelming change.

“Perhaps this person is not a Saint Ruler but a Saint King?” In that moment, similar thoughts appeared in the heads of the Heaven Saint Masters at the same time. Their minds immediately fell into turmoil, drowned by astoundment.

“Where is the closest Space Gate?” Jian Chen glared at Yan Zinan as he asked in a deep voice.

A sliver of suspicion flashed through Yan Zinan’s eyes when he heard that, but he did not dare to poke his nose into the matter. He said courteously, “Senior, probably only the ancient clan in the White Phoenix Mountain Range, the Kegu clan, has a Space Gate in the surrounding radius of several hundred thousand kilometers.”

“Where is the White Phoenix Mountain Range?” Jian Chen followed up.

“Five hundred thousand kilometers to the west,” said Yan Zinan,

hiding nothing.

Jian Chen shot off like a cannonball as soon as he finished speaking, shooting off toward the west. He was currently extremely far away from the Qinhuang Kingdom, so it would take quite some time if he flew.

Jian Chen no longer dared to travel slowly after learning about what had happened to Flame City. He currently only wanted to find a Space Gate and quickly return to the Gesun Kingdom. That way, he could save quite a lot of time.

Although Nubis was a Saint King and could rip open a Space Gate, he was currently working hard on studying the Saint Tier Battle Skill from the sea realm. He had even reached a crucial part of it. As a result, Jian Chen did not disturb him over this small matter, just in case it would end up wasting all his prior efforts.

An ancient mountain range existed several hundred thousand kilometers from the Amma Kingdom. Many magical beasts existed there, with no lack of Class 6 ones. It was a prime hunting location for many mercenary groups.

In the depths of the mountain range was a region enshrouded by poisonous gas. The poisonous gas never dispersed and was extremely powerful, so even Heaven Saint Masters did not dare too venture deeply into it. Around the perimeter of the gas lived several powerful Class 6 Magical Beasts.

In the countless years it had existed, many Heaven Saint Masters

had tried investigating the depths, but in the very end, they all emerged heavily injured or died inside. After some time, the region of the poisonous gas became labeled as a death zone.

Hidden inside the gas was a huge manor that barely anyone knew about. It was encased by a powerful barrier and countless buildings stood within it. Many simply-dressed people could be clearly seen as they constantly moved about inside.

This was where the Kegu clan existed, while the mountain range was called the White Phoenix Mountain Range.

At this very moment, the poisonous gas outside began to ripple. A black sword Qi seemed to descend from outer space, cutting through the poisonous gas and striking the barrier forcefully.

Boom!

The peace of the Kegu clan was broken, and the barrier cast down by the Saint King of the clan was immediately broken. It failed to resist the powerful the sword Qi.

The sudden occurrence alerted all the people inside the clan. In that moment, the eyes of the experts in secluded cultivation within the clan all snapped open. They shot into the air as they radiated with a tremendous presence. They all stared grimly at the barrier that had disappeared completely.

“Who has come? My Kegu clan may have failed to welcome you

from afar, but there's no need to break my clan's barrier." An old voice boomed in the surroundings. It was extremely powerful and forceful, reverberating in the surroundings.

With the voice, a tremendous presence suddenly appeared. It enveloped the surrounding region. A wrinkly old man slowly floated in the sky. He was one of the two ancestors of the clan, Ke Nan.

At the same time, another old man slowly rose into the sky as he radiated with a great presence from another area of the manor. He was the other ancestor of the Kegū clan, Ke Bei.

The two Saint Kings were furious as they raised their heads to take a look.

In the surging poisonous gas, a white-robed young man slowly descended with a long sword in his hand. His face was cold as dense killing intent flickered in his eyes.

The gazes of both Ke Bei and Ke Nan gathered on Jian Chen's sword. With their knowledge, they naturally recognized it as an Emperor Armament at first glance. This caused their eyes to narrow and their faces were immediately flooded with shock.

"Sir, is there any way our Kegū clan has offended you?" Ke Bei asked. His eyes were filled with sternness.

"You have a Space Gate here. Let me borrow your Space Gate."

Jian Chen descended from the sky as he stared coldly at the two of them.

“Hmph, you are a Saint King and can rip open a Space Gate. Why must you use the Space Gate of the Kegu clan? Are you perhaps joking with us?” Ke Nan became furious.

Jian Chen remained expressionless and did not give an explanation. All he said was, “Let me borrow your Space Gate and I will leave immediately.”

Chapter 968: Returning to Qinhuang Kingdom

The expressions of the two Saint Kings of the Kegū clan both darkened. In their opinion, Jian Chen was clearly a Saint King. He had the power to rip open a Space Gate, yet he just had to borrow the Kegū clan's one. This was a straightforward provocation.

The Kegū clan was an ancient clan with two Saint Kings protecting it, so how could they endure such an insult? Ke Nan and Ke Bei immediately became furious and roared, "Sir, are you looking down on us? Since you want to humiliate our clan like this, allow the two of us to observe your strength. Let's see just what you are capable of to be able to look down on us."

Jian Chen immediately frowned when he heard that. He had come to the Kegū clan purely to borrow their Space Gate. He had never thought that such a simple matter would cause misunderstandings.

Without giving Jian Chen any time to explain, the two Saint Kings both rose and charged toward Jian Chen as they radiated with vast energy ripples. Huge, palm-width swords had already appeared in their hands. They swung the swords directly at Jian Chen.

The space on the Tian Yuan Continent was not as tough as the sea realm. With just the strokes of these swords, the space was shattered, revealing a patch of darkness. However, Ke Nan and Ke Bei remained unaffected. The Saint Weapons in their hands shone with a blinding light, stabbing through the shattered space toward

Jian Chen.

Ke Bei and Ke Nan were Second and Third Heavenly Layer Saint Kings respectively. Although they were great experts on the continent, they were not worth any attention from Jian Chen. Just the toughness of his Chaotic Body at the third layer was enough to resist attacks from Third Heavenly Layer Saint Kings without any harm.

Jian Chen remained as cold as before. His arm shook violently and the Emperor Armament in his hand stabbed out as a dark streak of light.

Ding ding!

The Emperor Armament collided with the two Saint Weapons with two crisp sounds. The air trembled without stop as a violent storm of energy whipped out.

In the moment the Emperor Armament collided with their weapons, Ke Nan and Ke Bei immediately felt an irresistible force. Not only did it shake their arms until they became numb, a powerful force traveled up their limbs and into their bodies. It shook up their inner organs violently, causing the air to become a bloody mist.

Ke Bei and Ke Nan shot backward out of control, only stabilizing themselves after traveling ten whole kilometers. They immediately became overwhelmed with shock. They both understood that if Jian Chen's attack was slightly more powerful,

they would definitely become extremely heavily injured.

However, Jian Chen seemed at ease, as if he had not struck out with his full strength.

“Sir, who are you? How has my clan offended you? Why must you make it difficult for us?” Ke Nan asked gruffly. He became extremely stern.

“I only want to borrow your Space Gate. I have no problem with your clan,” said Jian Chen.

“Hmph, you’re a Saint King and you’re much stronger than us. You can just rip open a Space Gate, yet you just have to make trouble and come use our clan’s Space Gate. Aren’t you intentionally trying to make fun of my clan?” He Bei said darkly.

Jian Chen could not be bothered with explanations. “If you let me borrow your Space Gate, I’ll leave immediately. Are you going to let me borrow it or not? If you’re not going to, then I’ll use it anyway.” Jian Chen voice was cold, but it was also filled with a powerful confidence. It was like he did not view the two Saint Kings as anything at all.

The current Jian Chen was worlds apart from the Jian Chen of years ago. Back then, he had no power to resist at all when he went up against organizations like ancient clans, but now, he could completely look down on them or even threaten them.

In this world, only those with strength would be respected. There were no principles to argue over, no concept of 'fair' or any difference between right and wrong. It all depended on one thing and that was strength. Strength that could make opponents fear or even dread.

The two Saint Kings reacted by changing in expression multiple times. Faced with Jian Chen's threatening words, they could actually do nothing. The opponent was powerful, strong enough to look down on the two of them or even flip their Kegu clan upside down.

"Alright. Since you want to use our Space Gate, please come with us." The two Saint Kings finally gave in. They could do nothing whether the opponent was trying to provoke them or if he truly wanted to use the Space Gate. All they could do was bring him to the location of the Space Gate under Jian Chen's request.

Jian Chen casually followed behind the two Saint Kings under the gazes of countless clansmen as he swaggered to the Space Gate's location. Afterward, it was personally activated by Ke Bei and Ke Nan.

Seeing how Jian Chen really did plan on using the Space Gate and did not come looking for trouble, the two of them could not help but secretly sigh a breath of relief. Ke Bei asked expressionlessly, "May I ask where you want us to lock on the Space Gate?"

"Qinhuang Kingdom of the eight great kingdoms," said Jian Chen.

The Space Gate quickly locked onto the Qinhuang Kingdom, and Jian Chen then directly crossed through the Space Gate under the gazes of the two Saint Kings.

With Jian Chen's departure, the two of them quickly closed the Space Gate and sighed a great breath of relief inside. They had finally sent away an annoying opponent.

Jian Chen directly arrived at the Qinhuang Kingdom through the Space Gate. After determining his location, he directly flew toward the imperial palace of the kingdom, disappearing in the blink of an eye. He was extremely fast.

It was peaceful in the imperial palace and groups of elite, armored guards patrolled the surroundings in an orderly fashion. The quiet palace possessed some grandeur and an inviolable prestige.

At this very moment, a tremendous presence appeared in the surroundings. It seemed to be able to affect the world, causing the weather to change. The clouds in the sky churned as if there was a great dragon swimming inside.

The presence became stronger and stronger as it rapidly approached the palace.

The four Imperial Protectors who cultivated in the Qin Heaven Palace opened their eyes at the same time. Shock flashed through their eyes. Without any hesitation, they left the building and

floated high up in the air. They stared grimly in the direction of the presence.

At the same time, all the Heaven Saint Masters in the palace and city felt the presence that made them shiver from the bottom of their souls. They were all shocked as well. They stopped what they were doing and looked into the air, in the direction of the presence.

“It’s a Saint Ruler. A Saint Ruler has come to Qinhuang City. Looking at this presence, the person is probably one of the more powerful ones as well.”

“I’m guessing that they’re at least of the Fifth Heavenly Layer. Only an expert like that can cause me to tremble.”

“The Saint Ruler comes with ill intentions. I’m guessing he’s come to look for trouble with the kingdom.”

“What’re you scared about? The kingdom has the four Imperial Protectors guarding it. With an advantage in numbers, who dares to provoke us? They’ll just return in the end after suffering a loss.”

...

The many Heaven Saint Masters in Qinhuang City began discussing. As they were too weak, they thought the owner of the presence was a Saint Ruler. To them, only Saint Rulers would appear sometimes on the Tian Yuan Continent. They did not even

consider the more powerful Saint Kings.

This was because Saint Kings were just a group of people that existed in legends to them. They would not appear even in thousands of years.

The four Imperial Protectors hung in the air. Qin Yunlong said deeply, “What a vast presence. The owner of this presence is at least a Saint King.”

“Just who is he? Why has he come to our Qinhuang Kingdom? We haven’t seemed to have offended any expert in so many years,” the Imperial Protector besides Qin Yunlong said. He was extremely grim.

The other two Imperial Protectors were grim as well, filled with uneasiness inside.

A figure shot over from afar with lightning speed under the nervous gazes of the four Imperial Protectors. He arrived before the four of them very quickly and stopped. It was Jian Chen.

The four Imperial Protectors had already clasped their hands. Just as they were about to bow and greet the person, they suddenly saw Jian Chen’s appearance. They were stunned immediately, before disbelief flooded their expressions. Their mouths hung agape. They were completely astounded.

“J-J- J-J- Jian Chen!” Qin Yunlong cried out. He stared at Jian

Chen in disbelief as his heart began to churn. Never did he even consider that the owner of the powerful presence was Jian Chen, who had gone missing for several years.

“Imperial Protector Jian Chen, why is it you...”

“Jian Chen, have you already become a Saint King in just those few short years...”

“Jian Chen, are you a Saint Ruler or Saint King right now...”

The other three Imperial Protectors all called out together. All of them stared at Jian Chen in disbelief. They could naturally feel the tremendous presence from Jian Chen. As they currently faced him, they could actually feel an invisible pressure that implanted the thought of defeat in their minds.

Naturally, only Saint Kings could make them feel like that. However, they just struggled to believe that Jian Chen had broken through Saint Ruler so quickly to become a Saint King.

Chapter 969: Fighting the Extinguishing Alliance

“Four Imperial Protectors, I have urgent matters that require the use of the Space Gate. We can catch up some other time,” Jian Chen said calmly. Although he should be very happy about returning to his homeland, the Tian Yuan Continent, whatever happened to the Flame Mercenaries made it very difficult for him.

Qin Yunlong sucked in a deep breath and slowly calmed himself down. At that moment, his gaze toward Jian Chen underwent a complete change, and he said, “Jian Chen, are you referring to the matter of the Flame Mercenaries?”

Jian Chen nodded and asked, “Just what has happened to the mercenaries? They were just fine, so why did they get chased away and have Flame City taken away? Who’s the person behind this Extinguishing Alliance?”

“It is one of the eight princes of the Felicity Empire, Bi Jian,” said Qin Yunlong.

“Bi Jian. So it’s him.” The killing intent exploded in Jian Chen’s eyes. It was extremely terrifying.

“Then, how are the Flame Mercenaries right now?” Jian Chen followed up.

Qin Yunlong sighed gently as he replied, “The Flame Mercenaries

have basically dispersed. A portion have run off by themselves, another part has joined the Extinguishing Alliance, while the remaining went to the Gesun Kingdom. Your group of friends are all fine. They were taken away by a Saint King from a protector clan.”

Jian Chen could not help but sigh in relief when he heard that You Yue and the others were fine. However, the killing intent in his eyes remained just as terrifying. He gnashed his teeth and said, “I want to borrow the Space Gate to go to Flame City. I’d like to see just what the Extinguishing Alliance can do for taking my Flame City.”

Afterward, Jian Chen arrived at the Space Gate under the accompaniment of the four Imperial Protectors. He passed through it and traveled to Flame City.

With Jian Chen’s departure, the four Imperial Protectors stood there in a daze. Shocked lights flickered through their eyes, while a group of Heaven Saint Master Imperial Advisors gathered around them.

“Weird. Has Jian Chen reached Saint King or not? His presence is definitely at the level of Saint Kings, but why does he need to use our Space Gate?” An Imperial Protector asked doubtfully.

The three other Imperial Protectors nodded in agreement when they heard that. They all found it extremely strange.

The Imperial Advisors around them were all astounded when

they heard the words of the protectors. Stupefaction shone through their eyes, and at that very moment, all of them seemed to doubt what they had heard. The Imperial Protector Jian Chen had only just reached Heaven Saint Master a few years ago, yet he was now a Saint King. They struggled to believe this.

Meanwhile, Jian Chen had no idea just how much he had shocked the people of the Qinhuang Kingdom. He had arrived ten kilometers from Extinguished City.

From afar, Jian Chen saw the grandiose and extravagant dark city walls. They stood like a coiled dragon, radiating with an invisible pressure that shocked the souls of people.

The city gates were wide open as large numbers of people in the attire of mercenaries poured in and out of the city. Some traveled by foot, while others rode magical beasts. It left behind thickly-packed footprints on the ground below.

The current Extinguished City was bustling. Not only did several million people live within its walls, stores also filled the city. The noise and commotion on the streets were very great, filling the city with life.

Jian Chen slowly looked upward and stopped on the two words on the plaque that hung on the walls: Extinguished City. Killing intent immediately began to churn within him, leaking out of his body uncontrollably. It surged directly toward the sky.

The city before him, completely constructed from tungsten alloy,

belonged to the Flame Mercenaries. The people that settled down in the city and the flags on its walls should have belonged to the Flame Mercenaries as well. However, everything had changed. It was all someone else's now.

Jian Chen struggled to keep his fury suppressed when he thought about how the city that the Flame Mercenaries had poured a countless amount of wealth and energy to construct was now taken over by someone else. The Flame Mercenaries had to overcome many hardships to create this city.

“Argh!” Jian Chen roared at the sky. It was thunderous, exploding in the sky. Just the sound was enough to pass through rock; not only did it disperse the clouds in the sky, it caused the entire city to begin trembling gently, resulting in a thick layer of dust being kicked into the air.

The guards of the Extinguishing Alliance on the city walls all covered their ears tightly as they tossed and turned on the floor in agony. The terrifying roar was ear-piercing to all of them, and caused a trail of blood to flow from their ears.

Countless people within the city walls were affected as well. The eardrums of several million weaker people were destroyed by the roar, causing agony to all of them. Some of them had even fainted directly.

In the blink of an eye, the city fell into chaos. The streets became filled with people lying on the ground.

Just Jian Chen's roar was enough to incapacitate millions of people from the Alliance. The number of people injured was innumerable. This was the might of a Saint King.

Roar!

At the same time, a deafening tiger roar rang out. It was filled with a tremendous might, like the descent of an overlord that could look down on everyone.

The white tiger on Jian Chen's shoulders had stood up suddenly as well. It roared at the sky, imitating Jian Chen. It produced a sound that did not match up to its size at all. Although it was nowhere near as loud as Jian Chen, its roar seemed to contain a level of deterrence that Jian Chen's did not possess. It was filled with a supreme awe, something that could not be trespassed upon.

Countless magical beasts began to mourn miserably inside the city. All of them collapsed onto the ground as they trembled, fear flooding their eyes. The weaker mercenaries that managed to stay conscious despite Jian Chen's roar were all knocked unconscious by the tiger's roar.

Over twenty vast presences appeared in the palace at the very center of the city. The Saint Rulers cultivating within it had all been alarmed, immediately flying outside.

The Extinguishing Alliance was formed from over ten peak-level mercenary groups, while the Saint Rulers were all former captains from those groups.

The Saint Rulers arrived at the city gates with lightning speed. They looked toward Jian Chen who stood high up in the air; they all became extremely stern.

With their current cultivation level, they could naturally sense Jian Chen's strength. The tremendous aura from Jian Chen caused them to shudder in fear. They all understood that the person before them was a Saint King.

However, they had never seen Jian Chen. Even though they had heard of him, they failed to recognize him immediately.

“May I ask the senior's name? Why must senior make it hard for the Extinguishing Alliance? Our alliance doesn't seem to have offended senior before,” a Saint Ruler asked carefully.

Killing intent sprouted from Jian Chen as he coldly stared at the Saint Rulers. He bellowed, “You take my city and you chase away my Flame Mercenaries! Who do you think I am!?”

The Saint Rulers all reacted violently when they heard this. Someone immediately reached an understanding and cried out, “You're the captain of the Flame Mercenaries, Jian Chen!”

“What!? He's that Jian Chen that the protector clans have been searching for for so many years? Doesn't that mean that the white tiger on his shoulder is the Winged Tiger God!?”

“Impossible. This is impossible. They said that Jian Chen was only a Saint Ruler, and that he had only broken through a while ago. How did he become a Saint King so quickly...”

“Even if Jian Chen’s talent is unprecedented, his cultivation speed can’t be at such a heaven-defying level. He can’t be Jian Chen.”

The Saint Rulers all called out in shock. They stared at him with disbelief, but most of their gazes were focused on the white tiger on Jian Chen’s shoulder. Their eyes burned with greed.

Jian Chen’s face sank and he glared at the Saint Rulers as he slowly glanced past them. He failed to find Bi Jian, so he bellowed out, “The captain of the Flame Mercenaries, Jian Chen, is present. Where is Bi Jian!? Come for your death!”

Jian Chen’s voice reverberated through the surroundings. It was enough for the void to begin trembling as his voice traveled over a hundred kilometers away.

“What! The captain of the Flame Mercenaries has returned?”

“It’s captain Jian Chen. Captain Jian Chen has returned.”

...

Within the Extinguished City, a few conscious mercenaries called out. They all revealed extremely mixed emotions, as they were part

of the Flame Mercenaries before. It was just that after the Flame Mercenaries collapsed, they joined the Extinguishing Alliance and became a part of them.

The Saint Rulers all confirmed Jian Chen's identity when they heard this declaration. They all reacted abruptly. They would naturally not fear Jian Chen if he was just a Saint Ruler, but the Jian Chen before them currently irradiated with the aura of a Saint King. That was enough to cause them to panic.

"Hmph, the captain of the Flame Mercenaries is not even fifty years old right now. It's impressive that he can become a Saint Ruler at that age, but I just don't believe he can really become a Saint King. Maybe his presence is fake and not actually his true strength," A Saint Ruler suspected.

"Yeah, there can't be such a young Saint King. His presence must be fake and his true strength is probably not as great as we currently perceive. Let's get him together and call his bluff. Don't be scared by him," another Saint Ruler called out. With that, he grabbed his Saint Weapon and charged toward Jian Chen with three other companions.

Jian Chen's gaze became icy-cold. The Emperor Armament appeared in his hand and he stabbed out four times toward the four experts.

The four Saint Rulers bellowed out in unison and struck out as hard as they could. Their Saint Weapons pierced the surrounding space, flying toward Jian Chen as they radiated with a powerful energy.

Jian Chen's Emperor Armament collided with their four Saint Weapons. How could mere Saint Rulers withstand the attacks from a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King? The four of them were immediately forced to shut up and they started to vomit blood. They paled in that very moment.

The Emperor Armament continued with no reduction in force. It sliced through their heads like a hot knife through butter, chopping their heads in half and directly wiping out their souls. Blood erupted in the air like a blooming flower.

The four Saint Rulers had been slain so easily, with no room for resistance.

The other Saint Rulers all reacted violently as they personally witnessed this. They stumbled backward in the air while their gazes toward Jian Chen underwent a tremendous change.

Now, no one dared to doubt Jian Chen's strength. He was truly a Saint King.

Chapter 970: Battling Bi Yifei

Every single member who saw this began to pale. Their four powerful Saint Rulers had been slain so easily. They were greatly affected, and their souls were deeply struck with fear.

In that moment, all the members of the Extinguishing Alliance felt like the shade of death had encased them. Although they had another twenty-three Saint Rulers, they did not feel safe in any way.

Then, Jian Chen looked toward the twenty-three Saint Rulers after killing off four. He slowly raised the Emperor Armament as it shone with a surging dark light. An energy of destruction filled the surroundings, as if roaring flames of death had encased the region. It caused the Saint Rulers to feel death from the bottom of their hearts.

This was a power that could make them tremble, a power that made resistance impossible to even consider.

The Saint Rulers were all frightened as they constantly retreated in the air. Their gazes toward Jian Chen were filled with dread.

“Jian Chen, this has nothing to do with us. It really doesn’t have anything to do with us. The only reason we attacked Flame City was due to Bi Jian’s temptations. Bi Jian is the main culprit,” a Saint Ruler said with a trembling voice. Faced against a Saint King, none of them even dared to flee, because Saint Kings could rip open Space Gates. There was nowhere they could run off to.

“Where is Bi Jian?” Jian Chen’s voice was icy-cold and filled with killing intent.

“He’s in the imperial city of the Felicity Empire,” a Saint Ruler said hurriedly. Meanwhile, he prayed secretly. He hoped that Jian Chen would go to the Felicity Empire for revenge and leave this place. That way, they would have plenty of time to flee with their people and avoid this calamity.

“Bi Jian, it doesn’t matter where you hide, I will never let you go. But before I go to the Felicity Kingdom, let me finish off all of you first,” Jian Chen growled. He slowly pointed his Emperor Armament toward the Saint Rulers as killing intent spilled from him without restraint. It caused all the Saint Rulers to pale in fright.

“Jian Chen, it really has nothing to do with us. It’s all due to Bi Jian. He’s in control of everything. We’re just his chess pieces,” the Saint Rulers constantly attempted to explain. They no longer dared to resist Jian Chen after personally witnessing the deaths of four Saint Rulers, even though they had an advantage in numbers.

“Bi Jian will die with all of you, including the Extinguishing Alliance. I will not let any of you go,” Jian Chen said coldly before charging at the twenty-three Saint Rulers.

But at that very moment, the space before Jian Chen began to distort violently. A Space Gate suddenly formed and before a person could even emerge, a tremendous aura appeared first.

Jian Chen came to a halt and stared fixedly at the Space Gate. A cold light flickered in his eyes.

The Saint Rulers all sighed a breath of relief. To them, it seemed like Jian Chen still possessed the Winged Tiger God, so he was a target of the ten protector clans. Another Saint King had split open the space and arrived, and he would definitely deal with Jian Chen in order to obtain the Winged Tiger God. He would keep Jian Chen busy.

Under the gazes of Jian Chen and the Saint Rulers, a white-robed, middle-aged man who seemed slightly pale stepped out.

“It’s senior Bi Yifei. Fantastic, senior Bi Yifei has actually come,” the Saint Rulers immediately exclaimed joyfully when they saw this man. They became ecstatic.

Jian Chen’s eyes narrowed abruptly as his killing intent skyrocketed. He sneered, “Bi Yifei, you sure have come at the right time. It’s just about time I resolve our enmity from all those years ago.”

Bi Yifei stared coldly at Jian Chen as disdain flooded his eyes. He sneered, “Jian Chen, I suspected that you would return one day long ago, so I left a soul imprint on you. I never thought my anticipations would hold true. You really have returned. It’s about time I take revenge for you injuring my soul...” Reaching this point, Bi Yifei’s eyes narrowed violently. His face changed drastically as he exclaimed whilst pointing at Jian Chen, “H-h-

how is this possible!? Why is your presence so powerful!? How did you reach Saint King in just a few years!?” Disbelief flooded Bi Yifei’s face. His heart began to churn; he was perturbed.

In the next moment, Bi Yifei suddenly looked toward Jian Chen’s sword. His face changed once again, this time filled with shock. He cried out uncontrollably, “T-that’s an Emperor Armament. You actually obtained an Emperor Armament!”

Jian Chen could not help but sneer as he saw how shocked Bi Yifei was, “Bi Yifei, it really was a pity that I failed to kill you back then. But today will be your death. No one can save you.”

Bi Yifei quickly suppressed his shock from Jian Chen’s arrogant words. The light in his eyes flickered as he quickly calmed down and growled, “Jian Chen, your presence as a Saint King is probably completely due to the Emperor Armament. You’re still a Saint Ruler right now. Do you really think that you can defeat me with just an Emperor Armament? You’re deluding yourself. Saint Kings are far stronger than you can imagine. I’ll show you the true might of a Saint King today. Once I kill you, your Emperor Armament will be mine and I will hand the Winged Tiger God to the Yiyuan sect of the ten protector clans in exchange for some medicines that can mend the soul.”

Bi Yifei’s eyes burned with greed as he gazed at the Emperor Armament. He had no clue about Jian Chen’s true strength right now, so he looked down on Jian Chen by quite a lot. He also viewed the Emperor Armament as his own item already.

Jian Chen smiled disdainfully and said, “You still don’t have the

ability to take the Emperor Armament from my hands.”

“We’ll know after we try.” Bi Yifei was filled with confidence. He too refused to believe that Jian Chen could reach Saint King in a few short years, which was why he thought that Jian Chen’s powerful aura was completely due to the Emperor Armament.

Tremendous Saint Force surged out from Bi Yifei. This was the power of a Saint King. It was extremely great, enough to cause the surrounding space to shake violently. At the same time, invisible World Force quickly gathered toward him, revolving around Bi Yifei.

“Jian Chen, I’ll show you my strength.” Bi Yifei’s expression became vicious and he immediately produced a battle cry. The Saint Force and the World Force around him fused together in that very moment, transforming into a huge finger that shot toward Jian Chen with lightning speed.

The finger was ten meters long and half a meter wide. It shot through the air as it radiated with a devastating aura, slashing through space.

Jian Chen’s cold smile curled up higher and higher. He looked at the finger nonchalantly before suddenly swinging out with his Emperor Armament. A meter-long black sword Qi shot out.

The sword Qi radiated with an aura of destruction as it shot toward the huge finger. A massive crack formed wherever the sword Qi passed by, reducing it to a region of darkness.

Boom!

Jian Chen's sword Qi collided with Bi Yifei's huge finger in mid-air, while the violent residual energy immediately began to sweep through the surroundings. It caused the surrounding space to tremble violently. Even the earth below seemed to quake, causing mountains to collapse.

Bi Yifei became rather stern and he growled, "I never thought that the Emperor Armament would be so powerful, that a Saint Ruler can display such might. If that Emperor Armament enters my hands, my strength would definitely reach an unimaginable level." Toward the end, the greed in Bi Yifei's eyes thickened.

At that moment, a black streak of light suddenly emerged. The sword Qi did not completely disperse after collided with Bi Yifei's finger and instead surged out from the ripples of energy in the air. It continued onward without a reduction in force.

Bi Yifei's eyes narrowed suddenly, and he cried out, "Crap!" Immediately, energy began to surge before him, instantly condensing into a three-meter-wide round shield to block the sword Qi.

The sword Qi completely locked onto Bi Yifei, so he could only take it head on now.

Boom!

The black sword Qi collided with Bi Yifei's circular shield and produced a terrifying sound. The sword Qi was far more powerful than Bi Yifei had imagined, so the shield condensed from Saint Force and World Force failed to endure it. It shattered loudly, while the sword Qi had finally lost all of its power after breaking through two obstructions. It dispersed in the air.

Even though this was the case, Bi Yifei was thrown back violently by its force. Blood sprayed uncontrollably from his mouth, falling toward the ground as a bloody mist.

Bi Yifei flew for several dozen kilometers before finally stabilizing himself. He stared at Jian Chen in shock as disbelief overwhelmed his eyes. He said with difficulty, "How is this possible? How are you this strong? D-d- did you really reach Saint King?"

Even at now, Bi Yifei still struggled to accept this. Jian Chen's strength had grown from an ant's level to a level where he could heavily injure him. This was just shocking on an otherworldly scale.

Thick killing intent poured from Jian Chen as he called out coldly, "Bi Yifei, I shall be taking your life today," as he said this, Jian Chen charged toward him threateningly with the Emperor Armament.

Bi Yifei revealed an ugly expression. A piece of jade instantly appeared in his hand and he crushed it directly, before slowly

raising his hand. He let the wild wind scatter the jade dust as he sneered, “Jian Chen, your strength has really exceeded my imaginations, but I have already alerted the ten protector clans. Before the protector clans, there is only death no matter how strong you are. If you don’t run now, it’ll be too late.”

Chapter 971: Resisting the Protector Clans (One)

Jian Chen snickered at Bi Yifei's attempt to scare him off, "Bi Yifei, even if all ten protector clans gather here today, they won't be able to take my life. Die." Jian Chen sped up toward Bi Yifei, traversing the distance between the two of them in the blink of an eye. The Emperor Armament stabbed toward him like a black bolt of lightning.

Bi Yifei was already heavily injured and could no longer function as well as before. Sensing the force of Jian Chen's strike, his heart immediately sank. However, he could not afford to move his arms slowly. A huge sword immediately appeared in his hand, and he placed it before himself to block the incoming strike.

Jian Chen's weapon directly struck the huge sword before Bi Yifei. With the screeching of metal, the terrifying force knocked Bi Yifei backward once again. He immediately vomited blood a few more times. This time, he became even paler, without a shred of blood left in his face.

Although Bi Yifei was also a Saint King, he was not Jian Chen's opponent with his current strength as Jian Chen could display the power of a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King with the Emperor Armament.

"God dammit, how did Jian Chen's strength reach such a terrifying level in such a short amount of time? I don't even have the power to put up a fight." Bi Yifei was astounded inside. His gaze toward Jian Chen was filled with fear.

Jian Chen grasped the Emperor Armament tightly in his right hand as icy killing intent flickered in his eyes. With a slight movement of his body, he turned into a blur as he continued his pursuit of Bi Yifei.

Bi Yifei reacted with a change in expression once again. From the two clashes, Jian Chen's strength already had him terrified, where a thought of utter defeat had sprouted in his mind. He immediately lost all interest in the battle when he saw Jian Chen chase up once again. He was prepared to rip open a Space Gate and leave.

At this very moment, the space several kilometers away began to tremble and a Space Gate quickly formed. Immediately, a tremendous presence surged from within.

With the appearance of the Space Gate, Bi Yifei became delighted. He gave up on his plan to flee and called out, "Ling Yuanzi, Jian Chen has returned and the Winged Tiger God is on his shoulder. If you don't come over immediately, he'll flee."

"The person who should be fleeing would be you, not me. Just a mere Ling Yuanzi is not enough to scare me off," Jian Chen said icily. He paid no attention to the Space Gate as he stared tightly at Bi Yifei. As he approached him, he stabbed out with the Emperor Armament with no hesitation.

Jian Chen's strike seemed to surpass the limitations of time and space, arriving before Bi Yifei in an instant.

Bi Yifei's pupils narrowed to the size of pins. He could clearly see the dark sword expanding rapidly as it made its way toward him, while the shade of death now covered his head like a cloud.

Madness appeared in Bi Yifei's eyes as he poured everything he had into blocking with his Saint Weapon. However, he had been struck by two heavy blows already, so his strength had decreased drastically. When the Saint Weapon was struck by the Emperor Armament, it was knocked away by the powerful force while the Emperor Armament continued onward with no reduction in force. It arrived before Bi Yifei's forehead.

At this very moment, a white-robed, ruddy old man emerged from the Space Gate. He was a great elder of the Yiyuan sect, Ling Yuanzi.

Ling Yuanzi saw that Bi Yifei was in danger as soon as he emerged from the Space Gate. His complexion immediately changed and he cried out, "Stop!"

However, Jian Chen turned a deaf ear to his words. The Emperor Armament stabbed mercilessly into Bi Yifei's forehead.

Shwt!

The Emperor Armament impaled Bi Yifei's head. His soul seemed so weak before the might of the Emperor Armament, unable to even withstand a single blow. His soul was directly wiped out.

Bi Yifei's eyes became dull as life receded from them quickly. He was no longer able to remain in the air, falling down in the same posture he had, standing upright.

“Bi Yifei!” Ling Yuanzi produced a miserable cry. He had become utterly enraged when he saw this, immediately flying toward Bi Yifei's corpse in an attempt to catch it.

A cold light flickered through Jian Chen's eyes. With a jolt, the sword in his hand stabbed toward Ling Yuanzi out of nowhere. This strike was not Jian Chen's full strength, but it contained the might of a Sixth Heavenly Layer Saint King.

Ling Yuanzi bellowed and his Saint Weapon immediately materialized. He too swung out, producing a blade Qi.

Jian Chen's sword Qi collided with the blade Qi and produced a deafening boom. The blade Qi was dispersed immediately, reduced to dense World Force that dissipated into the surroundings while Jian Chen's sword Qi weakened slightly as well. However, it continued toward Ling Yuanzi like a bolt of lightning.

Ling Yuanzi's eyes narrowed and he became quite stern. The curved blade in his hand erupted with light and his arm jolted. It immediately multiplied into two other blades and three blade Qi shot out at the same time. It flew toward the black sword Qi in a triangular fashion.

Boom! Ling Yuanzi's two attacks finally dispersed Jian Chen's sword Qi. Ling Yuanzi no longer paid any attention to Bi Yifei's

corpse after being struck with that attack. Instead, he immediately began to glare at Jian Chen in mid-air. He was extremely grim.

“That’s an Emperor Armament. Jian Chen, I never thought you’d obtain an Emperor Armament from your trip to the sea realm.” Ling Yuanzi recognized that it was an Emperor Armament with a single glance and he immediately revealed an ugly expression.

As a great elder of a protector clan, Ling Yuanzi was knowledgeable. It was not the first time he had seen an Emperor Armament, so he was naturally very familiar with the might of one.

“Ling Yuanzi, when you pursued me all those years ago, I almost died in your hands. I shall be taking revenge for that today and slay you with the Emperor Armament. That will be your outcome,” Jian Chen said coldly.

Ling Yuanzi quickly glanced past the white tiger on Jian Chen’s shoulder. “Jian Chen, do you really think that you can contend with the protector clans with just an Emperor Armament? You are just too naive. You are indeed stronger than me right now, but not only will you fail to kill me today, you’ll have to obediently give my Yiyuan sect the Winged Tiger God,” as he said that, a piece of jade had already appeared silently in Ling Yuanzi’s hands. He immediately crushed it, notifying the other great elders of the sect.

Jian Chen immediately noticed Ling Yuanzi’s minute movement and a sliver of cold light flashed through his eyes. He yelled, “Ling Yuanzi, since you’re calling for reinforcements, I’ll just kill you before they come!”

Jian Chen charged toward Ling Yuanzi with the Emperor Armament in hand. It shone with a blinding dark light as an aura of destruction filled the surroundings. Tremendous ripples of energy shook the area around them, causing the space to distort into a blurry mess.

This time, Jian Chen struck out as hard as he could. He did not hold back at all, completely displaying his strength equal to a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King. He wanted to end the battle quickly; he planned to kill Ling Yuanzi before he could resist.

Ling Yuanzi's expression finally changed when he sensed the might from Jian Chen. Given that he felt pressured from Jian Chen before, he now found Jian Chen to be utterly chilling.

"This is impossible. How can his strength become so terrifying in just a few years? Even with the Emperor Armament, he couldn't have become this powerful. Just how does he cultivate?" Shock overwhelmed Ling Yuanzi as he became rather pale.

Jian Chen's long hair and clothes danced in the wind. Everywhere he passed seemed to become pitch-black because of the Chaotic Force. He used the Illusory Flash, traversing several kilometers in an instant to arrive before Ling Yuanzi. Wielding the sword in one hand, he stabbed toward Ling Yuanzi with a lightning speed.

The strike was ordinary, yet it made Ling Yuanzi feel like he could not avoid it at all. It was like no matter where he dodged, the

strike would still arrive and that the only way out was to forcefully break through it.

A gleam of light exploded in Ling Yuanzi's eyes as extremely powerful energy surged out wildly from his body. In that instant, a set of awe-inspiring armor had condensed on his body. At the same time, his curved blade pointed toward the sky. The wind and clouds in the sky immediately began to change and a great pressure descended on the region. It locked tightly onto Jian Chen.

“Blade Formation of the Wind and Clouds!” Ling Yuanzi bellowed. Suddenly, his blade disappeared into the void, as if it had become one with the surroundings.

The wind and clouds in the sky seemed to be driven by some force, beginning to fuse together and condense into curved blades that gathered before Ling Yuanzi. In the blink of an eye, a dense wall of curved blades had gathered before him and every single one was of the same size. It seemed illusionary yet tangible, completely condensed from air and clouds. They all radiated with powerful ripples of energy.

“Go!” Ling Yuanzi extended a finger toward Jian Chen. Immediately, the curved blades shot toward Jian Chen, surrounding and enveloping him as it constantly rotated. It formed something like a grinder as it constantly chopped at Jian Chen.

At the same time, the wind and clouds above Ling Yuanzi churned and an even larger blade was condensed. It was a thousand meters long and several dozen meters wide, extending directly into the sky. It radiated with a powerful force, causing the

sky to tremble.

“Jian Chen, prepare to die.” Ling Yuanzi’s lips curled into a sneer and with a thought, the huge blade above him began to fall as it chopped toward Jian Chen. The space below was shattered with its descent, reduced to a patch of darkness and void.

The huge blade fell extremely fast, arriving above Jian Chen in the blink of an eye. Ling Yuanzi already bore the smile of victory. He seemed to have already seen the moment where Jian Chen passed away.

At this moment, Jian Chen’s icy voice rang out, “Ling Yuanzi, the power of your battle skill is impressive, but it’s a pity that it’s only a pseudo-Saint Tier Battle Skill and is not the real deal.” A destructive energy began to radiate from the center of the blades as the voice rang out and a black light flashed. The formation was immediately broken through, reduced to a wild tempest and wisps of water vapor.

Jian Chen emerged unharmed in the air, remaining calm and composed. He stared nonchalantly at the huge blade and pointed his Emperor Armament to the sky. All his power had completely erupted forth as a huge sword Qi shot out from the Emperor Armament. It surged into the air like an enraged dragon.

Boom!

A deafening sound rang out as the two forces collided. The wild residual energy destroyed the surroundings, causing the space to

collapse and mountains to fall. The entire world seemed to quake violently.

The huge blade was broken through and gradually dispersed into the surroundings, while Ling Yuanzi's joyful expression vanished as well. His face was now sunken.

Chapter 972: Resisting the Protector Clans (Two)

“Jian Chen, I never thought you would become so powerful after just a few short years,” growled Ling Yuanzi as he panicked inside. He looked forward to when the people from his sect would arrive.

Jian Chen said nothing and continued his threatening charged toward Ling Yuanzi with the Emperor Armament in hand. His glare was filled with dense killing intent.

Ling Yuanzi became extremely grim as he watched Jian Chen charge toward him. The current Jian Chen was definitely enough to threaten his life. If the people from the Yiyuan sect still failed to arrive, it would be almost certain death if he continued his one-on-one fight with Jian Chen.

Ling Yuanzi gritted his teeth as if he had finally made up his mind to do something. He said hoarsely, “Jian Chen, I’ll spare you for today. When we meet next time, you will be begging for mercy.” With that, he swung his hand and directly cut open a region of space. He formed a Space Gate with his powers as a Saint King, planning to flee.

“Don’t you dare run, Ling Yuanzi!” Jian Chen bellowed. With a swing of his Emperor Armament, a great sword Qi shot toward the Space Gate.

The black sword Qi split the air. Wherever it passed by, a pitch-black crack in space would appear as well as. The sword Qi quickly

flew toward Ling Yuanzi's Space Gate.

Boom! The sword Qi struck the Space Gate and violent residual energy shook up the surroundings. The space in a radius of five meters had completely collapsed, turning into a pitch-black region. The Space Gate was also greatly affected by the shaken space, directly collapsing and chopping off Ling Yuanzi's path of escape.

Ling Yuanzi was pale-white. He was a great elder of a grand protector clan, yet he had to flee before a member of the younger generation. That was humiliating enough, and now his Space Gate had even been destroyed by the opponent, severing any chances for him to escape. His face currently burned with humiliation.

Not only was he forced to flee by a younger person, he had even lost his ability to run before them. He found this to be utterly terrifying.

Killing intent burned within Ling Yuanzi as he stared coldly at Jian Chen. Determination flashed through his eyes and he bellowed, "Jian Chen, if my pseudo-Saint Tier Battle Skill can't kill you, then taste my real battle skill!" He was left without any choice. All he could do was go in for a deathmatch now.

He had been completely frightened by Jian Chen's strength. His understanding of Jian Chen was extremely limited and he had no idea that Jian Chen's comprehension of the mysteries of the world remained at the Seventh Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler. If he had chosen to run using speed, Jian Chen would not have been able to catch up at all.

An extremely great energy emerged from Ling Yuanzi, causing his clothes and hair to flutter despite the absence of wind. Suddenly, a tremendous pressure descended grandly onto the surroundings, turning the region in a radius of several dozen kilometers into a blur. The pressure seemed to have frozen the area.

The pressure descended layer by layer from the sky, wrapping around Jian Chen like chains. It seemed to want to immobilize him.

Jian Chen bellowed and the chaotic neidan in his dantian began to produce strands of Chaotic Force that filled every corner of his body. He pushed the Chaotic Body to its utmost limits, before suddenly jolting. He broke through the pressure's immobilization, causing the space around him to tremble violently.

As soon as he broke free, a tremendous ripple of energy appeared before him. A huge finger had appeared out of nowhere in front of Ling Yuanzi.

The finger was completely condensed out of energy. It was five meters long and half a meter thick. It radiated with a terrifying pressure, shaking up the surrounding space to the point that it distorted and became blurry.

Jian Chen finally became rather stern. Ling Yuanzi had completely charged up his Saint Tier Battle Skill. With his strength as a Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King, it possessed the might of a

Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King. This was enough to threaten Jian Chen.

“Jian Chen, I refuse to believe that you can take my battle skill head on and come out unharmed. Die!” Ling Yuanzi called out before suddenly pointing at Jian Chen.

Immediately, the huge finger ripped a hole in space and shot toward Jian Chen with a devastating pressure.

Jian Chen sucked in a deep breath and charged forward instead of retreating. He fearlessly charged up to the giant finger on his own initiative and his Emperor Armament began to expand. In the blink of an eye, it became ten meters long and he stabbed out toward the giant finger.

Boom!

The Emperor Armament collided with the giant finger with a violent boom. The terrifyingly powerful ripples of energy directly ripped through space, reducing the region into darkness. Even the sun in the sky dulled.

Jian Chen began to retreat rapidly under the violent energy, shooting backward uncontrollably. However, the giant finger had yet to dissipate before him, continuing toward Jian Chen with no reduction in speed. However, it had already shrunk by a tenth.

Jian Chen bellowed out once again and the giant Emperor

Armament in his hand swept through the sky as a beautiful dark streak, striking the giant finger heavily once again.

With another boom, the giant finger shrunk by another tenth from Jian Chen's attack. The violent energy knocked back Jian Chen again, causing him to speed up as he flew backward. His clothes were reduced to shreds, revealing the golden silkmail underneath.

The giant finger possessed the power of a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King. It was equal to Jian Chen's strength, or maybe even weaker a little. Despite this, it was still a Saint Tier Battle Skill in the end. It was no ordinary attack, so unless the disparity between the two was drastic, it could not be nullified so easily.

Jian Chen bellowed out several times, striking out ten more times with all his force before finally dissipating the Saint Tier Battle Skill into energy that surged in the surroundings. He remained uninjured as he had the Chaotic Body, but he was in a messy shape.

"Y-y- you actually blocked by Saint Tier Battle Skill perfectly. H-h- how is that possible?" Ling Yuanzi was stunned as he stared at Jian Chen from afar. He was dumbstruck, while the shock he experienced had already reached its utmost limits.

He knew exactly how powerful his Saint Tier Battle Skill was. Even when a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King faced up against it, they would receive some wounds, or even be heavily injured. Meanwhile, Jian Chen's personal strength was nowhere near the Seventh Heavenly Layer. However, Jian Chen was still able to

nullify his attack easily just through the use of the Emperor Armament and sustained no injuries. This was unbelievable.

“Ling Yuanzi, even your Saint Tier Battle Skill cannot injure me. I’d like to see what else you have up your sleeve now,” Jian Chen laughed wildly. Using the Illusory Flash, he charged toward Ling Yuanzi as a blur and began fighting him up close.

Ling Yuanzi gritted his teeth as he endured, hoping that he could last just a little longer until the reinforcements arrived. However, the difference in their strength was just too great, so he was injured after just a few bouts. His ribs were crushed by a kick from Jian Chen, while his entire chest caved in. His organs had all ruptured, and the wound on his neck was even worse. Half his neck was severed; if he did not dodge in time, he would have probably been decapitated.

A Space Gate suddenly appeared high up in the sky as Ling Yuanzi was in the middle of danger. Immediately, several tremendous presences emerged. The reinforcements from the Yiyuan sect had arrived.

Ling Yuanzi became delighted. He no longer paid attention to any dignity he should have been preserving and cried out for help, “Yi Yangzi, save me!” Ling Yuanzi’s miserable voice passed through the Space Gate clearly, causing it to condense even faster.

Jian Chen’s heart sank slightly. He knew that he did not have much time left to kill Ling Yuanzi, so he immediately struck out as fast as he could. The sword cut through the air, targeting the center of Ling Yuanzi’s eyebrows.

Ling Yuanzi immediately used his curved blade to block. Although he managed to repel Jian Chen's life-threatening blow, it worsened his injuries, causing him to constantly vomit blood.

Jian Chen's gaze became icy-cold. Without any hesitation, a second strike followed. The attack broke through the limitations of space and stabbed toward the center of Ling Yuanzi's eyebrows once again.

Ling Yuanzi's pupils narrowed to the size of needles. Unwillingness to give in flickered through his eyes. He was unable to block this lightning-speed strike.

At this moment, the Space Gate stabilized. A white-robed, ruddy old man stepped out in front. His expression changed immediately as soon as he stepped out as he saw Ling Yuanzi in the middle of danger. He called out, "Stop!" He extended a finger and a force tore through the air. It broke through the limitations of space and descended upon Jian Chen in an instant, viciously knocking away the Emperor Armament that stabbed toward Ling Yuanzi.

The Emperor Armament was knocked away as soon as it came into contact with Ling Yuanzi's skin. The force from the tiny movement contained unbelievable power, jolting Jian Chen's arm to the point that it became numb.

Jian Chen was shocked. He knew the person that had just come possessed strength he could not contend against, but he felt no fear. He stabbed out once again with the Emperor Armament in an

attempt to kill off Ling Yuanzi.

“How dare you!” Yi Yangzi became furious. He swung his sleeves and the wind began to blow violently. A whirlwind that connected the sky and the ground suddenly formed, whistling toward Jian Chen with an earth-piercing sound.

Jian Chen’s Emperor Armament had already stabbed through Ling Yuanzi’s forehead. The whirlwind arrived just as part of the sword had entered. The high-speed wind was like sharp blades, constantly chopping at Jian Chen’s body. It caused Jian Chen to feel pain all over and white marks appeared all over him.

The violent wind had also pulled his body backward, preventing the Emperor Armament from stabbing any further into Ling Yuanzi’s head. Instead, it was slowly drawn out, failing to impale Ling Yuanzi’s soul. Jian Chen was unable to kill him off completely.

However, Ling Yuanzi had still suffered unimaginable injuries. He shrieked out uncontrollably and the top of his head suddenly exploded. A dull soul flew out from within, quickly streaking toward the furious Yi Yangzi.

Ling Yuanzi had actually abandoned his body and fled in soul form.

As soon as he fled his body, his head exploded loudly. Slivers of black energy that radiated with a destructive aura leaked out from his head, reducing it to pieces.

Jian Chen found it harder and harder to regain his stability under the wild whirlwind. When he saw Ling Yuanzi's soul flee, he immediately panicked and swung his sword. He produced a powerful sword Qi that ripped through the air, shooting toward Ling Yuanzi's soul.

Blood drained from Yi Yangzi's face as killing intent flickered in his eyes. He grabbed at the empty space with his left hand, containing the region of space and grasping Ling Yuanzi's soul. At the same time, he formed a palm with his right hand and struck toward Jian Chen.

Chapter 973: Resisting the Protector Clans (Three)

Yi Yangzi's palm strike immediately caused the space before him to collapse. A half a meter wide palm immediately condensed, shooting toward Jian Chen as a blur.

Jian Chen was extremely stern. A vast pressure had already tightly locked onto him. It did not come from Yi Yangzi, but the casual strike was from him.

Jian Chen actually felt the notion of utter defeat flash through his head when he faced up against this palm strike completely condensed from energy. It was as if he could not avoid it no matter where he dodged or hid.

Jian Chen's heart shivered and he grabbed the Emperor Armament with both of his hands. He raised the weapon high up and swung out several times as hard as he could in that moment. Several powerful sword Qi shot through the sky, shooting toward Yi Yangzi's palm strike in a row.

Yi Yangzi's attack contained an unimaginable power. When the sword Qi collided with the palm, they all dispersed while the palm continued at the same speed toward Jian Chen. However, it did become weaker after bursting through all the sword Qi.

Bang! The palm condensed from energy struck Jian Chen mercilessly. The palm broke through his Chaotic Body immediately, and even the golden silkmail failed to block

anything. His chest caved in deeply and all his ribs all shattered.

Jian Chen sputtered and blood leaked from the corner of his lips. He flew backward, only stopping after traveling several kilometers.

Jian Chen was shocked. Yi Yangzi was far more powerful than he had ever imagined. Just a casual palm strike of his was still so powerful, even after being weakened by the sword Qi. Jian Chen felt utterly astounded.

At this moment, the remaining great elders of the Yiyuan sect emerged with a group of Saint Rulers from the Space Gate. They were all surprised when they saw Yi Yangzi holding Ling Yuanzi's soul, but fury soon replaced their surprise. They all glared viciously at Jian Chen.

“Ling Yuanzi was injured by you. Who are you? Are you sick of living? How dare you injure a great elder of our protector Yiyuan sect!” The leading great elder yelled furiously at Jian Chen. Dignity filled his voice.

“H-h- he's the Jian Chen we have been searching for. He has returned with the Winged Tiger God,” said Ling Yuanzi's soul. Its voice was extremely weak.

“What! He's Jian Chen!?” All of them were shocked by Ling Yuanzi's words. They all looked toward Jian Chen in disbelief.

“How is this possible? Jian Chen is clearly just a Saint Ruler, but the person before us is a Saint King. He can’t be Jian Chen. Ling Yuanzi, have you mixed him up with another person?” A great elder asked in disbelief. He refused to believe that there would be someone who could reach Saint King from the Third Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler in just a few years.

“It’s him. It can’t be wrong. It was he who cast God’s Descent all those years ago and heavily wounded my soul. Even if I were reduced to ashes, I can still recognize him. Look, that little beast on his shoulder is the Winged Tiger God,” said Ling Yuanzi.

All of them focused their attention on the white tiger on Jian Chen’s shoulder. The white tiger remained standing there with balance as it stared back at them with its bright eyes. Its fur had been messed up by the violent ripples of residual energy but it was unharmed.

Jian Chen silently circulated the Chaotic Force in his body. The deviant-level recovery rate of the Chaotic Body came into play beautifully at this moment, allowing the wounds on his chest to heal quickly. The shattered bones began to regrow quickly. Jian Chen could not help but smile coldly when he noticed that everyone was looking at the white tiger.

A while later, a gleam of light flashed through Yi Yuanzi’s eyes. He had finally confirmed the white tiger’s identity and his eyes began to burn with greed. “I can feel a vague pressure from it. It really is the Winged Tiger God. It can’t be wrong.”

All the experts from the Yiyuan sect became ecstatic when they

heard this. They all looked toward the white tiger avariciously, as if it was not a magical beast but a priceless treasure.

“Fantastic. I never thought it would be us who would see the Winged Tiger God first. The Winged Tiger God now belongs to our Yiyuan sect. Jian Chen, you may have an Emperor Armament, but you’re not our opponent. Hand over the Winged Tiger God obediently. Don’t force us to move against you,” a great elder laughed aloud, as if the Winged Tiger God already belonged to their group.

A disdainful expression appeared on Jian Chen’s face. He pointed his Emperor Armament toward the great elder who spoke and said provocatively, “If you want the Winged Tiger God, come get it. But you probably aren’t capable enough to do that.”

“You arrogant brat!” The great elder erupted in rage and charged up to challenge Jian Chen to a battle. However, he was stopped by Yi Yangzi.

Yi Yangzi slowly stepped forward as he gazed at Jian Chen calmly. “Ling Fengzi, you’re not his opponent. The matters regarding the Winged Tiger God are too important, so we need to take it before the other protector clans arrive. We can’t waste too much time. Let me do it.” Yi Yangzi took a step forward as soon as he finished speaking and the space below his feet rippled. He suddenly disappeared; when he reappeared, he was over ten kilometers away from Jian Chen. He extended his arm toward the white tiger on Jian Chen’s shoulder.

A sneer formed on Jian Chen’s lips and the Octoterra Divine Hall

immediately appeared before him. It blocked Yi Yangzi's hand.

The sudden appearance of the divine hall surprised Yi Yangzi and his hand forcefully stopped in mid-air. Surprise flashed through his eyes as he cried out with a deep voice, "That's a Saint Emperor's divine hall. I never thought that you'd also obtain a divine hall on top of your Emperor Armament."

Not only did the sudden appearance of the divine hall surprise Yi Yangzi, it also shocked the other great elders and experts from the Yiyuan sect very much.

Jian Chen paid no attention to their surprise and made the Octoterra Divine Hall expand suddenly under the control of his mind. It reached a length of three thousand meters in that very moment, hanging in the sky like a dark cloud.

Jian Chen entered the divine hall with the white tiger and a loud voice boomed from the hall, "People of the Yiyuan sect, I'd like to see how you take the Winged Tiger God from me today. Bring it on, all of you. I'll take you all on at the same time." Jian Chen sounded extremely arrogant. It was an open provocation to the Yiyuan sect's pride.

Yi Yangzi became pale and roared, "Jian Chen, don't think you can look down on others just because you have a divine hall! Do you really think that I can't do anything to you? Piss off!" A tremendous energy surged from his body and a three-hundred-meter wide palm condensed before him. It struck the divine hall heavily.

Boom!

The divine hall immediately began to shake violently but regained its stability very quickly. Yi Yangzi's grand attack had failed to damage the divine hall at all.

The Octoterra Divine Hall flew over Yi Yangzi's head at this very moment and directly began to descend. The giant divine hall fell quickly, wanting to squash Yi Yangzi underneath.

Yi Yangzi became enraged after realizing what Jian Chen intended. He could dodge, but his arrogance and pride as one of the strongest experts on the Tian Yuan Continent could not bear the thought of running.

Yi Yangzi roared at the sky as energy surged around him. The space distorted and warped, while the energy of the world and the World Force in a radius of five thousand kilometers began to gather unceasingly. In the end, it formed a three-hundred-meter wide palm that struck the bottom of the divine hall. He tried to knock away the divine hall with force alone.

However, even the hall elders of the Serpent God Hall could do nothing to the Octoterra Divine Hall. Although Yi Yangzi was on par with a hall elder, he was only one person. As such, how could he stop the divine hall from descending? He was directly squashed downward, forced closer and closer to the ground.

The other great elders saw this from afar and their faces all

darkened. One of them called out immediately, “Let’s go help Yi Yangzi!”

The great elders and Saint Rulers did not hesitate any more, quickly flying under the divine hall. They wanted to stop the divine hall with their combined power.

However, they still failed even though everyone was working together. The divine hall continued downward with no reduction in speed, but this time with a big group of people underneath it. In the end, the divine hall smashed into the ground heavily.

Boom!

The earth began to quake violently as thick cracks covered the surrounding mountains. A huge ditch formed at the location the divine hall had smashed into, while the divine hall itself had completely embedded itself deeply in the ground.

The divine hall forced all the experts from the Yiyuan sect into the ground, including the great elders.

The ground several kilometers away suddenly erupted and all the people emerged. They had tunneled their way out. However, they were currently dirty and in a horrible shape, covered in soil.

Although they did not sustain any horrible injuries, they were humiliated. This was even worse than killing them.

All the people of the Yiyuan sect felt humiliated when they were forced into such a horrible shape by a junior, as they were one of the great protector clans of the continent.

To them, this would be a permanent stain on their dignity.

“Jian Chen!” Yi Yangzi was no longer able to remain calm as he roared out. His voice was filled with rage and killing intent. At that moment, his anger had reached the utmost limit.

“Ptui ptui ptui! Jian Chen, I, Ling Fengzi, will be taking your life today no matter what. Argh!” Ling Fengzi spat out the pieces of grass in his mouth as he roared furiously at Jian Chen. His eyes were completely bloodshot.

Chapter 974: Resisting the Protector Clans (Four)

With a rumble, the Octoterra Divine Hall slowly rose up from the ground, taking to the air once again. Jian Chen's voice rang out thunderously, booming through the surroundings.

“If you want to kill me, come! I'd like to see exactly who can kill me today.”

Jian Chen was unwilling to let up. With the divine hall protecting him, he had no reason to be cautious around the protector clans. He continued to use the divine hall to squash them into the earth like before.

All of them became utterly pale as they trembled in rage. They were so angry that they became silent. They were respected and worshipped by all the people on the continent. In all these years, they had never been bullied into such a horrible position.

Yi Yangzi struggled to remain calm as he roared out, “Jian Chen, don't think you're the only one with a Saint Emperor's divine hall. Great elders, let's bring out the divine hall,” as he spoke, Yi Yangzi swung his hand and a spatial crack immediately appeared. It formed a Space Gate to a part of the Yiyuan sect. Soon afterward, a suction force appeared from his hand and a palm-sized divine hall that sat on an altar immediately flew out.

It landed on Yi Yangzi's hand and quickly expanded, reaching a length of three thousand meters in the blink of an eye. Yi Yangzi

then flew into it and began piloting it furiously, smashing it toward Jian Chen's divine hall.

The other great elders all cut open space and formed Space Gates as well, directly disappearing through them and returning to the protector clan. They were not as strong as Yi Yangzi, so they were unable to retrieve the divine hall like Yi Yangzi. As such, they could only go back personally.

Due to some rules in the protector clans, they could not become the masters of the divine halls like Jian Chen. Instead, the divine halls were enshrined in the protector clan and not carried with them. They could only be taken out during times of need, and were controlled using a secret technique.

Boom!

Yi Yangzi used his divine hall to collide violently with the Octoterra Divine Hall; it immediately produced a deafening boom. The terrifying energy ripples visibly expanded in all directions, causing the mountains below to collapse. Many rocks were reduced to dust.

Although divine halls did not possess much external offensive powers, they still contained the power of Saint Emperors. The collision of two divine halls in mid-air was akin to the clash of two Saint Emperors. Just the sound was enough to kill Heaven Saint Masters, ripping their souls to shreds.

Fortunately, the battleground had already moved several

hundred kilometers. If it had occurred in the sky above Flame City, merely the sound waves from the collision would have been enough to kill off the entire city.

The two halls remained completely fine after colliding, but the powerful force knocked both of them backward.

Both sides were serious. As soon as the divine halls stabilized, they collided with one another viciously once again. It caused the earth to shake and countless mountains to collapse.

Very quickly, the other great elders returned from the Yiyuan sect with divine halls as well. They controlled one each, so there was a total of five including Yi Yangzi's. They struck Jian Chen's Octoterra Divine Hall threateningly to vent their anger.

"Argh!" Jian Chen produced a long wail. He was not afraid at all, controlling his divine hall to charge toward the other five halls with great force.

Currently, the conflict between Jian Chen and the Yiyuan sect had already been reduced to the collisions between divine halls. Although no one succeeded at injuring anyone, the battle was clearly still very intense.

The sound from the six divine halls grew even vaster. Terrifying sound waves wreaked havoc in the surroundings, to the point where even the space was ripped open. The mountains below collapsed one after another, while even the energy of the world was greatly affected. It began to churn violently.

The great disturbance from the constant collisions of the six divine halls had alerted all the peak-level experts on the continent.

Tian Jian sat with his eyes closed in mid-air within an unknown space. This space was part of a divine hall in Mercenary City. His eyebrows had become rather white.

Opposite of him sat the black-robed Ming Dong and the burly, bare-chested Tie Ta. They had always received the personal guidance of Tian Jian in the past few years, so they had powered up at a divine rate. A heavy aura currently filled their surroundings.

Suddenly, Tian Jian snapped open his eyes and a gleam of light flashed through them. He looked toward the void far away. His eyes seemed to be able to pierce through it, able to see far away.

“It’s actually a conflict between six divine halls. Five of them belong to the Yiyuan sect of the protector clans, so who’s controlling the other one? He actually dares to take the Yiyuan sect on as enemies,” murmured Tian Jian. He disappeared with a movement.

A grey-haired old man had his feet in the mud of an empty little valley at the outskirts of the Cross Mountains. He constantly swung his hoe as he plowed the ground.

Suddenly, the old man’s ordinary eyes sharpened. He stared into the distance with interest and had even stopped his plowing.

“What powerful residual ripples of battle. Just who is fighting? Have the experts of the Beast God Continent come again?” the old farmer murmured. He closed his eyes and used a secret technique to observe what was going on there. Only after a while did he sigh emotionally and say, “So it’s someone fighting the Yiyuan sect with a divine hall. I wonder who is the controller of that divine hall. Their bravery is admirable to provoke one of the ten protector clans, but this has nothing to do with me. I’ve stepped back from matters regarding the continent long ago and will no longer interfere with anything. As long as the experts of the Beast God Continent don’t come invading and Little Fatty’s life remains unthreatened, I couldn’t care less even if the sky fell on me.”

The old farmer paused when he reached this point. A sliver of shock flashed through his eyes as he said, “Weird. Why do I feel a familiar presence from that divine hall? I-it seems to be related to the cultivation method of my Bloodsword sect. Just who is controlling the divine hall?”

The old farmer frowned slightly. He lowered his head in thought and mumbled to himself, “No, I gotta go have a look.” He swung his hoe and it ripped open a Space Gate. Then, he traveled through it with his feet bare and the hoe on his shoulder.

In another region of space, a large water mirror hung in the air, displaying the battle between the six divine halls. Below it lay an evil-looking, middle-aged, white-robed man who lay on a patch of grass as he looked on with interest. He seemed to be watching something fascinating.

“I didn’t think that Jian Chen would become so great after disappearing for just a few years. It’s quite unbelievable. Now that Jian Chen has the divine hall protecting him, I’d like to see just how the protector clans take the Winged Tiger God from him.”

“Hehe, to think that the protector clans would devote so much energy into fighting for the Winged Tiger God. They used so many methods in an attempt to find Jian Chen and take the Winged Tiger God, but now Jian Chen has returned himself with the Winged Tiger God by his side. I wonder what their expressions would be like when they discover that they can’t forcefully take the tiger away from Jian Chen. I really do look forward to that moment. I must see it for myself when the protector clans are forced to give in.”

The man laughed evilly.

At this very moment, an extremely attractive woman who seemed to be in her twenties slowly walked over from afar. She sighed and said, “Husband, I seem to be pregnant. Why don’t you spend more time with me?” The woman grumbled.

The man waved his hand and the mirror immediately shattered. He stood up and laughed toward the woman. “Hahaha, this path lord’s eighty-eighth child will finally be born.”

On the misty Dragon Island, the Lustastron Pit continued to glimmer with starlight like before. It seemed to be filled with stars, making it extremely enchanting.

At this moment, the calm space at the bottom of the pit began to tremble slightly. Two figures gradually appeared as their outlines became more distinct.

It was a middle-aged man who seemed to be in his forties and an old man who seemed to be in his seventies. They were the Golden Divine Dragon Rui Jin and the mutated Divine Alligator Hei Yu that had separated from Jian Chen all those years ago.

After disappearing for close to a decade, nothing had happened to the two of them. They remained as usual with their clothes neat and without any injuries. The only difference was that they currently seemed just like ordinary people. They seemed extremely simple.

Rui Jin glanced around and mumbled, “We’re finally back. We need to go find Jian Chen. We can’t let anything happen to him, or I’ll never be able to see my clansmen ever again.”

Hei Yu nodded his head and replied, “Jian Chen is a human from the Tian Yuan Continent, so he should be there. Let’s go.”

...

Jian Chen continued to clash with the five divine halls as he controlled his own. They were locked in a battle where neither side wanted to give in.

The surrounding space ripped open silently as they fought,

forming over ten Space Gates. Experts poured out unceasingly, and every single one of them was a Saint King. In just a few seconds, several dozen Saint Kings had gathered at this location.

In that moment, all the other protector clans had finally gathered once again. The grand elder of Mercenary City, Tian Jian and the sect master of the Bloodsword sect, Houston, had also come.

As soon as they emerged from the Space Gates, they focused their attention on the six divine halls that collided violently in mid-air. Their faces were filled with surprise.

Houston, who carried a hoe on his shoulders, did not even look at the five divine halls from the Yiyuan sect. Instead, he stared unblinkingly at Jian Chen's divine hall. His face became mixed and excited at the same time, revealing a lot of suspicions as well. He thought, "It's not wrong. It can't be wrong. That divine hall really is connected to the cultivation method of my sect. I sense a sliver of energy of the same source from it. But divine halls are created by the powers of Saint Emperors. No Saint Emperor has ever appeared in my sect, so just who is the person controlling this divine hall? And just where does this divine hall come from? Who created it?"

Chapter 975: Resisting the Protector Clans

(Five)

Jian Chen and the several great elders of the Yiyuan sect naturally noticed the arrival of the other protector clans as they fought intensely, but they did not stop. Jian Chen controlled the Octoterra Divine Hall by himself, fighting against the five other divine halls. He collided with the other divine halls without fear, becoming more courageous as the battle progressed.

The collisions between the six divine halls alerted many Saint Kings. After the protector clans arrived, Space Gate formed in mid-air one after another and Saint Kings of various ages emerged. They were all the ancestors of ancient clans, as well as some great hermits. Among them were Changyang Zu Yunxiao who stayed at the Changyang clan of Lore City.

They looked toward the six divine halls as soon as they arrived. They all tried to guess exactly who was controlling the lone divine hall. They wanted to learn exactly who was brave enough to openly provoke a protector clan and take the Yiyuan sect on as their enemy.

The five great elders had fought against Jian Chen's divine hall with their own for a very long time, but they could do nothing to him. In the end, they could no longer endure it so someone called out, "Everyone, the Winged Tiger God is within that divine hall. Please assist us in breaking through it and taking the Winged Tiger God!"

The great elder's words surprised all the surrounding people.

They all looked toward the Octoterra Divine Hall in disbelief.

“Ling Tianzi, are you sure? Is the Winged Tiger God really inside?” Tian Jian asked with a deep voice. Uneasiness flooded his eyes.

“Impossible. Isn’t the Winged Tiger God with Jian Chen, and hasn’t he gone to the sea realm? If so, the Winged Tiger God would naturally be in the sea realm. Why has it ended up in that divine hall? Ling Tianzi, don’t try messing with us.”

“Yiyuan sect, are you trying to use this fake news to tempt us into helping you just because you can’t beat your enemy?”

.....

...

The great elder’s words caused a great disturbance among the people. All the people from the protector clans and Mercenary City asked with doubt. No one was able to stay out of this if it was related to the Winged Tiger God.

Houston and the other Saint Kings remained silent. Although the Winged Tiger God tempted many of them, they knew quite well that this was not a matter that they could interfere with at all. They could only watch from the side and see what fascinating things happened.

“Everyone, I, Yi Jinzi, can guarantee that Ling Tianzi is telling the truth. The Winged Tiger God is indeed within that divine hall, and its controller is Jian Chen who fled to the sea realm with the Winged Tiger God all those years ago. He has even beaten our great elder, Ling Yuanzi, to the point where only his soul is left,” another great elder called out from a divine hall.

“What! The controller is Jian Chen?” All the people from the protector clans called out. They were filled with disbelief.

A golden gleam of light exploded in Tian Jian’s eyes. He stared at the divine hall in interest; he was stunned.

Houston stood with an ordinary hoe on his shoulders, but his deep old eyes also shone as he stared unblinkingly at the Octoterra Divine Hall. He too was filled with disbelief.

All the Saint Kings from the ancient clans were shocked. Jian Chen’s name was like a thunderclap to their ears in the past few years. They just never thought that Jian Chen—who was clearly a Saint Ruler—would be controlling a divine hall as he fought against the people of the Yiyuan sect. He had even made them become helpless against him. These Saint Kings were utterly overwhelmed with disbelief.

Other than shock, the members of the protector Changyang clan were delighted. Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Xiao were affected in particular as they became ecstatic.

This was due to the fact that Jian Chen was not only a member of

their Changyang clan, but also a person of their Zu faction.

“Jian Chen has actually returned, and he has become so strong. Fantastic, this is truly fantastic. I’ll immediately go bring Kong’er,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao said with a trembling voice. After that, he immediately left through a Space Gate.

“Never did I think that the great Yiyuan sect of the protector clans would have a moment where they need to call for help when they’re face up against a junior. I’ve finally seen it today.” Jian Chen’s voice emerged from the divine hall. He was making fun of them.

“Jian Chen, you’re too cocky. Do you really think that we’re helpless against you just because you’re hiding in a divine hall?” Yi Yuanzi said furiously. Jian Chen’s open provocation had completely humiliated them.

Tian Jian and Houston immediately became joyful when they heard Jian Chen’s familiar voice. All their doubt for Jian Chen were gone regardless of how they had felt earlier.

“I never thought he’d really return and return so quickly. This really has greatly exceeded anything I had expected,” Tian Jian smiled happily as he thought.

“You’ve returned perfectly. You still need to take back what was taken away from you before. Jian Chen, your accomplishments have far exceeded my anticipations. But you are still too rash as a young person. A divine hall is not enough to deal with a protector

clan,” Houston also thought.

In that moment, all seven other protector clans stood up and formed a loose encirclement around Jian Chen besides the protector Changyang clan and the Pure Heart Pavilion.

Jian Chen’s clash with the Yiyuan sect had finally stopped and the great elders all emerged from their divine halls. They all stared coldly at the Octoterra Divine Hall as they remained pale-faced from their fury.

Jian Chen let his divine hall remain floating in the air as he emerged on the very top. He looked around like nonchalantly at the protector clans that encircled him, but he showed no fear. The cat-sized tiger stood with its chest up on Jian Chen’s shoulder as it stared coldly at the people of the protector clans. A naturally condescending aura radiated from it, possessing some of its prestige as a beast god.

Although the white tiger was still young and not completely mature, it was extremely intelligent. It knew that the surrounding people were bad.

“Look, everyone. That’s the Winged Tiger God.” As soon as the white tiger revealed itself out in the open, it garnered the attention of everyone. Immediately, everyone looked away from Jian Chen and focused their gazes on it, even the protector clans. Greed leaked from their eyes.

Jian Chen could not help but sneer when he saw how everyone

behaved, “The Winged Tiger God is on me. If you want it, come take it,” as he said that, a tremendous aura began to radiate from him. It caused the surrounding space to tremble and blur, shocking everybody.

This was because the presence had reached the Third Heavenly Layer of Saint King.

“How is this possible? When he was on the Tian Yuan Continent, he was clearly just a Third Heavenly Layer Saint Ruler. How did he become a Saint King?”

“His strength has risen to such a level in a short decade. T-t-this...”

Everyone was astounded, including the ten protector clans. Only the Yiyuan sect was able to remain composed as they had witness Jian Chen’s strength earlier.

In that moment, Jian Chen drew the Emperor Armament from his Space Ring. Immediately, the expressions of many Saint Kings changed once again as a terrifying energy radiated from the Emperor Armament. It was at the level of the Seventh Heavenly Layer.

The Seventh Heavenly Layer of Saint King was much stronger than many of the Saint Kings present. There were only a few people left who could overpower Jian Chen.

Jian Chen displayed his full strength. He could not hold back at all before the ten protector clans. Today, he wanted to let everyone know that he could resist the protector clans. This was not solely because of the Octoterra Divine Hall, but that he had his own strength as well.

The current him was no longer the Saint Ruler who could be undermined by all Saint Kings like ten years ago.

Everyone sucked in a breath and many people's hearts began to thump involuntarily. Jian Chen's current strength was already enough to make many of them tremble.

Tian Jian and Houston became stunned. Both of them stared at Jian Chen with their tongues tied as their hearts churned.

The two of them were the first ones to meet Jian Chen. Back then, when Jian Chen was just a mere Earth Saint Master, they already knew him. As such, they understood Jian Chen's growth very well. It was just that they could not connect it to this high-spirited person who dared to challenge the ten protector clans to the puny little Earth Saint Master from all those years ago.

All the members of the protector clans looked at one another. Back then, the reason they wanted to take the Winged Tiger God was because they completely undermined him as a Saint Ruler. Now that Jian Chen's strength had skyrocketed and reached an unbelievable level, their opinions of him underwent great changes as well.

Just with his strength alone, Jian Chen was enough for the protector clans to treat with importance. In addition, he now possessed a divine hall as well, which made it even harder to deal with him.

Even if you ignored these factors, Jian Chen's status was extremely special as he was a member of the Changyang protector clan.

The people looked at each other as they hesitated. None of them wanted to miss such an easy opportunity to take the Winged Tiger God, so they fell into a dilemma.

The great elders from the Yangji sect hesitated as well. Jian Chen had crushed a branch that they had established outside many years ago. They originally wanted to use this as an excuse for taking the Winged Tiger God, but they now hesitated after witnessing Jian Chen's strength. They were uncertain whether they should continue on the matter and ask Jian Chen for an explanation.

Meanwhile, the Yiyuan sect did not let Jian Chen off so easily. A great elder yelled out, "Jian Chen, you injured our great elder Ling Yuanzi. You need to give us an explanation for that."

"Ling Yuanzi heavily injured me in the ocean back then, almost causing me to die. I came to kill him in revenge. It's an universally-accepted principle," Jian Chen retorted without showing any weakness, before glaring at the surrounding people. He said furiously, "My Flame City was taken and the Flame Mercenaries were chased out! Do you dare to say that you protector clans had nothing to do with it?"

Chapter 976: Jian Chen's Treatment

“Ling Yuanzi heavily injured me in the ocean back then, almost causing me to die. I came to kill him in revenge. It’s an universally-accepted principle,” Jian Chen retorted without showing any weakness, before glaring at the surrounding people. He said furiously, “My Flame City was taken and the Flame Mercenaries were chased out! Do you dare to say that you protector clans had nothing to do with it?”

“Jian Chen, there are rules among us protector clans. We cannot develop any large organizations on the continent. As a member of a protector clan, you will naturally need to follow this rule. The size of your Flame Mercenaries exceeded the limits and they possessed a city made from tungsten alloy. Naturally, they were disbanded,” a great elder of a protector clan said with a deep voice.

A sliver of mixed emotions appeared in Jian Chen’s eyes when he heard these words, but it vanished very quickly. He said coldly, “That’s a bunch of lies. I am born in Lore City of the Gesun Kingdom. I have no ties with any protector clan, much less being a member of one.”

Great elder Changyang Zu Xiao of the protector Changyang clan stood forward and stared at Jian Chen. His face was extremely mixed as he said with an almost trembling voice, “Jian Chen, you’re a part of the protector Changyang clan. The founder of Lore City Changyang clan was my great grandson, Changyang Zu Yunkong. You’re a descendent of Yunkong, thus a great grandson of mine as well. The blood of the protector Changyang clan runs in your veins.”

Jian Chen remained as usual. Just as he was about to retort, a Space Gate suddenly appeared next to him and Changyang Zu Yunxiao emerged. A great group of people followed behind him. Changyang Zu Yeyun, Changyang Zu Yunkong, Bi Hai, Jiede Tai, Chang Wuji, You Yue, Bi Lian, Yu Fengyan, and everyone else had come.

“Look, is he Changyang Xiangtian?” Changyang Zu Yunkong said to this group of people. His voice was filled with emotion. He had specially gone back to the Changyang clan and brought back this group of people, so that they could recognize Jian Chen. This was just in case the Jian Chen before them was fake.

“Brother...”

“Xiangtian...”

“Young master...”

“Jian Chen...”

When the group saw Jian Chen, they immediately became emotional. Uncle Chang, Yu Fengyan, Bi Lian, and You Yue were moved to tears.

“Good, good, good. It’s good that you’ve returned, it’s good that you’ve returned,” Bi Hai said with his deep voice. He was also extremely emotional.

The middle-aged beauty Changyang Zu Yeyun stared at Jian Chen in astoundment as she sighed emotionally. “Is he the clansmen who saved Kong’er? Why is he so powerful? His presence gives me a suffocating feeling. Is he not a Saint Ruler? No, impossible. His age...”

Changyang Zu Xiao sighed gently when he heard that. He said, “The current Jian Chen is no longer the Jian Chen you knew before. He’s a Saint King now and with his Emperor Armament, he can fight against Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Kings. There aren’t many people left on the continent that can suppress him.”

Changyang Zu Yunxiao, Changyang Zu Yeyun, and Changyang Zu Yunkong all became stunned when they heard this. Their shock reached its utmost limit.

A while later, Changyang Zu Yunkong could not help but laugh from the bottom of his heart, “I’m more than satisfied with my life to be able to have such an outstanding descendent. Great grandson, you are now an awe-inspiring supreme expert. You can do whatever you like. Our protector Changyang clan will be supporting you from behind.”

Jian Chen’s killing intent immediately began to reduce rapidly when members of his family appeared before him. He too became extremely emotional, but he knew that this was not the time to reminisce the old days. As such, he forcefully suppressed his feelings.

“Jian Chen, sorry. I did not live up to your expectations and failed to protect Flame City. Flame City has been taken away by someone else,” You Yue called out as tears ran down her cheeks. She blamed herself for everything.

Jian Chen’s heart was pained when he saw You Yue’s haggard face. Jian Chen always felt ashamed with himself over You Yue. He just owed her too much.

“Yue’er, I already know about the matters of Flame City. It’s not your fault. Don’t worry. I will take everything stolen from me back with nothing missing,” Jian Chen comforted, before looking at Changyang Zu Yunkong, “Great grandfather, are you really treating the Changyang clan as one of your own after how they treated you all those years ago? Has the seal in your head been removed?”

Changyang Zu Yunkong’s face darkened when he heard that and he immediately stopped talking.

Meanwhile, the expressions of the great elders of the Changyang clan became a little unnatural.

Changyang Zu Xiao sighed gently and said, “Although Kong’er made some mistakes all those years ago and the clan expelled him, the blood of the Changyang clan still flows in his veins. This is an undebatable fact, and the clan has already taken back Kong’er.”

“Let’s not talk about this for now. I want to take back Flame City today and revive the Flame Mercenaries. Will the Changyang clan

be preventing me from doing so?” Jian Chen glared at the group of people from the protector Changyang clan as he stood high on top of the divine hall.

The great elders frowned slightly. They looked at each other and all became troubled. With Jian Chen’s current strength, they no longer had the right to forcefully order him to do things.

Jian Chen sneered after seeing their reactions. Then, he gazed past the other nine protector clans. After looking away, he said, “Today, I will be taking back Flame City and reviving the Flame Mercenaries. Stand out, whoever wants to stop me,” Jian Chen spoke sharply. He did not respect the protector clans at all, as he had no good impression toward them.

If it were not for Tian Jian’s help all those years ago, he probably would not have been able to make it out of the continent and arrive at the sea realm. He would have fallen into the hands of the protector clans instead. He would not be faced with death, but the white tiger would definitely be taken from his side. Meanwhile, the matters of Flame City and the Flame Mercenaries were directly related to the protector clans.

Jian Chen was quite resentful toward them.

“Hmph, you arrogant brat. Jian Chen, do you really think you can look down on us protector clans now that you have a damned divine hall? You cannot impinge on our dignity. Breaking your divine hall is nothing difficult,” called out Ling Fengzi of the Yiyuan sect.

“Jian Chen, the rules between us protector clans has existed for thousands of years. No one can break it. You are now a member of a protector clan, so you must respect this rule. You cannot take back Flame City,” said the pavilion master of the Pure Heart Pavilion, Wu Chenzi.

“Jian Chen, if you take back Flame City today, you will be challenging the authority of us ten clans. You will become the enemies of all of us,” said a former school master of the Heaven’s Incense school.

“Jian Chen, if you insist on this, you will be dealt with by all ten protector clans according to the rules. Even the protector Changyang clan that stands behind you will be dragged in.”

“If you weren’t a member of a protector clan, we would not interfere with anything.”

...

All the people from the nine other protector clans spoke out. They all opposed Jian Chen’s wish to take back Flame City and did not want him to expand his forces. They spoke extremely sternly, leaving no room for any bargaining.

Jian Chen’s face began to sink. He slowly turned toward the great elders of the Changyang clan and said nonchalantly, “You now have two choices. The first choice is to fend off the protector clans with me and take back the Flame City that belongs to me. The

second choice would be that I, Jian Chen, will break free from your Changyang clan and have no more ties with you anymore.”

The great elders reacted with a change in expression and Changyang Qing Yun called out immediately, “Jian Chen, the blood of the Changyang clan runs in your veins. You can’t just break off the tie just because you want to. You must not interfere with the matters of Flame City anymore. That is the rule between us protector clans.”

“You have no authority to order me to do anything. I don’t care who is going to be standing in my way today. I will be taking back Flame City,” yelled Jian Chen.

“You...” Changyang Qing Yun became furious.

The other protector clans all looked at each other. The situation seemed rather delicate. Given that Jian Chen was a member of the protector Changyang clan, he could use the clan to successfully keep the Winged Tiger God and shut them up. However, the situation at hand seemed to exceed their expectations. Jian Chen’s relationship with the Changyang clan did not seem as harmonious as they had imagined.

A light flickered in the eyes of Yi Yangzi as he hesitated. A while later, he seemed to make up his mind. His eyes stopped wavering and sneered, “Jian Chen, don’t you even think about taking back Flame City today. I’d like to see how you will contend with us without your divine hall. I’ll break it right now. Great elders of the Yiyuan sect, I now command you all to produce the Emperor Armament together and break through that divine hall in revenge

for Ling Yuanzi.”

The expressions of the great elders all changed. Yi Jinzi cried out with a deep voice, “What? Use the Emperor Armament?”

“Yi Yangzi, are you certain about using the Emperor Armament? The power of the Emperor Armament is just too great. We will all suffer a heavy backlash,” Ling Tianzi also called out. He became stern.

Yi Yangzi’s face darkened as he called out angrily, “If we don’t, then how do we break through his divine hall and avenge Ling Yuanzi?”

The great elders all hesitated slightly before they gritted their teeth, ready to rip open a Space Gate to retrieve the Emperor Armament.

A gleam of light flashed through Jian Chen’s eyes when he heard them talk. He thought, “The divine hall cannot be broken through unless there’s a Saint Emperor, while the Emperor Armament of the Yiyuan sect can break through mine. Also, they said that if they use it with their strength, they will be hit with a powerful backlash. What is this Emperor Armament, to be so terrifying? Can they use attacks on par with Saint Emperors if they use their Emperor Armament?” Jian Chen’s heart shivered before making up his mind, “I can’t let them bring the Emperor Armament.”

“Please wait!” A voice suddenly rang out just as Jian Chen planned on doing something. The white-clothed Tian Jian slowly

descended.

Tian Jian's actions immediately attracted everyone's attention. They all looked toward him as an expert from a protector clan said, "Tian Jian, does your Mercenary City plan on interfering with this matter?"

Tian Jian paid no heed to that person and said to the people of the Yiyuan sect, "Your Emperor Armament is forged from the full strength and essence of several dozen Saint Emperors. It cannot be used against people of the same race. You cannot use your Emperor Armament."

Yi Yangzi's face sank as he clasped his hands toward Tian Jian. "Grand elder, this is the matter of us protector clans. I hope your Mercenary City does not interfere."

Tian Jian said, "The power of the Emperor Armament is too powerful. It can destroy whole regions of land and wipe out any life on them, so you can't use it casually. I naturally would have nothing to say if you were to use it against invading foreigners, but I definitely will not let you use the Emperor Armament for some small matters against a junior."

"Tian Jian, why must you stop what we're doing?" Yi Yangzi growled.

"If you still insist on using it, my Mercenary City will devote their full strength into preventing you for the continent," Tian Jian said forcefully. He was completely stern and did not seem like

he was joking at all.

Chapter 977: The Path Lord of Carnal Desires Appears

“Your Mercenary City is sticking its nose into too many matters.” Yi Yangzi was furious, while his complexion was horrible. He was helpless against Jian Chen if he did not use the Emperor Armament to crush Jian Chen’s divine hall.

“The existence of my Mercenary City is also to protect the peace of the Tian Yuan Continent,” Tian Jian said.

The great elders of the Yiyuan sect all revealed ugly expressions after being stopped from using the Emperor Armament. They definitely did not doubt that Mercenary City had the power to stop them. Although Mercenary City did not have a history as lengthy as the protector clans, it was founded by the strongest human expert, Mo Tianyun. No one knew what else Mo Tianyun had left behind in Mercenary City.

The experts from the other protector clans looked at one another. Undoubtedly, they could not use their Emperor Armaments now that Mercenary City had interfered. But if they did not use the Emperor Armament, it would be very difficult to break through the divine hall, even if the experts from all the protector clans worked together. This was because a qualitative difference existed between Saint Emperor and Saint King. They were experts of two completely different levels of cultivation. Saint Kings used the Saint Force within them and World Force, while Saint Emperors could completely overpower World Force.

All the people from the protector clans became stunned at the

situation. No one had any ideas in this moment. Although they also possessed divine halls, divine halls were not weapons and were extremely tough. They could not injure Jian Chen if he sheltered himself in the Octoterra Divine Hall no matter how many divine halls they used themselves.

“Hahaha, wonderful! Utterly wonderful! I never thought that the ten protector clans would also have a moment where they can only give in, forced into such a situation by a junior,” an odd laughter resounded in the surroundings at this very moment. An evil-looking middle-aged man had appeared up above from nowhere.

The man did not come through a Space Gate. Instead, he had hidden himself there for quite some time but no one present had realized.

“Path lord of carnal desires, it’s actually you.”

All their expressions changed and became rather ugly when they saw this man.

“Hahaha, correct. It is indeed I, the path lord. Surely I haven’t frightened anyone with my sudden appearance,” said the path lord as he laughed gently.

“There’s nothing to do with you here, path lord. Why’ve you come?” an expert said coldly. The path lord of carnal desire’s sudden appearance was unwelcomed.

“Hmph, I can go wherever I want to go. Since when were you in charge of where I went? You still don’t have the authority,” sneered the path lord of carnal desires. Afterward, he looked toward Jian Chen and smiled, “Jian Chen, you are impressive, much stronger than I was back then. I really do admire you for being courageous enough to go against the protector clans. I remember, back when I had your level of strength, I snuck into the Heaven’s Incense school to peep at the current school master showering. Though I had only peeped a few times before being chased all over the continent by the most powerful person in the school. He chased me for ten whole years before finally being satisfied. I was nowhere like you, opposing the protector clans all by yourself and making them helpless against you.”

“Path lord, do you not know shame?” A woman who seemed to be roughly thirty years of age stared at the path lord of carnal desires furiously. She was among the experts of the Heaven’s Incense school. Her gaze made it seem like she was tempted to flay him alive.

“Sister Yun Xiang, it has been two thousand years since we last met. You’ve already become a great elder of the Heaven’s Incense school, but I’ve seen every part of you whether I was supposed to see it or not. Why don’t you join me and become my eighty-ninth wife?” The path lord of carnal desires smiled evilly.

The woman became pale-white as her chest heaved heavily. Her beautiful eyes burned with rage.

Jian Chen could not help but become curious as he stood on top of the divine hall. He wondered exactly who this path lord of

carnal desires was. He actually dared to make fun of a Saint King from the Heaven's Incense school, and even view the school's experts as nothing.

“Be careful, this path lord of carnal desires is a Saint Emperor. He's the only Saint Emperor on the continent of this day, and he's enough to break through your divine hall.” Tian Jian's voice appeared in Jian Chen's ears, immediately throwing him into shock. Jian Chen's gaze toward the path lord became filled with fear.

The path lord smiled evilly and took a single step forward. He arrived on top of the Octoterra Divine Hall and before Jian Chen in that very instant. He said, “Jian Chen, you have an enmity with the people of the Yiyuan sect. Ling Yuanzi wanted to kill you all those years ago, so he cannot be forgiven so easily. Although you destroyed his body, his soul remains. With what the protector clans are capable of, it won't take long before Ling Yuanzi fully recovers. You can't steal his soul back at all with your current strength, so why don't we make a deal? I will teach the Yiyuan sect a lesson for you and give you Ling Yuanzi's soul. After that, you give me the Winged Tiger God. How about that?”

Jian Chen's heart sank when he heard that the path lord of carnal desires had also come for the white tiger. Jian Chen said, “Path lord of carnal desires, you're already a Saint Emperor now. Why must you fight over the Winged Tiger God?”

The path lord smiled evilly and replied, “I naturally have my own intentions for wanting the Winged Tiger God. You don't need to care too much about them. Jian Chen, are you going to agree to the

deal or not? Your divine hall isn't very tough before me."

"Path lord, I will not be handing the white tiger over to anyone, unless it decides to follow them itself," Jian Chen said with determination.

The path lord remained calm and said, "If that's the case, I'll force the Winged Tiger God to follow me on its own accord." He then raised his hand and an extremely tremendous energy quickly gathered. This was the power of Saint Emperors, enough to make Ninth Heavenly Layer Saint Kings pale.

"Stop!" A loud voice boomed at this very moment, causing the surrounding space to tremble. Shortly afterward, a Space Gate suddenly appeared and two ordinary-looking people emerged. It was Rui Jin and Hei Yu.

Jian Chen stared at the two of them in disbelief. They had separated in the Lunastron Pit previously, and Jian Chen thought he would never see the two of them ever again. He never thought they would actually appear on the Tian Yuan Continent completely unharmed. This surprised Jian Chen but also filled him with joy.

After all, the two of them had helped Jian Chen on Dragon Island. Particularly Rui Jin, who had collected a large amount of Dragon's Saliva. Jian Chen had always felt grateful toward the two of them.

The path lord looked toward the two of them and a gleam of light immediately flashed through his eyes. He said, "It's actually two

magical beasts at Great Perfection of Saint King. You two are looking for your deaths by coming here.”

Rui Jin and Hei Yu both looked toward the path lord of carnal desires and they became stern. Rui Jin growled, “A human Saint Emperor.”

“Seniors Rui Jin and Senior Hei Yu, please leave immediately. The path lord of carnal desires is a Saint Emperor. You’re not his opponent,” Jian Chen panicked as he yelled toward the two of them.

Rui Jin and Hei Yu’s seriousness disappeared when they heard that, now replaced with a sneer. They said, “So what if he’s a Saint Emperor? Today, we will try the strength of a Saint Emperor.”

Chapter 978: Fighting a Saint Emperor

Rui Jian and Hei Yu were both Saint Kings at Great Perfection, so a difference in abilities existed when compared to a Saint Emperor. However, they both seemed very confident.

Their words shocked everyone present, regardless of the Saint Kings from ancient clans or the great elders of protector clans. They all looked toward Rui Jin and Hei Yu weirdly, as if they were looking at a pair of idiots.

Although they were powerful, they were still limited to being Saint Kings. They did not have the abilities to resist before a Saint Emperor.

A Saint Emperor was an expert at a completely different level of cultivation and not something Saint Kings could go up against. Not to mention, the path lord of carnal desires had reached Saint Emperor many years ago. He was so strong that even the tiger emperor of the Beast God Continent, Lankyros, failed to match up to him.

Rui Jin and Hei Yu stunned the path lord of carnal desires as well. He looked at the two of them in disbelief and asked to confirm, “What did you say? You two want to fight me?”

Rui Jin and Hei Yu glanced at each other and they seemed to mutually understand one another. Immediately, two tremendous presences began to radiate from them, spreading mightily to a radius of several dozen kilometers.

The Great Perfection of Saint King was a level of cultivation beyond the Ninth Heavenly Layer. It drew infinitesimally close to Saint Emperor and was stronger than the Ninth Heavenly Layer. Their presences immediately brought on a tremendous pressure to the relatively weaker Saint Kings present.

The path lord of carnal desires shook his head in disappointment. “If this is all the strength you have, you have no right to fight with me. It’ll be very difficult for you to leave today as well, as I only need to twitch a finger and you two will have your souls wiped out.”

Rui Jin became furious when the path lord said that. He was a Golden Divine Dragon, the emperor of the dragons, so naturally he was prideful. How could he endure the insults from the path lord of carnal desires?

“Sacred Dragon’s Armor!” Rui Jian called out and a mysterious yet powerful energy immediately began to radiate from him. Soon afterward, a dazzling streak of golden light shot out from his body, encasing him entirely. A suit of awe-inspiring armor now covered Rui Jin through the dense golden light.

The expression of the path lord of carnal desires finally changed when he saw Rui Jian’s armor. He cried out involuntarily. “T-this-i-impossible...”

“Sacred Dragon’s Spear!” Rui Jian called out once again. He raised both his arms into the air and a silvery-white, seven-meter

long spear suddenly appeared in his hands. It shone brightly with a silvery-white light, dyeing the entire area snow-white.

An unbelievably tremendous energy flooded the region with the spear's appearance. It did not rip through the space, but instead froze it. In that moment, time and air seemed to stop.

The expressions of all the Saint Kings changed too. They all stared at the spear in shock, as they all shivered from the pressure it emitted.

“W-what is this weapon? I-it's so powerful, even more terrifying than our Emperor Armament forged by several dozen Saint Emperors,” a great elder of a protector clan said with a trembling voice.

“Magical beast experts don't usually use weapons, so why does he have such a terrifying weapon? Is it an Emperor Armament forged by several dozen Saint Emperors as well?” Yi Yangzi said with a deep voice. He was in shock.

The path lord of carnal desires could no longer remain calm. He stared at the spear above Rui Jin's head in disbelief and called out involuntarily, “Origin energy, it's actually origin energy. I actually sense origin energy. How is this possible? Even in the ancient times, there were no weapons that possessed origin energy.”

With another tremendous wave of energy, a suit of azure-colored armor appeared on Hei Yu, while a silver-white machete materialized in his hand. It radiated with a pressure no less

terrifying than the Sacred Dragon's Spear.

A black-clothed, middle-aged man suddenly stood up on the ninth-eighth floor of the Beast God Hall. A wild aura immediately began to radiate from him.

“Origin energy. It's the presence of origin energy. Origin energy has actually appeared on the Tian Yuan Continent...”

The sage-like peng emperor, Cangqiong, stood up on the ninety-seventh floor. He looked in the direction of the Tian Yuan Continent in interest as he said hoarsely, “It's the presence of origin energy...”

Tiger emperor Lankyros stopped cultivating on the ninety-sixth floor and suddenly stood up. He cried out, “Origin energy, it's origin energy. How can origin energy exist on the Tian Yuan Continent?”

The expression of the path lord of carnal desires changed once more. He stared at Hei Yu in disbelief and cried out in surprise, “It's origin energy again. How can this be possible? Where did you get these weapons with origin energy? Such powerful weapons have never appeared in all of history.”

Rui Jin growled sternly, “Human Saint Emperor, I didn't think that you'd still be quite knowledgeable enough to know the existence of origin energy. You're right. For all of history, such powerful weapons have never appeared, but they have appeared now. Do the two of us have the power to fight you now?”

The path lord of carnal desires struggled to stay calm. “Tell me, where did you get these weapons? Do you know a place where origin energy exists?” Some desperation lingered in the path lord’s voice. This was because origin energy was crucial for breaking through Saint Emperor. Origin energy had ceased to exist in the world long ago, which was why there had only been four people in total that had managed to surpass Saint Emperor. Once upon a time, there were countless experts at the peak of Saint Emperor who would lose all hopes for further breakthroughs. Their only choice was to watch helplessly as their ten-millenia lives ended and they became bones.

“Human Saint Emperor, why should we tell you this? Are you going to fight with us or not?” Rui Jin growled.

The path lord of carnal desires sucked in a deep breath and slowly calmed himself down. He looked toward Rui Jin as his eyes burned with greed. “If you tell me where origin energy is present, I am willing to help you do anything.” All the Saint Kings present immediately became astounded after hearing this.

“You better give up on that thought, human Saint Emperor. Origin energy has disappeared long ago from this world. We will defeat you with our weapons in hand now,” said Rui Jin straightforwardly. The path lord’s words did not tempt him.

The path lord of carnal desires stared fixedly at the two of them as a gleam of light flickered in his eyes. Only after a while did he speak out once again, “The weapons you possess are indeed very powerful and contain origin energy, but you cannot control them

at all with your current strengths. If you think you can use them to fight against me, you're deluding yourselves. I'll show you the power of a Saint Emperor right now. Fight with me in outer space." With that, the path lord of carnal desires shot up into the air.

Rui Jin and Hei Yu did not want to fall behind so they tailed him closely into outer space.

The Octoterra Divine Hall landed in Jian Chen's hand as the size of a fist. He too soared into the air as he carried the divine hall in his left hand and the Emperor Armament in his right.

The Saint Kings from the protector clans and ancient clans all followed afterward. None of them wanted to miss such a fascinating show as they all wanted to know if two Saint Kings at Great Perfection could defeat the path lord of carnal desires with two powerful weapons.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao sent uncle Chang and the others back to the Changyang clan in Lore City before following them up.

Jian Chen flew higher and higher, while the ground beneath him slowly turned into a huge planet. This was the first time he had flown so high.

As their altitude rapidly increased, the air became thinner and thinner, enough to suffocate normal people. However, it could not affect the Saint Kings at all.

Jian Chen felt weightless after leaving the atmosphere of the planet. He lost his ability to determine direction, as there was no concept of direction in this icy-cold outer space. It even became difficult to distinguish between up and down.

Jian Chen floated in a region of space as he stared fixedly at Rui Jin and Hei Yu. The Saint Kings from the other clans gathered around him. They all took up their own space as they looked toward Rui Jin and the two others.

Suddenly, a white light illuminated the dark space. Rui Jin and Hei Yu's weapons both began to shine with a powerful white light, turning the region into a snowy-white world. Terrifying energy began to surge, distorting the space around them.

Rui Jin and Hei Yu struck out together at the path lord of carnal desires. As they stabbed out, the space around them quickly froze, expanding toward the path lord. The two weapons radiated with a terrifying pressure, making it suffocating for all the Saint Kings present.

The path lord remained as he would usually as a terrifying energy quaked through his body. It forcefully stopped the freezing space before him. Then, he grabbed at the empty region with a hand. Vast energy condensed in his hand; the power was so great that it exceeded the limitations of the space there, causing it to collapse. It did not mend while the energy was there.

“People have seven emotions and six desires, and I used that as my path, creating the Palms of Emotions and Desires. There are sixteen moves in total, divided into seven moves of emotions and

the six moves of desires. The fusion of the seven emotions gives the Palm of Severance, while the fusion of the six desires gives the Palm of Desireless. The final move is a fusion of all seven emotions and six desires, the Palm of Desireless Severance,” murmured the path lord of carnal desires. Afterward, he slowly pushed out with his hand and spat out, “This is the first palm strike, the Palm of Greed!”

The terrifying energy quickly shot toward Rui Jin and Hei Yu, before striking their weapons in the end. An explosion occurred immediately.

The path lord’s palm strike was not purely an energy attack. An invisible intent viciously struck the souls of Rui Jin and Hei Yu after the explosion, resulting in an immediate change in their expressions. Their clear gazes instantly became clouded.

The path lord’s palm strike triggered the greed from the bottom of their hearts, disturbing their mental state.

Chapter 979: Gathering of the Three Saint Emperors

A slip in the mental state during a battle was a life-threatening danger, especially in battles between experts. A single attack could determine the outcome, so being distracted for even a split moment could result in death.

The greed buried deeply within Rui Jin and Hei Yu was triggered by the path lord of carnal desire's attack. It affected them both, almost making them slip and lose themselves in the extremely tough greed that surged up.

Rui Jin and Hei Yu immediately stabilized their mental states, forcibly suppressing the greed. They recovered very quickly.

“Your greed is not very strong, which was why you could recover so quickly. It definitely would not be so easy for someone who's especially greedy,” said the path lord of carnal desires. Afterward, he struck out a second time, “This is the Palm of Lust!”

The cultivation of the path lord of carnal desires' focused on attacks that injured the soul. His attacks were able to affect it directly. It would give rise to various desires and urges hidden in people's hearts, catching them off guard.

Struck with the Palm of Lust, the expressions of both Rui Jin and Hei Yu changed. Countless matters of lust floated through their heads with many obscene images sandwiched between. It affected their souls, making it difficult for them to remain composed.

With their level of cultivation, they no longer lingered very much on carnal desires and emotions. As such, they were not affected very much by the desires and emotions alone. However, the path lord of carnal desires could intensify it by countless times. Let alone Saint Kings at Great Perfection, even Saint Emperors could be affected.

“Human Saint Emperor, no wonder you’re the path lord of carnal desires. You can control the seven emotions and six desires of people. Attacks like these are rarely seen, even in the ancient times. Unless you can completely purify your mind and become emotionless as well as desireless, anyone that faces up against you will be affected. They’ll all be drowned in emotions,” Rui Jin growled.

The path lord smiled evilly. “You two indeed have the power to fight Saint Emperors with just your origin energy weapons and armor—one for attacking and one for defending. However, it’s a pity. You can’t even touch me before being defeated. Eat my third palm strike, the Palm of Dread.”

As the path lord of carnal desires gently pushed out with his hand, the tremendous energy that gathered in his palm surged out like a flood toward Rui Jin and Hei Yu.

“Human Saint Emperor, don’t think that you’re already victorious just because you can control the seven emotions and six desires. Watch as we resist your attacks,” called out Hei Yu. A translucent pearl suddenly appeared above him, encasing his body with a glimmering light.

At the same time, the exact same pearl appeared above Rui Jin, encasing him with a similar light. Afterward, he stabbed out with his spear.

The Sacred Dragon's Spear and Hei Yu's machete collided with the path lord of carnal desires' attack, immediately producing a boom. The attacks were cancelled out and when the soul attack from the palm strike approached Rui Jin and Hei Yu, it was immediately blocked by the light from the pearl.

This time, the path lord of carnal desires failed to affect them in any way.

The path lord's expression changed slightly as he stared at the two of them in surprise. He said, "How is that possible? What treasure do you have that can block my soul attacks?"

"It's fine even if I tell you. This is a defensive treasure that specializes in blocking attacks to the soul. I'd like to see how you affect us with your palm strike now, human Saint Emperor," Hei Yu could not help but laugh out. Then, he charged toward the path lord as he swung his machete.

The path lord's face became icy. Hei Yu's attack with the origin energy machete was powerful enough to injure Saint Emperors, so he did not dare to ignore it at all. He immediately blocked and growled, "You two have quite a few treasures on you. You actually possess a treasure that can block my soul attacks as well, though I wonder how tough they are. Can they block my Palm of Severance

from the fusion of the seven desires, my Palm of Desireless from the fusion of the six desires and my final attack, the Palm of Desireless Severance?”

“Then try it. I’d like to see how your attacks break through our defensive treasures.” This time, the speaker was Rui Jin. He was confident.

The path lord of carnal desires sneered, “The Palm of Desireless Severance is the most powerful move among the seven emotions and six desires, it far exceeds your imaginations. Back when I fought the tiger emperor from the Beast God Continent, I did not even need to use the Palm of Desireless Severance. Just the Palm of Severance was enough to heavily injure him. Just imagine the power of the Palm of Desireless Severance then. Now, allow me to break through your defensive treasures with that.”

He was about to strike out as he spoke, but his eyes suddenly narrowed and he turned toward one side.

Three Space Gates ripped open at the same time in the direction that the path lord looked. Two middle-aged men and a ruddy old man emerged. They were the three Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent.

The pressure of Saint Emperors immediately began to radiate from them with their appearance, causing the expressions of the Saint Kings who watched from afar to change. They had only seen Lankyros before, but they naturally knew the identities of the other two Saint Emperors.

The path lord of carnal desires gazed past the three of them and became rather stern. He said, “I didn’t think that the three Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent would all come.”

Jian Chen’s expression immediately changed when he heard they were the three Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent. He immediately entered the Octoterra Divine Hall and pulled out the saint artifact, before throwing wordlessly throwing the white tiger inside. Afterward, he exited the divine hall once again. Hiding in the divine hall was useless before Saint Emperors.

The three Saint Emperors all looked toward Rui Jin and Hei Yu’s armor and weapons. A gleam of light erupted in their eyes and they all cried out, “It really is origin energy...”

“You two are magical beasts as well. Where did you obtain these weapons and armor that possess origin energy? Did you find a place with origin energy?” Lankyros asked Rui Jin and Hei Yu. He was a little overwhelmed with excitement.

Rui Jin and Hei Yu looked at each other, and Hei Yu spoke out, “Origin energy has ceased to exist in this world long ago.”

“Then where do your weapons and armor come from? Why does origin energy exist within them?” A heavy voice boomed out. The ruler of the Beast God Continent spoke out, his voice also bearing some excitement.

“The Sacred Dragon’s Armor and the Sacred Dragon’s Spear are

consecrated items of the Dragon clan, so they naturally came from my clan,” said Rui Jin.

“What! The Sacred Dragon’s Armor and the Sacred Dragon’s Spear!” The three Saint Emperors were all shocked as they stared fixedly at the armor and weapon on Rui Jin. After a while, they finally confirmed that they were indeed the Sacred Dragon’s Armor and Spear and they all became astonished.

“It really is the Sacred Dragon’s Armor and Spear from the ancient Dragon clan. But didn’t they disappear with the Dragon clan? Why are they suddenly on you now? And the armor and spear were never this strong in the past, let alone possessing origin energy. Where did you obtain these two items?” Kaiser growled as he stared fixedly at Rui Jin.

Rui Jin became slightly angered and said coldly, “I have no need to tell you this. Be careful with your tone, you have no right to speak to me like that.”

“Presumptuous!” Kaiser fell into a rage as tremendous killing intent radiated from him.

“The one who’s presumptuous is you!” Rui Jin bellowed, before producing a dragon roar. In the blink of an eye, he became a three-hundred-meter long Golden Divine Dragon, radiating with a tremendous aura of dragons.

“My species are the kings of the Dragon clan. Do you not know the rules of the Dragon clan for being impolite toward me as an

impure-blooded mutated earthwyrms?”

The hierarchy of the Dragon clan was very strict, as they placed a lot of attention on bloodlines. The Golden Divine Dragons were publicly-acknowledged as the kings of the clan. They needed to be treated courteously and listened to by all members of the clan, regardless of age or strength. As a king, Rui Jin was naturally prideful. Especially to people of the same clan, his status stood out even more. His prestige as a dragon king would not wane before a Saint Emperor, let alone a mutated earthwyrms with an impure bloodline.

Rui Jin revealed his true form, shocking everyone present except for Jian Chen and the three Saint Emperors from the Beast God Continent. No one had thought that a member of the Dragon clan would still exist, let alone a Golden Divine Dragon.

The three Saint Emperors from the Beast God Continent remained calm, as if they knew Rui Jin's original form long ago.

A sneer formed on Kaiser's lips as he said, “You must be the Golden Divine Dragon that escaped from the space within the saint artifact at the Radiant Saint Master Union? Correct, you are indeed a king of the Dragon clan, but it is no longer the ancient times. The Dragon clan no longer exists, so its rules no longer applies.”

Rui Jin's expression immediately became extremely ugly when he heard that.

At this moment, Kaiser's face suddenly changed and he called

out, “The Winged Tiger God. This is the presence of the Winged Tiger God. I actually sense a sliver of the Winged Tiger God’s presence. It’s nearby.” Kaiser sniffed and followed the remaining smell in the air. His eyes locked onto to Jian Chen and glare at him. Kaiser growled, “The presence of the Winged Tiger God is on you. Is it with you?”

Lankyros also looked toward Jian Chen. He had seen an image of Jian Chen before, so he recognized him immediately. He cried out, “He’s Jian Chen. I didn’t think he had already returned from the sea realm.”

“Jian Chen, hand over the Winged Tiger God.” Kaiser’s face darkened. He took a single step and arrived before Jian Chen instantly.

Chapter 980: Clash of the Powerful

“Jian Chen, hand over the Winged Tiger God.” Kaiser’s face darkened. He took a single step and arrived before Jian Chen instantly.

“Jian Chen, you avoided our pursuit by hiding in the sea realm all those years ago. I’d like to see where you run now that you’re on the Tian Yuan Continent.” Lankyros also stepped out and arrived before Jian Chen. He glared at Jian Chen as he radiated with a powerful aura. He was like a huge mountain that stood before Jian Chen, making Jian Chen feel like his body was sinking. Jian Chen immediately began to circulate his Chaotic Force, pushing the Chaotic Body to the utmost limit to resist Lankyros’ pressure.

A gleam of light immediately flickered through Lankyros’ eyes when he saw how Jian Chen was able to resist his pressure without even flinching. He said coldly, “Your strength is much greater than rumored, but killing you is still as easy as cake. Jian Chen, hand over the Winged Tiger God and I’ll spare your life. If you don’t, there can only be death.”

“I’d like to see who’ll harm him.” Rui Jin arrived before Jian Chen with a flash after returning to his human form. He glared at Lankyros and Kaiser as he wielded the Sacred Dragon’s Spear.

Hei Yu had also arrived beside Rui Jin. He faced the two Saint Emperors without showing any weakness.

Lankyros' face began to sink. He growled, "Are you sick of living? Daring to block what I am doing?"

"The Winged Tiger God is the god of the magical beasts. Since when did you have the right to interfere with its freedom? Unless the Winged Tiger God is willing itself, no one has the right to make it do what it doesn't like," growled Rui Jin.

"It's exactly because it's the god of us magical beasts that we need to bring the Winged Tiger God back, so we can provide even greater space and conditions for its growth. The Winged Tiger God should be living on our Beast God Continent. It should not be in the hands of you humans. Moreover, the Winged Tiger God is still growing. It's simple-minded. If it gets raised wrongly by you humans, it would be a loss for us magical beasts," said Lankyros.

"The Winged Tiger God may be young, but it's still a beast god after all. How can it be led off in the wrong direction so easily? Anyway, don't you dare take it from Jian Chen today," Rui Jin did not let up as he pushed back at Lankyros with words. He protected Jian Chen.

Jian Chen immediately became filled with doubt upon seeing how Rui Jin and Hei Yi were actually willing to offend two Saint Emperors to protect him. Their relationship did not seem to be anywhere near this level.

Lankyros and Kaiser's expression became ugly after they heard Rui Jin's words. Killing intent immediately appeared in Kaiser's eyes as he stared coldly at Rui Jin, "Golden Divine Dragon, do you really think that I'm afraid of killing you since you're a king of the

Dragon clan? Don't blame me for not treating you as a clansmen if you don't move."

Rui Jin immediately became furious when he was threatened by a mutant earthwurm. He called out, "I have the sacred artifact of the Dragon clan, the Sacred Dragon's Armor, protecting me. Do you really think that you, a mere earthwurm, can harm me?"

Kaiser looked at Rui Jin's armor as his eyes flickered in thought. He then said, "Tiger emperor, keep the two of them busy. I'll take Jian Chen."

The tiger emperor sneered, "Don't worry, leave the two of them to me." After that, he charged toward Rui Jin and Hei Yu, embroiling in a great battle with the two of them. He kept them busy.

Kaiser no longer hesitated now that Rui Jin and Hei Yu no longer blocked him. He directly extended a hand toward Jian Chen.

"This palm strike is the Palm of Joy!"

At this moment, a gentle voice rang out. The path lord of carnal desires suddenly lashed out, directly striking Kaiser with an attack.

Kaiser's eyes turned icy and he immediately stopped his movements toward Jian Chen. He punched out madly and collided with the path lord's palm strike in mid-air.

Boom!

The collision between the two attacks directly caused the surrounding space to collapse, shattering it into countless pieces. Terrifying residual energy swept out wildly, catapulting the helpless Jian Chen far, far away. Immediately, a violent agony filled his head. His Chaotic Body had almost been injured.

The path lord of carnal desires shot back quickly, stopping several kilometers away. He did not pale, but he was grim. Kaiser stood like a mountain unmoved, though his presence became rather unstable. His face twitched constantly, as if he wanted to smile, but he forcefully kept it in.

Kaiser returned to normal very quickly as he stared coldly at the path lord. He growled, “You sure are worthy of your name, the path lord of carnal desires who created the path of emotions and desires. You really do have some strength. It may be able to affect me a little, but that’s all it can do.”

“Is that so?” The path lord of carnal desires smiled evilly, “The tiger emperor was heavily injured by my seven palms of emotions back then. I’ll make you try them today. Let’s see if the most powerful person from the Beast God Continent can come out unscathed. This is the second palm strike, the Palm of Rage!”

Clashing a second time, the path lord’s palm strike made his expression change once again. The ruler of the Beast God Continent was extremely easily enraged. As such, not only did the attack easily trigger the fury hidden within Kaiser, it quickly expanded to the point where it almost lost control.

However, Kaiser was still a Saint Emperor in the end. He forcefully repressed his emotions very quickly and returned to his previous state. On the other hand, the path lord retreated several kilometers once again.

“The third palm strike...”

“The fourth palm strike...”

The path lord of carnal desires struck out seven times. Each palm strike contained different emotions, triggering all seven emotions within Kaiser. Although it failed to injure him, he ended up in a horrible shape from the mental shock.

The path lord retreated several dozen kilometers after the seven palm strikes. He was stern.

“Path lord, I have already experienced your seven palms of emotions. However, I wonder if you can endure a few punches from me?” Kaiser yelled out. His presence had become even messier now as all of his emotions had been set off. Although they were forcefully suppressed, they still created a mess in his mind, especially when directly opposite emotions appeared at the same time. It made him feel like his mind was going to break.

“Fusion of the seven emotions, Palm of Severance!” said the path lord of carnal desires softly, before pushing out gently.

“Watch as I break your Palm of Severance! Beast King Punch!” Kaiser roared angrily and a punch that contained indescribable laws of the world went up to meet the Palm of Severance.

Kaiser’s punch was much more powerful this time than before. The path lord of carnal desires was thrown back several dozen kilometers before finally coming to a stop. A sliver of paleness immediately appeared on his face.

As the path lord shot backward, Kaiser’s expression changed greatly as well. He produced a painful grunt. He was not injured by the force of the palm strike, but was instead affected by the Palm of Severance.

The Palm of Severance was different from the attacks of the seven emotions before. The seven palm strikes earlier would intensify the seven emotions of a person, while the Palm of Severance would sever the emotions.

Struck by the attack, Kaiser felt like something extremely important had been forcefully yanked from his soul. His soul felt empty, and also experienced a sharp pain at the same time.

The emotions rampant in Kaiser due to the seven attacks from the path lord had been forcefully severed by the Palm of Severance. It was like forcefully digging out all the organs in Kaiser’s body, only leaving behind a shell.

The seven palm strikes earlier had magnified the seven emotions endlessly, essentially planting the seven emotions as seeds in the

Kaiser's mind. Then, it germinated, taking up all of his thoughts. Afterward, the path lord used the Palm of Severance to sever the emotions, succeeding in injuring his opponent's soul.

The Palm of Severance was not truly severing the emotions of the opponent, but a special way to injure the opponent's soul.

The Palm of Severance could be used on its own, but if it the seven attacks were used beforehand and triggered the emotions of the opponent, its strength would be multiplied by forcefully removing those emotions.

Kaiser was truly worthy of being a Saint Emperor as he recovered very quickly. However, he was unable to mend the damage to his soul. He stared at the path lord with a sunken face. "Your Palm of Severance really has broadened my horizons, but it has failed to injure me heavily. My soul has only sustained light injuries, while my Beast King Punch has made you suddenly suffer quite heavy internal injuries. You're not my opponent."

"I still have the Palm of Desireless after the Palm of Severance, and then the Palm of Desireless Severance. It's still too early to discuss who wins," said the path lord.

The light in Kaiser's eyes flickered as he growled, "Looks like the Tian Yuan Continent insists on keeping the Winged Tiger God. Are you not afraid of a full-blown war between the two continents?"

"I only do what I want to do. Go discuss the safety of the continent with the ten protector clans and Mercenary City.

However, you intruded on my Tian Yuan Continent today. I don't really care about the safety of the continent, but I am still a human Saint Emperor. How can I just watch you foreigners act as you wish on the territory of humans? Now, please leave the continent immediately," said the path lord of carnal desires. He also understood that if he wanted the Winged Tiger God, he needed to keep it on the Tian Yuan Continent first. He would have no chance at all once it ended up on the Beast God Continent.

Kaiser sneered, "Path lord, you are indeed capable of keeping me busy temporarily, but don't forget that my Beast God Continent has three Saint Emperors." Kaiser then looked toward Cangqiong and said, "Peng emperor, keep the human Saint Emperor busy. I'll go rescue the Winged Tiger God. It cannot remain in the hands of the humans no matter what."

Cangqiong looked back at Kaiser and said, "I only came with intentions for the origin energy. Unless the Winged Tiger God is willing himself, I will definitely not be taking it back forcefully, because this is an offence of disrespect toward the beast god."

Chapter 981: Resolution

Cangqiong spoke nonchalantly. He felt no fear toward Kaiser, as he was also one of the people in control of the Beast God Continent. He controlled a third of the land along with Kaiser and Lankyros.

Although some difference in strength existed between the three of them on the Beast God Continent, their statuses were the same.

Kaiser's face sank as he heard what Cangqiong said. He glared at Cangqiong and said angrily, "Cangqiong, as a part of the Beast God Continent, you should be thinking for the Beast God Continent. The Winged Tiger God is the beast god of our continent, so we need to bring it back no matter what."

"Cangqiong, the Winged Tiger God has ended up in the hands of humans. It's in danger right now. You're still one of the people in charge of the Beast God Continent. How can you just watch the Winged Tiger God be oppressed by humans?" Lankyros said urgently. He was busy with Rui Jin and Hei Yu right now. He needed to be cautious as he faced the attacks from the origin energy weapons, as it was enough to injure Saint Emperors.

Cangqiong did not waver whatsoever and said coldly, "How can it truly grow without experiencing hardships? Not to mention, the Winged Tiger God is young right now, so it needs to go through these matters to a greater extent. Moreover, the Winged Tiger God is a beast god. It possesses the body of a beast god, so how can it be injured so easily by others. I will naturally appear to help it when it truly faces danger." With that, Cangqiong stared deeply at the

battle between Lankyros and the other two, before directly leaving through a Space Gate he created. He had returned to the Beast God Continent.

Cangqiong's departure caused the expressions of Kaiser and Lankyros to both become extremely ugly. They were both busy with the path lord of carnal desires as well as Rui Jin and Hei Yu, so they had no extra energy to go capture Jian Chen and take the Winged Tiger God. The experts from Mercenary City and the ten protector clans were also spectating the battle from the surroundings.

The experts from the Tian Yuan Continent immediately sighed a breath of relief with the departure of a Saint Emperor from the Beast God Continent. With one less Saint Emperor, it was much less pressure. They could devote more energy into dealing with Kaiser and Lankyros.

“Guests of the Beast God Continent, please return,” said the path lord of carnal desires.

Kaiser's eyes flickered for quite a while as he hesitated. He too understood that the two of them were unable to take advantage of the current situation, so he immediately swung his hand. A Space Gate appeared before him. Then, he straightforwardly left through it after he eyed Rui Jin and Hei Yu coldly.

With Kaiser's departure, Lankyros stopped his fight with Rui Jin and Hei Yu as well. He immediately backpedalled, gazing at Jian Chen and the weapons and armor on Rui Jin and Hei Yu for a while. He said coldly, “I'll let you off for today. Next time, you

won't be so lucky." Lankyros also ripped open a Space Gate and left through it after throwing this threat down.

The region of space immediately fell into a temporary silence with the departure of the three Saint Emperors. The three Saint Emperors had stayed here for less than ten minutes from arrival till departure. However, everything that had occurred in that short amount of time was enough for people to think about for quite some time.

The battle between the path lord of carnal desires and Kaiser was particularly sensational, shocking everyone present. The strength of the path lord's seven emotions and six desires attacks had exceed everyone's imaginations.

Rui Jin and Hei Yu stowed their weapons away, but remained clad in the origin energy armor. They would rely on the armor to withstand attacks from Saint Emperors.

"Human Saint Emperor, our battle has yet to conclude," Rui Jin said as he looked at the path lord of carnal desires. The pearl that could block soul attacks remained floating above them, encasing the two of them with a glimmering light.

The path lord of carnal desires looked at the pearl for a while as a sliver of sternness flashed through the depths of his eyes. He said hoarsely, "Which side do you belong to?"

"We are independent. We belong to no side," said Rui Jin. A hidden sliver of loneliness flickered through the depths of his eyes,

but it disappeared very quickly.

“If that’s the case, there’s no need for us to keep fighting. You can go,” said the path lord of carnal desires. He no longer had any interest in fighting the two of them, because his most powerful attack was not physical but his soul attacks he had created. Now that both Rui Jin and Hei Yu possessed protective treasures—the pearl for soul attacks and the armor of physical attacks—he could no longer do anything to them. Victory would be difficult to discern even if they kept fighting.

Rui Jin and Hei Yu looked at each other and accepted this outcome. They did not force him to keep battling, also giving up on any intent to keep fighting. Afterward, they both arrived before Jian Chen, who seemed to be in a rather horrible shape. Rui Jin asked him, “Brother Jian Chen, are you fine?”

The expressions of the people from the ten protector clans changed slightly when they saw that Jian Chen actually knew Rui Jin and Hei Yu. An ill feeling had already begun to loom faintly over their hearts, while the people of the Changyang clan were all delighted. They had personally witnessed Rui Jin and Hei’s strength; although they were Saint Kings at Great Perfection, they were difficult to deal with even when for a Saint Emperor.

Jian Chen smiled as he looked at the armored pair. He replied, “I’m fine. Thank you seniors for helping me.”

“It’s just a small matter. There’s no need to be so polite,” Hei Yu waved a hand and said uncaringly. It seemed like he had done something not worth mentioning.

Hei Yu's attitude warmed Jian Chen's heart. He did not think it was a small matter. If it were not for the assistance from Hei Yu and Rui Jin, he would not have been able to resist at all when faced up against the path lord of carnal desires. His Octoterra Divine Hall would have been destroyed and the white tiger taken in the end. Even the saint artifact would not have been enough to protect him, It was extremely likely it would be broken into pieces by the path lord of carnal desires.

Although the artifact spirit possessed the strength of a Saint Emperor inside the artifact space, it was still an auxiliary artifact in the end. It did not possess much battle prowess. Even if the artifact spirit possessed the power of a Saint Empeorr, it was probably the weakest kind. It was not the path lord of carnal desires' opponent.

The divine hall's defences were equivalent to the saint artifact. All it could do was block attacks from Saint Kings, and would become damaged once it received attacks on the level of Saint Emperor or even break.

The path lord of carnal desires tightly furrowed his brows when he saw how close Jian Chen was with Rui Jin and Hei Yu. The fact that Jian Chen was a member of a protector clan did not scare him. It was Rui Jin and Hei Yu that pained him greatly.

"Crap, I didn't think Jian Chen would be so close with the two of them. What do I do now? And they seem to care very much about the Winged Tiger God. If they take part in protecting the Winged Tiger God, how do I take it from Jian Chen?" The path lord of

carnal desires thought as he stood still. He glanced toward the ten protector clans from time to time as the light in his eyes flickered.

The people from the protector clans all became uneasy. Light flickered in their eyes, as if they were hesitating something. Only the Changyang clan was ecstatic, to the point where their joy had reached an absolute limit. Meanwhile, the people from the Pure Heart Pavilion remained calm. To them, it was enough as long as the Winged Tiger God did not end up in the hands of the Beast God Continent. They did not care at all which protector clan it ended up with.

Rui Jin secretly glanced past the people from the protector clans and the path lord of carnal desires. He said to Jian Chen, “Do you have any unfinished business, brother Jian Chen?”

Jian Chen immediately looked toward the great elders of the Yiyuan sect when he heard that, before finally shaking his head after hesitating slightly. Rui Jin and Hei Yu had already helped him enough. They had first saved his life on Dragon Island by helping him avoid the pursuit of the dragon souls, and then helped him retrieve the Dragon’s Saliva. Then, they had helped him stop the path lord and the Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent this time. He had owed them enough and did not want to deepen the debt.

“Since you’ve dealt with all your business, let’s not stay in outer space anymore and return to the continent,” said Rui Jin. Afterward, he grabbed Jian Chen’s shoulder and flew toward the Tian Yuan Continent.

The ten protector clans and the path lord of carnal desires hesitated slightly as they watched the three of them fly off. In the end, they did not stop them and dispersed instead.

Although Jian Chen's name was not guaranteed to resound through the entire continent after what had happened this time, his strength had been witnessed by several ancestors of ancient clans and a few independent Saint Kings. Through them, Jian Chen's infamy and terror would definitely spread through all the ancient clans, making them all fear him.

This battle had basically consolidated his power and status on the Tian Yuan Continent.

Jian Chen returned from outer space and directly arrived in the air above Flame City. He glanced coldly past the people of the Extinguishing Alliance as Rui Jin and Hei Yu hovered beside him.

The Extinguishing Alliance was already in a state of high alert as over twenty Saint Rulers floated in the air as they gazed toward outer space. Their expressions immediately warped when they saw Jian Chen return unharmed.

Chapter 982: Retaking Flame City

“Y-y- you’re actually still alive!”

“How is it possible for you to return alive after the ten protector clans have personally descended!?”

“You’re still not dead. How is that possible!?”

The expressions of the Saint Rulers of the Extinguishing Alliance all changed as they shouted out. They were dumbstruck by the fact that Jian Chen had returned safely, overwhelmed with disbelief.

Although they did not personally witness the battle that had occurred far away, they still knew about the arrival of the protector clans. According to their understanding, Jian Chen should have died at the hands of the protector clans long ago. This made it completely impossible for him to return. They naturally thought that the protector clans had taken the Winged Tiger God from Jian Chen in outer space. They imagined that a great battle had erupted as they fought for the Winged Tiger God. They did not anticipate Jian Chen’s safe return.

Jian Chen could not help but sneer as he saw the shocked Saint Rulers, “Looks like you all would’ve loved it if I had died but I’m sorry to disappoint. Not only did I survive, I have returned fine. Even the ten protector clans can’t do anything to me.”

“Impossible, this is impossible. The ten protector clans are the most powerful organizations on the Tian Yuan Continent. They’re

extremely tough, so how can they be helpless against you. Jian Chen, did you form some agreement with them?” growled a Saint Ruler. His expression was extremely ugly.

Jian Chen sneered, “You still don’t have the right to know about that. Now, it’s time for you to pay the price for the idiotic actions you did all those years ago. My Flame Mercenaries will be retaking Flame City today and no one can stop me. Even the protector clans can’t stop me,” Jian Chen spoke extremely loudly, causing his voice to echo through the surroundings. Everyone in the city heard his words clearly. Immediately, the Extinguishing Alliance began to panic. Fear overwhelmed many people. The people who were originally part of the Flame Mercenaries and had defected to the Extinguishing Alliance began to regret. If they knew that captain Jian Chen would return so powerfully, they would not have changed sides in the very beginning.

The Saint Rulers of the alliance all became sheet-white. They had lost all heart to resist after witnessing Jian Chen’s strength.

Even the Fifth Heavenly Layer Saint King, Bi Yifei, had been slain by him easily. With this being the case, how could they resist with their current strength? Although they possessed a supreme advantage in numbers, the difference between Saint Ruler and Saint King was as large as a chasm.

“Jian Chen, we will immediately lead our people out of Flame City and swear that we will never become enemies of the Flame Mercenaries again,” said a Saint Ruler. He had also begun to refer to Extinguished City as Flame City again.

“You devastated my Flame Mercenaries all those years ago, and occupied Flame City for so much time. Do you really think this matter will be dismissed so easily? You wish,” sneered Jian Chen as powerful killing intent flickered in his eyes.

The Saint Rulers paled even further when they sensed Jian Chen’s dense killing intent. One of them explained hurriedly, “Jian Chen, listen to us. The things we did all those years ago were spurred on by Bi Jian. We had no other choice either. The prime culprit is Bi Jian and not us.”

Jian Chen’s eyes turned cold. “Do you really think I’m easy to fool?” As he said that, his Emperor Armament appeared in his hand. It radiated with a terrifying energy, causing the surrounding space to warp and almost shatter.

The Saint Rulers of the alliance began to panic even more. One of them said, “Jian Chen, just what do you want to do before you are willing to let us go?”

“You’re deluding yourselves if you think I’d let you go. I will be claiming all your lives today,” Jian Chen said mercilessly.

All the Saint Rulers shivered when they heard this. Despair gradually flooded their hearts. One of them was still unwilling to give up and spoke out, “Jian Chen, if you let me go, I am willing to swear my loyalty to you and become a part of the Flame Mercenaries. I am willing to work for you.”

Jian Chen’s expression remained as cold as before. The killing

intent in his eyes did not decrease at all as he sneered, “So many of my brothers from my Flame Mercenaries died in your hands all those years ago. If you become part of the Flame Mercenaries, not only will I fail to make up to those dead brothers, I’ll fail to make up to the people you chased out of Flame City. Only by killing you all can I relieve myself of this rage.”

The Saint Rulers became completely despaired with that. All of them understood that they would probably face their deaths today now that Jian Chen had put things this way.

“Pay for what your previous actions!” Jian Chen bellowed. He no longer bothered with them, charging toward the Saint Rulers threateningly as he wielded his Emperor Armament.

Jian Chen was as strong as a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint King with the Emperor Armament. His strength was not something twenty-odd Saint Rulers could fend off. As he stabbed out, he killed off three Saint Rulers in a single stroke, directly impaling their foreheads and wiping out their souls.

The other Saint Rulers scattered with this ugly development. They fled in all directions as fast as they could in an attempt to keep Jian Chen busy and make more time for escape. Although they knew the chances were almost non-existent, this was the only way they could survive. Even if they knew they were going to die, they still needed to try.

Jian Chen’s face sank. Although he had the strength of a Saint King, his comprehension of the mysteries of the world was just too limited. It was only at the level of a Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint

Ruler, so he was unable to rip open a Space Gate and travel a large distance. It would be very difficult for him to catch the Saint Rulers after they had fled into the distance.

Jian Chen looked back at Rui Jin and Hei Yu and asked, “Senior Rui Jin, please seal this region and stop them from running away.” Jian Chen needed to kill the Saint Rulers of the Extinguishing Alliance. Only with that could he avenge the Flame Mercenaries. He was unwilling to leave any one of them alive.

Rui Jin nodded and pointed at the empty air. The energy of the world immediately began to ripple violently, forming a transparent barrier that encased a radius of five kilometers. It trapped all the Saint Rulers inside.

The Saint Rulers immediately became frantic as they saw how they were trapped inside. They attacked the barrier as if their lives depended on it, wishing to break through and escape. However, a barrier personally cast by Rui Jin was nowhere close to something that they could break. It did not even tremble when their most powerful attacks struck it.

“I’d like to see where you run off to now!” Killing intent surged from Jian Chen. He collected their lives one by one with the Emperor Armament. Although some of them resisted, it was pathetic and of no use whatsoever.

In the blink of an eye, the Saint Rulers were all killed by Jian Chen. The barrier around the area disappeared and the Saint Ruler corpses all fell out of the air and landed on the ground heavily.

Many people from the alliance witnessed this scene where over twenty Saint Rulers were slain. They all became stunned and despair flooded their gazes.

Jian Chen's fury finally let up slightly after killing the Saint Rulers. He looked toward the millions of people in the city. After a slight deliberation, he did not attack them in the end.

With the growth of his strength, Jian Chen's outlook and mental state had also improved. With his current status, he had no need to be petty with the ant-like people before him. There were several million people in the city; if he killed all of them, he would have committed a massacre and suffer the punishment of Celestial Decay.

Existences at Saint Ruler and beyond could not kill ordinary people casually. It was fine if they only killed a few, but if they took the lives of too many, they would suffer Celestial Decay.

The existence of Celestial Decay restrained Saint Rulers and beyond, protecting weaker groups. However, the slaughter of Saint Rulers and anything greater could not incite Celestial Decay.

"People of the Extinguishing Alliance, leave the city immediately if you want to live," called out Jian Chen from the air.

The flames of hope immediately reignited among the despaired eyes of the people when they heard this declaration. They were overwhelmed with emotion; without any hesitation, they tidied

their belongings and dragged their families out of Flame City.

Two figures descended from the sky. They were the grand elder of Mercenary City, Tian Jian, and Houston. The two of them watched on with smiles as the people of the Extinguishing Alliance left the city.

“Looks like we were just over-worrying. Jian Chen has not become blinded by hatred and did not start a massacre in the city,” Houston said in relief.

“Sigh, Jian Chen is still too young after all. Possessing such great strength at such a young age, he’ll take the wrong path as soon as he loses control. That will become a misfortune of the continent. But looks like we were indeed over-worrying with everything that has happened so far. Jian Chen may be young and may get involved with conflicts as he does things, but he should be fine on the whole,” sighed Tian Jian.

“His strength has grown to an unbelievable level in just a few short years. He’s also obtained an Emperor Armament and a divine hall. He must have been involved in a lot of bloodshed in those years. Once he deals with his matters, I’ll get him to settle down in Longevity Valley for ten years and get him to properly calm down. It’ll be helpful to him,” said Houston.

Another few people descended from the sky. The great elders of the protector Changyang clan had arrived as a group, floating nearby as they watched Flame City quietly.

“Sigh, he still wants to take back the city and develop his own organization. Is this supposed to be a good thing?” Changyang Zu Xiao sighed deeply. He was filled with helplessness.

The protector Changyang clan could no longer control Jian Chen. Since Jian Chen wanted to take back Flame City and break the rules between the protector clans, all they could do was stand to one side obediently. They did not dare to get in the way.

Changyang Qing Yun stared at Jian Chen from afar as light flickered in his eyes. “He is a member of our Changyang clan no matter what. This is an unchangeable fact.”

Chapter 983: Returning to the Changyang Clan

Jian Chen naturally discovered Houston, Tian Jian, and the great elders of the Changyang clan. He dismissed his thoughts and glanced toward the people from the Changyang clan, before casually looking toward Tian Jian and Houston. He immediately flew up to them and bowed courteously toward Tian Jian and Houston, “I greet senior Tian Jian and uncle Xiu!”

Jian Chen was an awe-inspiring expert now, but he still retained some respect from the bottom of his heart toward Tian Jian and Houston. This respect did not vary with his increase in strength.

Tian Jian looked at Jian Chen with a mix of emotions and sighed gently. “Thinking back to when I first met you, it was during the time the last Gathering of Mercenaries was held. You were still a small Earth Saint Master, yet your strength has reached an unimaginable level in just a few dozen years. It really is unbelievable.” Tian Jian became emotional as melancholy filled his face. He seemed to be thinking back to when he first saw Jian Chen.

Jian Chen immediately became absent-minded when he heard this, as if he too was thinking back to everything that had happened then.

Houston looked at Jian Chen happily and said with his old voice, “Jian Chen, you really haven’t made me disappointed.” It was just a mere sentence, but it conveyed Houston’s happiness and approval toward Jian Chen.

Jian Chen conversed with Houston some more, before Tian Jian spoke out, “Jian Chen, the great elders of the protector Changyang clan are right on the other side. They’re still members of the extended Changyang family, so you should still go meet them.”

Jian Chen turned around and stared at the great elders when he heard that. The light in his eyes flickered uneasily, but he did not go over in the end after some hesitation.

“Jian Chen, you’ve only just returned from the sea realm, so there are quite a few things waiting for you. Go do what you need to do. After you’re done, come to Longevity Valley. I have some things I want to ask you,” said uncle Xiu. He was filled with suspicion toward Jian Chen’s divine hall, but chose not to mention the matter at this very moment.

“Yes, uncle Xiu!” Jian Chen replied.

Afterward, Houston left through a space gate, returning to Longevity Valley with a hoe on his shoulder to continue his ploughing.

“Jian Chen, Ming Dong and Tie Ta are cultivating in my Mercenary City. Tie Ta’s identity is rather sensitive, so come visit Mercenary City when you have the time,” said Tian Jian.

Jian Chen could not help but think of his parent’s bodies that he had left at Mercenary City as soon as he heard the city’s name mentioned. His iron heart immediately began to ache slightly.

“Senior Tian Jian, I will head over immediately to Mercenary City after I deal with the matters at hand,” Jian Chen declared.

Originally, the first thing he wanted to do as soon as he returned to the continent was revive his parents. However, he had left for so long and things had happened to the Flame Mercenaries. This made him miss Bi Lian and the others very much, so he wanted to go back and see them.

Tian Jian stared deeply into Jian Chen’s eyes before leaving as well. He returned to Mercenary City.

The only ones that floated in the air now were Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Jian Chen, as well the great elders of the Changyang clan.

The great elders all cast mixed gazes toward Jian Chen from afar. They originally wanted to see Jian Chen, but then they thought about what they had said and the choices they made when Jian Chen faced up against the other protector clans. These thoughts shut them up at the same time.

Back then, they were indeed afraid of standing with Jian Chen and helping him resist the other protector clans, but they were filled with regret now. If they had known that Jian Chen had the help of Rui Jin and Hei Yu, two experts who could fight Saint Emperors, they would have had no need to fear the other protector clans.

Jian Chen arrived before Rui Jin and Hei Yu, thanking them one

more time. Afterward, he said, “Senior Rui Jin, can you create a Space Gate that directly leads to the Gesun Kingdom?”

Rui Jin naturally would not have agreed before because of his status as a dragon king, but it was different now. He agreed without any hesitation, personally ripping open a region of space to form a Space Gate.

Jian Chen left through the Space Gate and directly arrived outside Lore City, while Rui Jin and Hei Yu also followed along. They tailed Jian Chen into the city.

The great elders watched Jian Chen leave but none of them said anything. They all knew that Jian Chen did not want to admit himself as a member of the protector Changyang clan.

A long while later, Changyang Zu Xiao sighed deeply and said, “Kicking out Changyang Zu Yunkong all those years ago was a wrong decision. By the look of things, we seemed to have made a wrong decision yet again just now.”

The great elders all stood silently. Changyang Qing Yun only spoke out after a while, “Let’s go to the Changyang clan of Lore City!”

Jian Chen’s return to the clan resulted in utter joy throughout the entire place. All the elderly and important members came out to welcome him. To no surprise, the people who lead them was Changyang Zu Yeyun and Changyang Zu Yunkong. Changyang Zu Yeyun was deeply grateful toward Jian Chen, so as soon as she met

him, she did not try acting superior due to her seniority at all. She grabbed his hands enthusiastically, constantly thanking him. She understood that if it were not for Jian Chen, she probably would not have been able to see her son ever again.

Jian Chen learned the woman's identity from Changyang Zu Yunkong. She was actually his great grandfather's mother. He was immediately shocked and bowed toward the woman. Jian Chen did not have any good impressions of the protector clan, but she was still the mother of his great grandfather.

“My great grandson has finally returned. The most outstanding member of my Bi family has finally returned safely,” Bi Hai smiled from afar as he watched on. Tears of joy actually ran down his face.

Jian Chen's first aunt Ling Long and his second aunt Yu Fengyan also watched on with smiles. They had already began viewing Jian Chen as their own son long ago. Only the third aunt, Bai Yushuang, had mixed emotions as thick envy flooded her eyes. When she saw Jian Chen, she could not help but think of her own son. Jian Chen was now an expert who stood on the apex of the continent and had done great deeds on the continent. Meanwhile, her own son always seemed to be running about without any strength or success. He was now a person in his thirties, yet he had just become a Great Saint Master. He had not even reached Earth Saint Master yet.

Jian Chen conversed with all the people of the clan for a little, before calling You Yue, Bi Lian, and all the members of the upper echelon from the Flame Mercenaries into his temporary residence.

After the recent years of development, there were quite a few high-ranking and loyal members. There were more than forty people present, excluding You Yue and Bi Lian. Ever since Flame City had been taken, these people lead a small group of their mercenaries, traveling a hundred thousand kilometers by foot and horse to arrive at Lore City. Then, they finally settled down in the clan.

Jian Chen secretly nodded when he saw all the high-ranking members. He said, "Flame City has been retaken from the Extinguishing Alliance. I wonder how the situation of the Flame Mercenaries are right now."

The people present immediately became joyful when they heard that Flame City was back in their possession. You Yue said, "Jian Chen, after the recent years of development, our mercenaries have reached into the hundred thousands in terms of numbers. Many Heaven Saint Masters joined us and our strength increased every day. However, ever since the battle with the Extinguishing Alliance, our group has basically collapsed. People left and dispersed. There are only several tens of thousands of people that are hell-bent on following us."

"Several tens of thousand." Jian Chen furrowed his brows. The number was much lower than he had anticipated. It seemed like the Extinguishing Alliance had indeed caused unbelievable damage to the Flame Mercenaries.

Jian Chen stood up from his seat and said, "Since there are still this many people who are loyal and are hell-bent on being a part of the Flame Mercenaries, raise them as elites. Also, lead the remaining members of the Flame Mercenaries back to Flame City

tomorrow. We will be reoccupying Flame City and reviving the Flame Mercenaries.”

Just as Jian Chen was discussing the plans for development with them, the great elders from the protector Changyang clan arrived. They immediately called Changyang Zu Yunkong into a room all by himself, discussing some secret things with him. The entire room was enveloped in a powerful barrier, so no one knew what was happening inside.

Jian Chen naturally sensed their arrival, so he could not help but pause the discussion about the Flame Mercenaries. His eyes began to flicker as he became suspicious.

The great elders did not talk for very long with Changyang Zu Yunkong before they emerged from the room. They did not stay, immediately ripping open a Space Gate and returning to the protector clan. Only Changyang Zu Yunxiao stayed behind, his faced filled with helplessness.

Jian Chen discussed with the upper echelon for two whole hours before finally handing over the matters for the future developments of the mercenaries. Then, he exited the room.

Outside, Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yeyun had waited for a very long time. As they watched Jian Chen walk out, their gazes became mixed with emotions.

Jian Chen no longer looked toward Changyang Zu Yunxiao as coldly as before. He had learned exactly what had happened all

those years ago when the Extinguishing Alliance took Flame City from You Yue and Bi Lian. He knew that it was all because of Changyang Zu Yunxiao that they could arrive back at Lore City safely. If it were not for him, they probably would not have been able to get past Bi Jian.

“Jian Chen, we want to talk about some matters with you in private,” Changyang Zu Yunxiao said softly.

“Is it about my identity? If that’s the case, there’s no need,” replied Jian Chen.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao sighed gently and continued, “Jian Chen, you’ve guessed half of it. This matter doesn’t just affect your identity, it affects your great grandfather as well. It affect his future.”

Chapter 984: Tip of the Iceberg

Jian Chen's gaze immediately froze when he heard that it would relate to his great grandfather Changyang Zu Yunkong's future. He could disregard the protector clan, but in no way could he just ignore his great grandfather. Only Jian Chen understood just how much agony his great grandfather had suffered in the past years. He had essentially lived a life where he would much rather be dead back on Three Saint Island.

Jian Chen followed the couple into a room and Changyang Zu Yunxiao personally cast down a barrier.

Jian Chen's heart immediately shivered when he saw how cautious Changyang Zu Yunxiao was acting. He now understood that what they were about to do was going to be quite significant.

With the barrier set down, Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yeyun crossed their legs and sat down before Jian Chen. The two of them looked at Jian Chen with extremely mixed gazes. This was the first time they had ever needed to treat a junior as an equal despite their statuses.

Jian Chen sat down on the cold floor as well and looked at the couple calmly. He did not try to initiate the conversation.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao could only break the silence himself given that Jian Chen was unwilling. He coughed twice and said, "Is your name Jian Chen, or is it Changyang Xiangtian?"

“Great grandfather, you should call me Jian Chen. I like that name very much, and I’ve used it for so long already. I don’t want to change it back,” Jian Chen said with no further consideration. Changyang Zu Yunxiao was Changyang Zu Yunkong’s father, so he was Jian Chen’s senior by countless generations. As they were all his senior, Jian Chen just referred to them as great grandfather or great grandmother.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao sucked in a deep breath and said helplessly, “Alright, then I’ll call you Jian Chen.” He paused slightly there, before continuing, “Jian Chen, the reason why I’ve asked to talk to you this time is actually in regards to your great grandfather Changyang Zu Yunkong. You should know about the seal in his head, right?”

Jian Chen nodded his head but said nothing. He waited for Changyang Zu Yunxiao to continue.

A sliver of pain appeared on Changyang Zu Yunxiao’s face as he said, “Back then, Yunkong was expelled from our clan as he had committed a grave mistake, and a seal was implanted into his head, preventing him from reaching Saint Ruler for the rest of his life as a punishment. Originally, it would have been impossible for Yunkong to return to our clan again, but this changed ten years ago. Due to some reasons, the great elders of our clan removed Yunkong’s punishment together and allowed him back into the clan. He has become a member of the protector clan again.”

Changyang Zu Yunxiao paused once again as he stared deeply into Jian Chen’s eyes. He said, “Jian Chen, do you know why the

great elders were willing to remove Yunkong's punishment and let him back into the clan?"

Jian Chen replied after coming to a realization, "If I've guessed correctly, it's related to the fact that the Winged Tiger God was with me. If I became a member of the protector clan, the Winged Tiger God would also belong to the Changyang clan."

"Correct, it was indeed because of you. Your existence brought hope to Yunkong's situation," said Changyang Zu Yunxiao. He purposefully avoided the matter of the Winged Tiger God.

"But the seal remains in Yunkong's head even though clan the has reaccepted him. Yunkong may be a Saint Ruler now, but his strength can no longer increase due to the seal. Jian Chen, you're still Yunkong's descendent in the end. Do you really want to watch your great grandfather stagnate at the First Heavenly Layer for the rest of his life? I hope you can help your great grandfather and get the seal in his head removed." Changyang Zu Yunxiao's voice made it seem like he was pleading. Even though Jian Chen was a member of a younger generation, Yunxiao could not forcibly order him to do anything.

"What do you need me to do? What are the conditions the protector clans are asking for to remove great grandfather's seal?" Jian Chen asked. Jian Chen already had some understanding toward the seal in Changyang Zu Yunkong's head. It was cast down by several Saint Kings of the protector clan through a secret technique. Not only was it extremely powerful, it was extremely profound as well, such that even the artifact spirit could do nothing about it.

Saint Emperors could forcefully break through it, but that would definitely harm Changyang Zu Yunxiao. It would probably lead to his death if it was forcefully removed. The only way to undo it without injuring anyone was to use the matching secret technique.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao said, “The other great elders of the protector clan have spoken. They said that if you want the seal removed, Yunkong must do something great for the clan to make up for what he did all those years ago. And this thing would be having you return to the protector clan.”

Jian Chen’s face sank slightly and a cold smile formed on his lips. He said, “So that’s really the case. I thought that the protector clans would do something like this. Probably getting me to return is just a cover. Their true intentions should be taking the Winged Tiger God.”

“Jian Chen, I know you have a bad impression of the protector clans, but with your current strength, we no longer have the right to make you do anything you don’t want to do. The great elders have formed an agreement over this. We can give up on the Winged Tiger God, as well as assist you in holding off the other protector clans, but only given that you are a member of the protector clan,” said Changyang Zu Yunxiao.

“I can already hold off the other protector clans by myself. I don’t need the protector clan’s help,” said Jian Chen.

“Sigh, Jian Chen, you think of the protector clans too simply. I

know you have a divine hall protecting you, and that anything below a Saint Emperor can't injure you. However, your divine hall is not impossible to crush before the protector clans. If it weren't for the obstruction of the grand elder of Mercenary City in the battle today, your divine hall probably would've been smashed to pieces by the Yiyuan sect already," said Changyang Zu Yunxiao.

Jian Chen began to recollect as he heard that. He could not help but think back to when the great elders of the Yiyuan sect mentioned the Emperor Armament. However, before he could ask about it, Changyang Zu Yunxiao had already begun to explain.

"Every clan of the ten protector clans has a single Emperor Armament. These Emperor Armaments have an extremely lengthy history. They have existed since the ten clans were established, all the way until now."

"These Emperor Armaments exceed anything that you can imagine in strength, because they were forged together by several dozen or even over a hundred Saint Emperors. It is one of the two supreme treasures of every protector clan."

"We, the protector clans, have an extremely lengthy history on the Tian Yuan Continent. There always used to be a Saint Emperor appearing in virtually every generation. In our most glorious times, the Changyang clan had a total of eight Saint Emperors at the same time. We possessed supreme power. However, after some changes to the world due to some unknown reasons, it became harder and harder to break through for everyone. Not only was the Tian Yuan Continent affected, even the Beast God Continent and the Wasteland Continent inhabited by the Hundred Races were

affected. In the end, Saint Emperors finally stopped appearing in the ten protector clans.

“In the past, we once had most of our Saint Emperors pour all their strength, as well as their vital essences, into the Emperor Armament when they reached the end of their life. This allowed the Emperor Armament to constantly power up. Our Emperor Armaments are only able to be so unbelievably powerful today due to all those Saint Emperors. They’re far greater than the Emperor Armament you currently possess, so your divine hall can’t resist any one of the Emperor Armaments from the protector clans.

Jian Chen became slightly grim and said, “Looks like the Yiyuan sect wanted to use their Emperor Armament to deal with me.”

“Correct. The Yiyuan sect indeed wanted to use their Emperor Armament, but the grand elder of Mercenary City stopped them. If it weren’t for that, your divine hall would be in pieces by now,” said Changyang Zu Yunxiao. “However, the Emperor Armaments are just too powerful. Even Saint Kings at Great Perfection will struggle to control it, so it can only be used when several Saint Kings work together, and they will all suffer a backlash. Even Saint Kings at Great Perfection will be injured from the backlash after using it, so the Emperor Armament has already become a forbidden weapon of our protector clans. It can only be used to repel foreign invasions or when the protector clans face life-threatening dangers. It’s their last line of defense.”

Jian Chen immediately fell silent after hearing that. Only now did he learn that the protector clans were not as simple as he had imagined. They actually possessed such terrifying weapons. If it

were not for Tian Jian earlier today, his Octoterra Divine Hall would have definitely been crushed even though he might not die.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao continued as he looked at the silent Jian Chen, “Jian Chen, you should return to the Changyang clan. Once you embrace your ancestry, you will be a part of the protector clan. The Changyang clan will definitely help out if the people of the Yiyuan sect still want to use the Emperor Armament against you. We can find ways to persuade the other protector clans in regards to the Flame Mercenaries.” Changyang Zu Yunxiao’s voice was hopeful.

Changyang Zu Yeyun also began to speak, “Jian Chen, great grandmother knows that you dislike our Changyang clan, but we hope you can consider things for Kong’er. It’ll all be depending on you if Kong’er’s seal can be removed and if he can climb to higher levels of cultivation in the future,” Changyang Zu Yeyun spoke with a pleading tone.

Jian Chen could not help but hesitate. This matter directly affected his great grandfather Changyang Zu Yunkong, so he needed to think over it seriously. No other person could remove Changyang Zu Yunkong’s seal other than the protector Changyang clan after all. This included Saint Emperors.

Jian Chen nodded in agreement in the end after much hesitation. He said, “Alright, I’ll return to the protector clan with you so that my great grandfather can cultivate again. However, now’s not the time. Let me deal with my matters first.”

Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yeyun immediately

became delighted when they heard that. They became emotional.

Jian Chen and the couple left the room after the discussion. They saw Rui Jin and Hei Yu waiting outside as soon as they exited.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao's gaze underwent some changes as soon as he saw the two of them. It was replaced by some respect—respect toward the powerful. The two people before him were so powerful that even the path lord of carnal desires and the tiger emperor Lankyros could not defeat them. Even the protector clans could not afford to offend them.

“Senior Rui Jin and Hei Yu, is there something you need?” Jian Chen asked.

“Nah, it's nothing. We're just standing around so that the people from the protector clans can't oppress you,” smiled Hei Yu. He was extremely friendly toward Jian Chen.

Chapter 985: Yi Yangzi's Ambush

Changyang Zu Yunxiao naturally became delighted when he saw how Hei Yu treated Jian Chen. As his own great grandson and a descendant of the Changyang clan, he obviously hoped that Jian Chen could be as close to Rui Jin and Hei Yu as possible. That way, the Changyang clan could benefit from them as well.

Jian Chen's heart warmed from Hei Yu's concern. He said to the two of them, "Seniors, my Changyang clan eagerly welcomes the two of you as guests. If you like it here, why don't you stay for a few more days?"

Hei Yu looked at Rui Jin after hearing that, before smiling at Jian Chen once again. "We really did consider that. We just don't happen to have a place to stay on the Tian Yuan Continent, so we might as well just settle down in your Changyang clan. We do hope that it won't be troublesome for you."

Jian Chen was completely delighted with that. The Changyang clan could be considered as impregnable now that the two of them had settled down here. Even if the protector clans came personally, they would fail to gain any advantages over the clan.

"Don't say that! It is my honor that the two seniors are willing to settle down in my humble abode. I can't welcome you two enough, so how can it be troublesome?" Jian Chen said hurriedly. He was extremely happy inside.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao also became delighted. He quickly added

some polite words. Only Changyang Zu Yeyun who did not know Rui Jin and Hei Yu's strength remained doubtful. However, she could guess that the two of them were definitely not simple seeing how her husband treated the pair.

Afterward, Jian Chen quickly ordered the mercenaries in the clan to organize the best courtyard for Rui Jin and Hei Yu, allowing the two of them to settle down.

However, Jian Chen still felt suspicious throughout this entire time. He was not very close with Rui Jin or Hei Yu; he could barely even describe them as chance acquaintances, so he had no idea why Rui Jin and Hei Yu would continue to help him regardless of the consequences. Not only did they become enemies of the path lord of carnal desires and the Saint Emperors of the Beast God Continent, the two of them actually waited outside when he spoke with Changyang Zu Yunxiao just earlier. Jian Chen was very surprised by this.

Even when ignoring their great strength, just Rui Jin's status as a dragon king made him countless times more prestigious than Jian Chen.

"Is it because of the Winged Tiger God that Rui Jin and Hei Yu are extremely willing to help me and even protect me? Do they only want to protect the Winged Tiger God?" Jian Chen thought. He felt like this was more and more possible, so he relieved himself of his doubt afterward.

In the morning of the next day, many unfamiliar guests had gathered outside the Changyang clan of Lore City. They all walked

to the main entrance of the clan with invaluable gifts, before politely communicating with the guards outside. They were only let in after a very long time.

They all came from ancient clans. A Saint King ancestor would personally lead the important people of their clan to visit the small Changyang clan in Lore City. Over a dozen clans came, and the numbers kept increasing. Each clan would bring at least a dozen people.

Their arrival immediately made the Changyang clan lively, alarming all the members of the upper echelon of the Changyang clan. Changyang Zu Yunkong personally received them, and even Jian Chen made an appearance.

The people of the ancient clans all possessed great statuses, but they behaved extremely amiably when they came to the Changyang clan today. They did not act arrogantly at all, and some people even seemed a little unnatural.

The ancestors of the ancient clans all gathered around Jian Chen when he appeared. They constantly congratulated him as they smiled kindly, trying to curry some favor.

The ancestors had all personally witnessed Jian Chen fending off the protector clans and knew that this unprecedented genius of the continent had matured at an unstoppable rate. He had already become an existence that they needed to be wary of despite being less than fifty years old. He was so powerful that even the protector clans could do nothing to him.

All the ancestors of ancient clans were extremely sharp. They could see Jian Chen's terrifying talent and immeasurable achievements, and they all expected Jian Chen to become something no less than a Saint Emperor. As a result, they all came to visit him at this moment, to form a friendly tie with him before he had reached Saint Emperor.

"Brother Jian Chen, I never thought you would be an awe-inspiring expert now, making our clan's ancestor personally pay a visit. You really do make me envious." At this moment, an enchanting voice rang out from nearby. Jian Chen heard it clearly.

Turning toward the sound, Jian Chen saw a lady in a pink dress standing with an elderly couple. She stared unblinkingly at Jian Chen with mixed emotions.

Jian Chen could not help but think back to when he took part in the Gathering of Mercenaries at Mercenary City where he first saw the woman. He immediately became melancholy, but he did not show it. He smiled toward the lady, "Miss Tianmu Ling, I didn't know you had come as well."

This lady was Tianmu Ling from the ancient Tianmu clan. Ten years had passed in the blink of an eye, yet her appearance was no different from before. She did not seem old at all, and the only change was that she seemed much more mature than before.

"My my, brother Jian Chen. We haven't met in so many years yet you still recognize me. You sure make me so emotional," said

Tianmu Ling with a giggle. She smiled seductively, as beautiful as the blooming of flowers. She paid no attention to the weird gazes that the ancestors from the other ancient clans looked at her with.

Probably only Tianmu Ling would dare to speak so brazenly to Jian Chen out of all the people that had come today.

However, Tianmu Ling was nowhere near as calm as she seemed on the surface. Her heart had already begun to churn long ago. She was definitely not calm.

Back then, she was still someone who had the same level of cultivation as Jian Chen, also taking part in the Gathering of Mercenaries. She was part of the five experts. There was a slight difference between their strength, but it was nothing that could not be made up for. Yet now, Jian Chen had become a supreme expert, standing as an equal to the ancestor of her clan. Many Saint King ancestors from other ancient clans had also personally come to visit, treating him extremely politely and courteously. It was glorious for him.

On the other hand, she was still an Earth Saint Master. She had improved greatly throughout the years as well, but the difference between her and Jian Chen was now at a dumbfounding level. The difference could be analogized as the sky and the earth.

Tianmu Ling experienced extremely mixed emotions currently. She felt indescribably envious of Jian Chen's current achievements, but she also felt a sliver of admiration.

“Sigh, back then, he was on the same level as me, yet now he has become something that I can only look up to but never match,” Tianmu Ling sighed inside.

“Hahaha, I never thought my friend Jian Chen here would know my great granddaughter. It really is her honor,” the Saint King ancestor from the Tianmu clan immediately began to laugh from the bottom of his heart as he saw how close Tianmu Ling was with Jian Chen.

The next day, the guests from the ancient clans all left. Afterward, even more ancestors from hermit clans paid a visit with valuable gifts. Jian Chen allowed Changyang Zu Yunkong and Bi Hai to receive them, while he himself did not make an appearance. Instead, he left the clan all by himself and traveled toward Mercenary City.

At the same time, the remaining members of the Flame Mercenaries left Lore City under the lead of the high-ranking members, forming a huge group that they traveled toward Flame City.

Jian Chen left the Gesun Kingdom all by himself as he made his way toward Mercenary City. He was happy but also felt some mixed emotions. He was now a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master, so he could revive the dead. He could bring back his parents.

Jian Chen became uncontrollably excited when he thought about how his parents would be soon revived. He had waited for this day for far too long.

Something suddenly happened as Jian Chen was thinking about his parents. The space around him froze up in that instant, immobilizing him tightly.

Jian Chen was surprised by the sudden occurrence and the random thoughts in his head disappeared in that instant. He looked forward and produced a shocking glare.

A ruddy old man had appeared at some point in time in the direction of Jian Chen's sight. He floated fifty meters before Jian Chen, staring at him coldly.

"It's actually you, Yi Yangzi of the Yiyuan sect," called out Jian Chen. Killing intent and anger immediately began to skyrocket inside him, burning like a scorching flame.

"Jian Chen, my Yiyuan sect is a mighty protector clan. It is not something that you, a little brat, can insult. You even heavily injured the great elder Ling Yuanzi, reducing him to just his soul. My Yiyuan sect will be taking revenge for this no matter what. There has never been anyone in the past who has come out unharmed after offending my protector clan. This applies even if you have the Changyang clan supporting you," Yi Yangzi said coldly. Afterward, he pointed toward Jian Chen and spat out the words, "Secret Laws of Yuan-returnance, Index Finger of the Mountainous Five Fingers."

Invisible World Force began to condense in that instant as Yi Yangzi pointed out. A three-inch-long finger immediately shot

toward Jian Chen.

The finger exceeded the constraints of time and space, arriving before Jian Chen in the next moment. It traveled directly toward the center of Jian Chen's eyebrows.

Yi Yangzi clearly wanted to kill Jian Chen. His attack toward the center of Jian Chen's eyebrows was an attempt to wipe out his soul.

Chapter 986: Rui Jin's Assistance

Yi Yangzi was extremely powerful. He was the most powerful member of the Yiyuan sect, having reached the Great Perfection of Saint King long ago. The space personally frozen by him was extremely tough, trapping Jian Chen tightly in place.

Yi Yangzi's finger drew extremely close to Jian Chen. In this moment of life and death, Jian Chen roared out angrily and Chaotic Force trembled within his body. In the end, it flowed out like a flood, surrounding his body with black flames.

Immediately, an energy of destruction filled the surroundings, causing the clouds to churn. The terrifying energy ripples expanded in all directions, causing even the surrounding space to shake.

Crack! Crack!

Under Jian Chen's full-powered resistance, Yi Yangzi's frozen space immediately shattered, causing the space around him to tremble constantly.

However, since Yi Yangzi was brave enough to attack Jian Chen, he had naturally timed himself extremely accurately. He did not give Jian Chen any time to bring out the divine hall. Just as Jian Chen broke free, the finger from Yi Yangzi was already less than three inches from Jian Chen's forehead. It continued toward his soul with an incomparable speed.

Jian Chen's eyes suddenly narrowed. He was completely unprepared, making him fall into the jaws of danger. He had been thinking about his parents earlier and did not expect someone as honorable as a member of the protector Yiyuan sect would attack him while he was off-guard. Although he had the divine hall that could protect him, he had no time to bring it out this time.

In this moment of life and death, a golden streak of light shot out from the center of his eyebrows with a flash. It formed a fist-sized golden tower, blocking Jian Chen's forehead.

Boom!

Yi Yangzi's attack struck the golden tower viciously, immediately producing a deafening boom. It echoed in the surroundings, spreading far and wide while the residual energy swept out in all directions as a terrifying storm. The surrounding space constantly shook due to it.

Jian Chen's clothes were immediately reduced to shreds by the violent energy storm, revealing the golden silkmail. At the same time, he was knocked backward.

Jian Chen shot backward like a cannonball as Chaotic Force constantly circulated within his body. He pushed his Chaotic Body to the absolute limit in an attempt to resist the energy storm, while the golden tower remained floating before him. It was ready to block Yi Yangzi's attacks at any time.

Yi Yangzi stared at Jian Chen throughout the whole process. His

face could not help but sink as he watched the golden tower block his attack. He growled, “I didn’t think you’d have the saint artifact of the Radiant Saint Master Union protecting you as well other than the divine hall. I really have miscalculated.” He took a step out as soon as he finished speaking, crossing through the region of violent energy and arriving behind Jian Chen in an instant. He pointed toward the back of Jian Chen’s head this time.

Jian Chen’s presence had flooded the region long ago, so he clearly sensed Yi Yangzi’s movement. Under the control of his mind, the golden tower immediately moved to protect the back of his head. At the same time, he grabbed the Octoterra Divine Hall with his right hand.

“Jian Chen, you’re dead now.” Suddenly, Yi Yangzi’s sneer rang through Jian Chen’s ears. He had appeared silently to Jian Chen’s left, pointing toward his head in a flash. However, there was still a Yi Yangzi behind him.

Jian Chen’s face changed. He could feel the Yi Yangzi behind him, but the Yi Yangzi to his left of him was real as well. Two Yi Yangzis had suddenly appeared, shocking him greatly.

Jian Chen had still yet to completely expand the divine hall. He used the saint artifact to block the attack from the Yi Yangzi behind him, but he was powerless against the second Yi Yangzi’s attack. In this crucial moment, all he could do was turn his head as hard as he could in an attempt to dodge the life-threatening attack from the second Yi Yangzi.

Jian Chen failed to dodge the attack completely even after using

all he had. However, since he moved his head, Yi Yangzi's attack missed his soul and struck his face instead. It cut through his Chaotic Body easily.

Jian Chen's heart immediately shuddered coldly when he sensed Yi Yangzi's attack enter his body. The attack possessed great energy. If it erupted, it was enough to blow his head into pieces. At that time, he would be heavily injured even if he managed to survive.

Without any hesitation, Jian Chen basically threw his head backward, breaking away from Yi Yangzi's attack. Afterward, he backpedaled quickly and the Octoterra Divine Hall flew out of his hand at the same time. It quickly enlarged above his head.

The second Yi Yangzi slowly disappeared. The remaining Yi Yangzi looked at Jian Chen's injuries with regret. He thought, "It's a pity that my control over the clone isn't great, or that attack would've taken his life."

Jian Chen immediately tried to enter the divine hall as he paid no heed to his wound.

Yi Yangzi's eyes immediately turned cold as he sensed Jian Chen's intentions. He called out loudly, "Don't you dare enter the divine hall."

The distance between them was nothing to Yi Yangzi. He took a step out and immediately traveled several dozen meters, arriving in between Jian Chen and the divine hall. He swung downward

with a palm strike, wanting to prevent Jian Chen from entering the divine hall.

Jian Chen understood Yi Yangzi's strength, so he did not want to take him on forcefully at all. The saint artifact blocked the attack.

Although Jian Chen could hide inside the saint artifact, he would lose the ability to flee. This was because Yi Yangzi could take the artifact back to his protector clan and then use the clan's Emperor Armament to crack it open.

As a result, Jian Chen could only use the saint artifact to block things. He could not hide in it like the divine hall.

Yi Yangzi's palm strike was so powerful that Jian Chen was knocked far away along with the saint artifact. It widened his distance from the divine hall.

Jian Chen became extremely grim as he saw how he got further from the divine hall. With a thought, he quickly pulled it toward him.

“Jian Chen, with me present, I'd like to see how you enter the divine hall,” sneered Yi Yangzi. He stepped out and arrived before Jian Chen again, striking out with his palm. The great force knocked both Jian Chen and the saint artifact backward once more. He remained a certain distance from the divine hall in the end.

An extremely great killing intent appeared in the surroundings in that moment, making Yi Yangzi's expression change. Following this presence, a voice boomed out loudly, "I never thought that an esteemed great elder of a protector clan would ambush a junior here. Is this how the protector clans do things? I've finally witnessed it today."

As the voice boomed out, the space a hundred meters away began to ripple. Energy filled the empty space and a Space Gate opened with difficulty as it resisted the messy collisions of energy in the region. Two tremendous presences began to radiate from within it.

Yi Yangzi's expression changed drastically. He was extremely familiar with these two presences, as they belonged to the two experts who could fight even-handedly with the path lord of carnal desires and the tiger emperor. They were Rui Jin and Hei Yu.

Yi Yangzi was confident, but he did not believe that he was their opponent. Without any hesitations, he struck toward the forming Space Gate with a palm and shattered it.

"Do you think you can stop me from coming just because you destroyed my Space Gate?" An angry roar boomed from afar. The voice constantly grew louder and by the time it reached Jian Chen's location, it had become thunderous.

Rui Jin used a secret technique as he flew over from Lore City with incredible speed. From afar, a dazzling streak of golden light quickly approached the region, and a tremendous presence arrived with it.

Yi Yangzi became unprecedentedly stern as he watched Rui Jin rapidly draw closer. His eyes became filled with deep fear. He knew that he had to leave now or he would be stuck here.

Yi Yangzi looked at Jian Chen sternly and gnashed his teeth. “Jian Chen, I’ll let you off today and let you live for a few more days.” Yi Yangzi immediately ripped open a Space Gate after saying that. He wanted to leave.

Jian Chen drew his Emperor Armament from his Space Ring and chopped out toward the Space Gate with a sword Qi. He wanted to stop Yi Yangzi from fleeing.

Yi Yangzi smiled disdainfully. He gently extended a finger and a force shot out, shattering Jian Chen’s sword Qi. He said coldly, “You truly overestimate yourself by trying to stop me from leaving with just yourself.” With that, Yi Yangzi directly disappeared through the Space Gate.

Rui Jin arrived very quickly. He looked toward the bloody-faced Jian Chen and immediately became furious. He asked with concern, “Brother Jian Chen, are you fine?”

Jian Chen’s gaze was cold. He put away the Octoterra Divine Hall and the saint artifact. Then, he shook his head gently. “I’m fine. I thank senior for arriving in time and thus scaring away Yi Yangzi. Otherwise, there would’ve only been death for me today.”

Rui Jin looked in the direction that Yi Yangzi had fled and

growled, “The protector clans have gone too far. Even people of such status are trying to ambush you here. Let’s go, brother Jian Chen. Hei Yu and I’ll kill our ways into the protector clan with you and get you the justice you deserve,” Rui Jin said righteously. He was extremely angry, as if he would not be satisfied if he did not throw the protector clan into turmoil.

“Senior, I am extremely grateful for your help, but I will be personally taking revenge for this,” Jian Chen said with a dark face as blood continued to flow.

Afterward, Hei Yu hurried over as well. He stood angrily beside Rui Jin and also swore to take revenge for Jian Chen, to turn the Yiyuan sect into a mess. However, he was declined by Jian Chen tactfully.

This was because Jian Chen had already learned from Changyang Zu Yunxiao just what power the protector clans were hiding. Their Emperor Armaments possessed the power of Saint Emperors. Jian Chen did not want the two of them to take the risk even though they were powerful and had the origin energy armors.

Also, Rui Jin and Hei Yu had helped him many times already along the way. He did not want to always be indebted to them.

Chapter 987: Seeing Xiao Ling Again

“Brother Jian Chen, we’ll talk about revenge in the future then since you want to do it yourself. However, when the time comes, feel free to speak out if you need the two of us. We will help you with everything we have,” Hei Yu said seriously. He did not seem like he was joking at all.

“I thank seniors’ concern. However, when I become powerful enough to deal with the Yiyuan sect in the future, I might not need your help at all,” Jian Chen thanked with clasped hands. He was extremely grateful toward the two of them.

However, in Jian Chen’s heart, he credited Rui Jin and Hei Yu’s treatment of him to the white tiger.

Afterward, Rui Jin and Hei Yu decided to go with Jian Chen to Mercenary City in case the Yiyuan sect and other protector clans wanted to ambush Jian Chen again. Jian Chen used a sliver of the origin energy from the Radiant Saint Force to heal his wound, before leaving with Rui Jin and Hei Yu.

Although Mercenary City was extremely far away, the distance was nothing to Jian Chen as he had two true Saint Kings beside him. Hei Yu directly ripped open a Space Gate and traversed the distance, arriving outside the city.

Jian Chen saw the huge, familiar barrier around Mercenary City from afar. He could not help but think of Xiao Ling’s naive smile.

He had already learned just how terrifying and powerful Xiao Ling was from the sea goddess. Although Xiao Ling seemed like an eleven or twelve year old, she possessed strength that did not match up to her appearance at all. Her actual age was at a dumbfounding level, and she originated from the ancient times. Several hundreds of thousands or even millions of years had passed since them.

Jian Chen did not worry about his safety at all with the protection of Rui Jin and Hei Yu. As a result, he let out the white tiger who was suffocating inside before making his way toward Mercenary City with Rui Jin and Hei Yu.

The white tiger was unable to erase its presence like Rui Jin and Hei Yu. As soon as it appeared, the pressure from its bloodline as the Winged Tiger God naturally pervaded the surroundings, causing the magical beasts ridden by the mercenaries nearby to collapse onto the ground and tremble. They would not get up no matter how much the mercenaries urged them, confusing them all.

Mercenary City did not change at all despite so many years. It was exactly the same as when Jian Chen first came here. He could see groups of mercenaries in varying attires ride in and out of the city on magical beasts. The city was bustling.

The white tiger leaped around on Jian Chen's shoulders as the size of a cat, while it constantly blinked its small bright eyes. It constantly looked around, as if it found everything to be interesting.

“Big brother, it's big brother's smell. Xiao Ling can smell big

brother and master's smell. Big brother has finally come to see Xiao Ling. Xiao Ling misses big brother so much."

Xiao Ling's voice rang out as soon as Jian Chen entered the barrier of Mercenary City. Jian Chen heard it clearly, and Xiao Ling's figure slowly materialized before him. Her young face was filled with happiness.

Jian Chen could not help but smile from the bottom of his heart after seeing Xiao Ling's naive face. "Xiao Ling, big brother has come to see you."

Xiao Ling furrowed her brows and revealed a sliver of unhappiness. She pouted, "Bad big brother. Big brother broke his promise. Xiao Ling has waited for so long before you came to visit me. Hmph, Xiao Ling is very upset. Xiao Ling is angry."

Jian Chen smiled bitterly. "Xiao Ling, it's not that big brother didn't want to see you, but I was forced into hiding somewhere else from the continent by the protector clans and the Beast God Continent. I only returned recently. Xiao Ling, if I didn't do that, not only would it have been impossible for me to see you today, I would never be able to see you ever again."

Jian Chen did not notice Rui Jin and Hei Yu look toward him weirdly at all. He just devoted all his attention to Xiao Ling. Only Jian Chen could see her, while Rui Jin and Hei Yu could not sense her existence at all. To them, Jian Chen was talking to empty air and smiling idiotically at it. He stood there as he mumbled to himself, as if he had lost his mind.

Besides Rui Jin and Bei Yu, a few mercenaries and merchants passing by also noticed his 'strange' actions. They all cast odd gazes toward him.

Xiao Ling lowered her head in thought after hearing Jian Chen's explanations and finally stopped furrowing her brows. She smiled sweetly once again and said naively, "Okay then, if that's the case, Xiao Ling will forgive big brother then. But big brother has to come see Xiao Ling often in the future. If those bad people want to bully big brother, just come to where Xiao Ling is. Xiao Ling will protect big brother and chase the bad people away."

Jian Chen nodded very much. "Yeah, when big brother comes across bad people he cannot defeat, he'll be troubling Xiao Ling."

"Hehe, don't worry big brother. With Xiao Ling here, no one can bully you," said Xiao Ling as she smiled happily.

Hei Yu was finally at the bottom of his line as he watched Jian Chen constantly mumbling to himself. He touched Jian Chen and stared at him in doubt. "Brother Jian Chen, are you fine? Why are you talking to yourself? Who are you talking to?"

Jian Chen finally returned to his senses when Hei Yu said that. Only then did he suddenly realize that no one else could see Xiao Ling unless she wanted them to.

Jian Chen laughed dryly and said to Hei Yu, "Senior, I was talking with a friend just then. The identity of my friend is

relatively special. No one can see her unless she wants you to be able to see her.”

“Is that so? We actually can’t see your friend with our strength?” Hei Yu refused to believe that there were still people in the present day that could be so close to him yet not fear him. That person would just be too terrifying.

Even Rui Jin struggled to believe this. He immediately mumbled inside as he saw how serious Jian Chen was, “Is there really such a terrifying existence in the present world?”

Jian Chen paid no attention to Rui Jin and Hei Yu’s shock and continued to talk with Xiao Ling, “It’s not convenient to talk here, Xiao Ling. Let’s go somewhere else.”

“Yeah, okay!” Xiao Ling nodded obediently. She was just about to disappear, but then her eyes lit up. She appeared beside Jian Chen and sniffed him forcefully. She immediately cried out, “Big brother, master’s smell on you is getting heavier and heavier. Did you see master? Hmm? Why does it smell like master as well? And its scent is even heavier than big brother.” Xiao Ling was stunned as she pointed toward the white tiger. However, she came to an understanding very quickly and became even happier. She called out constantly, “Big brother, you must have seen master. You must have seen master. Right, right? Tell Xiao Ling quickly. Xiao Ling misses master so much. Where is master?” Toward the end, Xiao Ling’s voice almost became sobs and her eyes became misty.

“Xiao Ling, I indeed saw your master, but all he left behind was a sliver of his soul. Your master told me to inform you that once you

fulfill your mission, you can be free. Also, you need to work hard on the cultivation method your master passed on to you all those years ago,” said Jian Chen. Then, he glanced at the white tiger. He was doubtful as well. When he first saw Mo Tianyun, Mo Tianyun was only a soul. Also, Xiao Ling had said that the smell of Mo Tianyun on him had faded as time passed the last time he met her, yet how was it possible for it to still remain even after so much time since then? Also, Mo Tianyun’s smell was even heavier on the white tiger? Jian Chen could not understand this.

Back then, the white tiger had only been out of the artifact space for a short time, nowhere as long as the time he and the Heavenly Enchantress were in contact with Mo Tianyun. Even if it now smelled like Mo Tianyun, it should be impossible for the scent to be heavier than the smell on himself.

“Is it because the white tiger has always stayed in the artifact space that Mo Tianyun’s smell disappeared more slowly, while I had virtually spent the past years fighting and meeting people, thus making Mo Tianyun’s smell disappear faster?” Jian Chen thought.

“Sobs, where is master?” Xiao Ling said as she choked back her tears.

Jian Chen shook his head and replied, “Xiao Ling, I don’t know where your master is right now either. However, if your master isn’t dead, you should work hard on your cultivation. Once you fulfill your mission and become free, you can go looking for him.”

The flames of hope immediately ignited in Xiao Ling’s eyes. She

shook her head determinedly and said, “Big brother is right. Xiao Ling will work harder on cultivation in the future. Xiao Ling will definitely go find where master is after Xiao Ling completes her mission.”

Suddenly, Xiao Ling raised her head. She furrowed her brows and said, “Why did you come again? And this time, you’re standing in the air above Mercenary City. That’s disrespecting master. Move immediately, or I’ll teach you a fierce lesson. It’ll be even worse than last time.” As she said that, the barrier of Mercenary City suddenly began to shine with a blinding light. A half-meter-wide pillar of light shot from the top of the barrier toward the sky.

Boom!

The space shattered as the residual energy ran amok. It caused the entire sky to darken.

A middle-aged man appeared in the empty sky as he constantly shook. His clothes and hair were a mess. He was in a horrible shape.

“The human Saint Emperor!”

“The path lord of carnal desires!”

The expressions of Jian Chen, Rui Jin and Hei Yu all changed the moment the middle-aged man appeared.

The path lord of carnal desires looked down in shock as soon as he appeared. Afterward, he immediately ripped open a Space Gate and left without any hesitation. He thought, “Looks like my guesses were right. Jian Chen really does have a close relationship with the barrier spirit of Mercenary City.”

Chapter 988: Tie Ta's Identity

Jian Chen struggled to calm down even a long time after the path lord of carnal desires left. His heart was heavy, and even his face sank.

He had never thought that the path lord of carnal desires would follow him secretly to Mercenary City. If it were not for Xiao Ling, probably no one would have realized that the path lord of carnal desires was secretly surveilling him.

“Looks like the human Saint Emperor has yet to give up on the Winged Tiger God,” growled Rui Jin. He immediately understood what Jian Chen was worrying about when he saw Jian Chen’s grimness. As a result, he comforted him, “Brother Jian Chen, you don’t need to worry. As long as the two of us are here, the human Saint Emperor can’t harm you.”

“Brother Jian Chen, the two of us will block him for you if he dares to attack. Don’t worry,” Hei Yu also comforted.

Jian Chen’s heart warmed up when he heard the two of them speak and he responded politely.

Afterward, Rui Jin and Hei Yu looked toward the huge barrier in the sky. Seriousness and curiosity filled their faces. They truly struggled to believe just how powerful the protective barrier of Mercenary City was with what they had just witnessed. Just a mere strike was enough to scare away a Saint Emperor.

Xiao Ling then looked toward Rui Jin and Hei Yu after repelling the path lord of carnal desires. She said after some thought, “The two of you are magical beasts. Master said to not let magical beasts Class 7 and up in, but since you’re big brother’s friends, Xiao Ling won’t chase the two of you away. However, don’t make trouble in here.”

Although Rui Jin and Hei Yu could not see Xiao Ling, they had heard her voice clearly. Their expressions immediately changed and they began to look around. They tried to find the speaker, but they found nothing even after searching for quite some time.

“Who is it!? Who is the one talking!?” Hei Yu called out. He revealed a rather ugly expression, as it was just too terrifying that he could not find the speaker with his current strength.

Rui Jin also became stern. He became filled with caution toward the hidden person.

Jian Chen hurried to explain as he saw how nervous Rui Jin and Hei Yu were. The barrier spirit of Mercenary City was no secret to a few hermit clans, and almost everyone relatively experienced on the Tian Yuan Continent knew about it. Only Rui Jin and Hei Yu knew nothing about it as they had just come out from the artifact space and were limited in their understandings of the Tian Yuan Continent. It was fine if Jian Chen told them about Xiao Ling’s existence.

Although Rui Jin possessed some knowledge due to the inherited memories that had been passed on with each generation as a Golden Divine Dragon, Mercenary City still had not been founded

when the artifact space sucked in Ru Jin's ancestor. The barrier spirit had not been created yet, so he knew nothing in regards to this.

The two of them became shocked when they learned about the barrier spirit. They sighed in surprise and said, "I never thought that the barrier spirit of Mercenary City would have such a lengthy life. No wonder she can repel the path lord of carnal desires so easily."

Jian Chen did not reveal the fact that Xiao Ling was a spirit of the earth. He did not want too many people knowing about that.

At this moment, more than ten tremendous presences began to radiate from the center of the city. A group of experts hurried over with the grand elder Tian Jian at the forefront.

Xiao Ling created a huge disturbance throughout the entire city when she used the barrier's power to repel the path lord of carnal desires. As a result, it attracted all the high-ranking members of Mercenary City.

"Jian Chen, you've come." From afar, Tian Jian noticed Jian Chen and smiled gently. At the same time, he quickly glanced past Rui Jin and Hei Yu who stood beside him. Interest flashed through Tian Jian's eyes.

Tian Jian knew that Jian Chen was close with the barrier spirit so he asked Jian Chen, "Jian Chen, do you know what happened just then? Why did the power of the barrier suddenly surge?"

“It was the path lord of carnal desires...” Jian Chen explained what had happened Tian Jian’s face sank slightly right after he heard everything, and he said, “I never thought that the path lord would come to my Mercenary City. Looks like he didn’t suffer enough last time. But we have the protective barrier, so he can’t enter no matter what.”

Jian Chen and Tian Jian conversed some more, before being taken into the independent space by Tian Jian through a special technique. It was the space where the divine hall floated, while Rui Jin and Hei Yu were left behind in Mercenary City. He did not bring them along.

Arriving in this somewhat familiar space once again, the feeling it gave Jian Chen was worlds apart from the previous times. As his strength increased, he could feel how wondrous the technique used to carve out the space was with more and more clearly.

Jian Chen floated in the space as he faced the divine hall he had seen many times. He did not know the origins and strength of the divine hall before, but now, he could tell from a single glance that it was also one that was made by a Saint Emperor. He could even feel a great pressure from it vaguely as if it stood like a mountain. It was suffocating.

Tian Jian smiled and he explained when he saw Jian Chen staring unblinkingly at the divine hall, “This divine hall is one of the most valuable treasures of Mercenary City. It was personally created by the city lord all those years ago. It’s extremely tough, such that even Saint Emperors can’t break through it.”

“Once upon a time, there were some disagreements between my Mercenary City and the ten protector clans. All ten protector clans sent out all their people, resulting in over twenty Saint Emperors arriving. Only our Saint Emperor grand elder fought them, using the divine hall to suppress the ten protector clans. He had even succeeded in heavily injuring over a dozen Saint Emperors.”

“The divine hall before you is different from other divine halls. Other divine halls created by Saint Emperors have no other external uses other than being tough, while the divine hall before you was created personally by the city lord. Other than its supreme defense, it possesses an extremely great power in combat. It can deal with Saint Emperors.” At this point, Tian Jian’s face sank and he sighed gently. “Although the divine hall is extremely powerful, the requirements for controlling it is great as well. You need to be a Saint Emperor, while there are no longer any Saint Emperors in my Mercenary City. Otherwise, just it will be enough to repel the Beast God Continent’s invasion. The divine hall has already sat here collecting dust for thousands of years. I have tried to control it during that time, but all my attempts have resulted in failure. I succeeded once, but it was only the fusion with my soul and it separated very quickly again.”

Jian Chen also felt pity regarding this matter when he heard about it. It was basically torture for such a powerful divine hall to exist but with no one able to use it.

Tian Jian sighed deeply before dismissing his emotions. “Ming Dong and your friend Tie Ta is cultivating inside the divine hall. Jian Chen, please come with me.”

Jian Chen followed Tian Jian into the divine hall. They passed through countless palaces, before arriving in a large hall.

Jian Chen spotted Ming Dong and Tie Ta as soon as he entered the hall. They sat on the ground cultivating. He struggled to remain calm, becoming rather emotional.

Both Ming Dong and Tie Ta's strength had increased greatly after so many years of not seeing them. Just by their presences alone, Jian Chen could tell with a single glance that Ming Dong had reached the peak of Heaven Saint Master, while Tie Ta was even more powerful. He was at the Third Heavenly Layer of Saint Ruler.

However, Jian Chen felt puzzled when he saw Tie Ta's huge, burly body, his golden skin, and the imprint of an axe on his forehead. Tie Ta's changes were just too great in these years. Jian Chen had almost failed to recognize him.

“Ming Dong's talent is extremely good, and he has been working arduously on his cultivation in the past few years. That's why he could reach the peak of Heaven Saint Master at such a young age. However, the chasm between Heaven Saint Master and Saint Ruler is not that easy to cross. He has already stagnated at his current level of cultivation for a few years now.” Tian Jian's tone was positive even though he was nonchalant. Ming Dong had not become a Saint Ruler yet, but his current accomplishments could already be described with the word ‘earthshaking’.

Tian Jian then looked toward Tie Ta and his expression became

mixed. He said, “Though Jian Chen, your friend’s identity is quite complicated. If I hadn’t brought him to Mercenary City in time back then, he probably would have been taken away by the protector clans.”

Jian Chen’s expression changed slightly when he heard that. He could not help but think back to the matter of Tie Ta’s golden blood. “Senior Tian Jian, just what is Tie Ta’s identity? And what connection does he have with the protector clans?”

Tian Jian stared deeply at Tie Ta and said steadily, “He’s the war god of the Hundred Races, an existence similar to that Aergyns who surpassed Saint Emperor in the ancient times.”

“What! Tie Ta-he’s-he’s-he’s actually...” Jian Chen mind rumbled as if he had been struck by a bolt from the blue, completely stunned in that moment. Deep shock and disbelief flooded his entire mind.

The young man from the countryside who studied at Kargath Academy in Lore City back then actually possessed such a terrifying identity. He was actually the war god of the Hundred Races. This was something that even Jian Chen struggled to believe.

Tian Jian sighed deeply and continued, “It does sound extremely absurd. It’s very hard to convince people but that is the truth. Tie Ta is indeed the war god of the Hundred Races.”

“In the ancient times, a great war had once erupted between the

three of the four great races, with only the sea realm not taking part. The Hundred Races were chased out of the Beast God Continent and had once tried to invade our Tian Yuan Continent under the lead of Aergyns. We suffered defeat after defeat and many predecessors from the ten protector clans died in the hands of the war god. If it weren't for the strongest human who appeared out of nowhere in the most crucial moment, defeating the Hundred Races all by himself, Tian Yuan Continent would probably no longer belong to us humans. As a result, the protector clans have an extremely deep hatred for the war god of the Hundred Races. If they knew that Tie Ta was the war god, Tie Ta would definitely fail to escape death. They would avenge their predecessors on one hand, and remove a supreme expert of the Hundred Races and thus a future threat on the other hand. Our current continent no longer has an expert like Mo Tianyun. If the war god matures successfully and decides to lead the Hundred Races to invade the Tian Yuan Continent again, what power do we have to stop the war god?"

"Back then, when I discovered Tie Ta's identity, I definitely wouldn't have saved him if it wasn't for his relationship with you, because it would bring on an apocalypse for the Tian Yuan Continent if the matter wasn't handled correctly."

Chapter 989: The Three Soul-controlling Techniques

Jian Chen became silent after hearing Tian Jian's words. He felt extremely uneasy after Tie Ta's identity was confirmed.

At the same time, he understood very well that Tie Ta was still the war god of the Hundred Races even though he was innocent himself. The previous war god and the Hundred Races were enemies of the Tian Yuan Continent. After the effects from all those years ago, the ten protector clans would definitely not let him go.

Jian Chen felt a lingering fear after he learned the scale of matters Tie Ta's identity connected to. If Tian Jian had not made it in time and the protector clans arrived before he could take Tie Ta to Mercenary City, the outcome would have been unimaginable. Jian Chen might have ended up losing a friend forever.

Jian Chen did not care at all even though Tie Ta's true identity was not human. To him, it did not matter what Tie Ta's true identity was or what he became. He could always remain a good friend.

Suddenly, an idea flashed through Jian Chen's head. He thought back to the golden drop of blood he had come across on Dragon Island and thought, "That drop of blood was left behind by Aergyns and it contains a great energy. Tie Ta's also a war god, so can he absorb that blood? If he can, his strength will definitely skyrocket."

“Looks like I need to take Tie Ta to Dragon Island when I have the time,” thought Jian Chen.

At this moment, Ming Dong and Tie Ta’s presences rippled as they cultivated. They woke up at the same time and actually discovered Jian Chen as soon as they opened their eyes. They stared blankly at first, before returning to their senses. They became excited.

“Jian Chen, you’re actually back,” Ming Dong immediately cried out. He shot up to Jian Chen and hugged him. He felt extremely emotional.

“Fantastic. Jian Chen, you’ve finally returned.” Tie Ta also stood up and looked at Jian Chen, who only reached up to his chest. Emotions filled his face as well.

Jian Chen and Ming Dong separated and arrived before Tie Ta. Jian Chen heavily punched Tie Ta’s huge, three-meter-tall body as he stared at him. “Tie Ta, you’ve grown even bigger after not seeing you for so many years.”

Tie Ta smiled straightforwardly and scratched his head. He said with his deep, soft voice, “I don’t know why either. I’m just growing bigger and bigger.”

Jian Chen, Ming Dong, and Tie Ta talked for some more. Suddenly, Ming Dong seemed to think of something. His face sank and he looked at Jian Chen apologetically and said, “Jian Chen,

I'm sorry. We were useless. We failed to protector Flame City. The Extinguishing Alliance took it under the lead of Bi Jian."

Tie Ta's face also sank when he heard Ming Dong mention that. His gaze toward Jian Chen also became filled with regret and shame. Tie Ta always blamed himself for the matter of Flame City, even though he was not at fault at all.

Jian Chen broke into laughter when he heard them mention this. He replied, "I know about it already but don't worry. No one can take things that belong to me. I have already retaken the Flame City that was once occupied by the Extinguishing Alliance."

Ming Dong and Tie Ta's faces immediately lit up with joy. However, Ming Dong seemed to think of something again. His brows furrowed in worry and he said, "But Jian Chen, the ten protector clans of the continent will not let us take Flame City. If the protector clans interfere again, we won't have the power to keep Flame City at all, even if uncle Tian makes an appearance."

"The ten protector clans," Jian Chen murmured softly. He could not help but smile coldly as he continued, "If the ten protector clans want to interfere, I'll definitely let them leave with more than they bargained for."

Although the ten protector clans had Emperor Armaments that could break through his divine hall, the power of the weapons were just too great. They could only be used in crucial moments. Unless the protector clans were forced into a situation like the Yiyuan sect before, Jian Chen refused to believe that the protector clans would use the Emperor Armaments so easily.

However, even if they wanted to use it against him, Jian Chen was supported by the protector Changyang clan, so he at least had the power to resist. Additionally, Tian Jian and Mercenary City could also stop them. It would not be easy for them to successfully use the Emperor Armaments.

Lastly, Jian Chen had Rui Jin and Hei Yu beside him, two experts that could fight on-par with Saint Emperors. He did not need to feel fear even if the protector clans ran the risk of offending Mercenary City and used the Emperor Armaments against him in the end.

Although the protector clans' Emperor Armaments possessed the might of Saint Emperors, Rui Jin and Hei Yu possessed origin energy armor, and even Saint Emperors would personally struggle to injure them. As a result, the Emperor Armaments could not harm the two of them at all.

Tie Ta and Ming Dong became surprised immediately after they heard Jian Chen's words. They both stared at him with wide eyes.

"My god, you don't even fear the protector clans now, Jian Chen. Just what level of cultivation have you reached now? Can you contend against the protector clans now?" Ming Dong cried out.

"If I use my Emperor Armament, I can fight hand in hand with Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Kings," said Jian Chen with a smile. He hid very few things from Ming Dong and Tie Ta.

However, Tie Ta and Ming Dong's hearts began to churn after they heard these words. They were filled with disbelief.

“S-S- Seventh Heavenly Layer Saint Kings. My god, Jian Chen, y-y- you've become that powerful,” stuttered Ming Dong as he looked at Jian Chen dumbfoundedly. Currently, the shock within him had peaked.

Tie Ta also stared blankly for quite a while before gradually returning to his senses. He sighed emotionally and said, “Jian Chen, and I had thought that I had improved quickly in the past years and had exceeded you already. Never did I think you'd still be stronger than me after not seeing each other for a few years. Moreover, the difference between the two of us is getting wider and wider. Looks like I can never surpass you for the rest of my life.”

Jian Chen smiled at what Tie Ta had said and replied, “Tie Ta, you need to be confident in yourself. You need to be confident that you can surpass me in the future and become someone who surpasses Saint Emperor on the Tian Yuan Continent.”

“Can I really surpass Saint Emperor?” Tie Ta's eyes immediately lit up when Jian Chen mentioned surpassing Saint Emperor.

Jian Chen, Ming Dong, and Tie Ta talked some more, before looking toward Tian Jian. Jian Chen's expression changed very quickly, becoming filled with some pain.

“Senior Tian Jian, I want to see the bodies of mother and father,”

Jian Chen said with a deep voice. The happiness he had experienced from reuniting with Ming Dong and Tie Ta immediately vanished after he thought about his parents.

Tian Jian nodded silently. He said, "Come with me." With that, he turned around and walked toward the exterior of the divine hall.

Jian Chen immediately followed Tian Jian to the location where his parents' bodies were stored. Ming Dong and Tie Ta also controlled their feelings, following behind Jian Chen heavy-heartedly. The two of them also felt extremely sorrowful and pained over what had happened to Jian Chen's parents.

Jian Chen arrived in a room of the divine hall after Tian Jian. The entire room was filled with icy-cold air, causing a faint layer of frost to form on the walls. The air inside was white and a cold mist floated there as well.

As soon as Jian Chen entered the room, his eyes locked onto the huge ice casket in the center. He could clearly see his parents through the transparent ice. They laid there silently.

"To preserve the bodies of your parents even better, I specially visited the arctic and returned with some arctic ice. It can ensure that your parents' bodies will not rot even after a thousand years. Jian Chen, you've parted with your parents for so many years. You should really spend some time together with them again," Tian Jian said with mixed emotions, before backing out with Ming Dong and Tie Ta. Only Jian Chen remained in the icy-cold room.

Jian Chen slowly walked up to the ice caskets and looked at the silent faces of his parents. Unknowingly, tears began to roll down his face.

The person who said men bled but did not cry clearly was never emotionally hurt!

Outside, Jian Chen was a merciless, indomitable person. No matter how much blood he bled or how intense the pain and torture he endured, he had never cried. He seemed like a person with a heart of stone. However, he still internally retained a soft side.

That was the side of his relatives and family.

Jian Chen stared at his parents blankly. Dazed, he began to think of the past again, thinking about the concern, meticulous care, and love from his mother. He also recalled her beautiful and benevolent face.

“Mother, father, your child has returned. Your child has returned to see you. Your child is now a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master and will be able to awaken you from your slumber very quickly,” murmured Jian Chen. With a thought, a golden streak of light immediately shot from the center of his eyebrows, turning into a golden tower before him. Jian Chen then entered it.

Inside the artifact space, Jian Chen sat with his legs crossed in a rather dark room within the huge hall. The artifact spirit stood

politely to one side in the form of a white-clothed, middle-aged man.

“Artifact spirit, pass the three soul-controlling techniques onto me immediately,” growled Jian Chen. Only by learning the three techniques could he revive the dead.

“Yes master,” The artifact spirit replied courteously. Afterward, he passed on the cultivation method of the three techniques by mouth to Jian Chen.

Chapter 990: Reviving the Dead

The three soul-controlling techniques were wondrous techniques made for Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters. It could revive the dead; all that was needed was a sliver of Radiant Saint Force origin energy, given that the person's soul had not been wiped out and that their body was stored under perfect conditions. It would not leave any after effects, allowing the revived person to retain all their memories.

The three techniques were broken up into condensing the soul, nourishing the soul, and fusing the soul. Condensing the soul was gathering the soul scattered throughout the world, while the second technique was to nourish these scattered pieces, and make them join together into a whole soul.

The third technique was to fuse the soul perfectly with the body of the person being revived, bringing them back from the dead.

The three techniques were made especially for reviving the dead, and had no other uses. Only Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters and beyond could learn it.

Although the artifact spirit knew the three techniques and could be considered as a great Radiant Saint Master, he was not human, so he could not practice the techniques. As a result, the artifact spirit did not possess the power to revive the dead.

After learning all three techniques from the artifact spirit, Jian Chen stayed in the artifact space as he practiced them.

Time passed quickly. In the blink of an eye, Jian Chen had already stayed in Mercenary City for three months. During this entire time, he practiced the three techniques within the artifact space, without taking a single step out.

Tian Jian, Ming Dong, and Tie Ta did not disturb Jian Chen. However, Tian Jian left long ago, so only Ming Dong and Tie Ta remained outside the icy-cold room as they waited silently.

After three months, Jian Chen finally began to move in the huge hall of the artifact space. He slowly opened his eyes. Immediately, his eyes flashed with a visible light. His gaze seemed even brighter than before.

Jian Chen finally learned the three techniques after three months of comprehension. Although the techniques could not make him stronger, his soul had grown by a quantitative amount after learning it. As a result, his presence could cover an increased area.

“Artifact spirit, send me out of the artifact space,” Jian Chen said rather patiently. He wanted to revive his parents as soon as possible after learning the three techniques.

With a flash of white light, Jian Chen disappeared from the artifact space. By the time he had reappeared, he had returned to the icy-cold room.

Jian Chen stared emotionally at his parents in the ice casket. He

felt rather excited and a little uneasy; he was excited that his parents were about to be revived and would be able to walk the earth again, but he felt uneasy over the possibility of accidents during the process. An accident could potentially destroy any hopes of bringing back his parents. After all, he was inexperienced in this aspect.

“Mother, father, you’ve already slept for so long. It’s about time you woke up. Don’t worry, your child will wake you up immediately.” Jian Chen murmured as he touched the casket gently. Afterward, he directly lifted up the ice casket with his thought, and carried it out of the room.

“Jian Chen, what are you doing?”

Ming Dong and Tie Ta noticed Jian Chen as soon as he exited the room. They immediately cried out when they saw Jian Chen carrying the ice casket.

“I want to revive my parents and let them see the light of day again,” Jian Chen said positively.

Ming Dong and Tie Ta both stared blankly, stunned by these words.

At this moment, Tian Jian walked in from outside. His eyes shone with interest as he looked at Jian Chen. Tian Jian asked, “Have you already become a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master, Jian Chen?”

Jian Chen nodded and said, “Senior Tian Jian, the revival of my parents must be performed outside. Only outside can I gather my mother and father’s souls.”

Tian Jian nodded solemnly and said, “Come with me.”

Afterward, Jian Chen followed Tian Jian out of the independent space with the ice casket on his shoulders. Ming Dong and Tie Ta followed behind him as well.

Rui Jin and Hei Yu immediately flew over from afar when Jian Chen reappeared in Mercenary City. However, they both became stunned when they noticed the ice casket on Jian Chen’s shoulder. They became doubtful and just when they wanted to ask him about it, they noticed Jian Chen’s sternness, so they choked back their questions.

Mercenary City possessed a protective barrier, and Jian Chen was worried that the revival would be affected by it. As a result, he walked toward outside the city with the ice casket on his shoulder. Meanwhile Rui Jin, Hei Yu, Ming Dong, and Tie Ta followed closely behind him. Tian Jian followed along as well.

Jian Chen immediately drew everyone’s attention as he walked through the streets of Mercenary City with the ice casket. All of them pointed at him as they discussed; no one had ever dared to stride through Mercenary City with such a huge coffin in all these years. After all, Mercenary City was a consecrated holy land to all the mercenaries.

Many mercenaries struggled to bear with Jian Chen's actions. A few mercenaries with decent strength immediately wanted to stand forward and lecture him. The grand elder of Mercenary City traveled with Jian Chen, but an ordinary person could not discern his status. Meanwhile, Rui Jin and Hei Yu seemed just like ordinary people to these mercenaries, so they possessed no deterrence.

However, just when they wanted to stand forward, a supreme battle intent suddenly attacked them. It was as if a warhammer had been swung mercilessly at their heads.

The battle intent did not arouse their own desire to battle. Instead, it functioned as an extremely great pressure and deterrence, directly crushing any will to fight within them. Instead, it aroused fear from the bottom of their hearts. It completely frightened them, removing all of their courage to stop Jian Chen.

The one who stopped them was naturally Tie Ta. Tie Ta now had a high degree of proficiency and control over his own battle intent; not only could he affect their spirits and throw them into a mindless state as they fought, but he could also completely crush their desires to fight as well. This allowed him to subdue enemies without even fighting. However, that was only if the opponent was not too strong.

“Big brother, you can't go too far. If those bad people come bullying you, Xiao Ling will help you chase them away.” Xiao Ling's voice rang in Jian Chen's head as soon as he crossed the barrier. She seemed to know what Jian Chen wanted to do next.

Finally, Jian Chen stopped in an empty region ten kilometers away from the city before opening the ice casket. He slowly closed his eyes, as he prepared to cast the three techniques.

Rui Jin, Hei Yu, Tian Jian, Ming Dong, and Tie Ta all stood beside him quietly. They wanted to witness a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master reviving the dead, as well as protect Jian Chen from any interference from others.

Tian Jian looked at Jian Chen's back with mixed emotions and thought, "The sea goddess is still alive, the war god of the Hundred Races has reappeared and even the Winged Tiger God of the Beast God Continent has appeared as well. In the current world, three of the four great races have their supreme experts. Only my Tian Yuan Continent is without one."

"Jian Chen's talent is unprecedented, having reached such a level of cultivation with his age. He also has a mysterious relationship with the barrier spirit of Mercenary City. Looks like he will be the future hope of the continent."

Similar thoughts like that had bloomed in his heart ever since Jian Chen reached Saint Ruler. However, he was even more certain now.

The other people present had no idea what Tian Jian was thinking. They all stared at Jian Chen unblinkingly.

A milky-white energy slowly began to float out from the top of

Jian Chen's head. This was a sliver of Radiant Saint Force origin energy.

Under Jian Chen's control, the origin energy split into two and a sliver fused with Bi Yuntian's body. The other strand remained in the air.

Immediately, Bi Yuntian's body became covered by a dense layer of milky-white light. Then, Jian Chen gently extended a finger and forcefully cut open Bi Yutian's wrist. He removed a droplet of blood.

Under Jian Chen's mental control, the droplet of blood fused with the other strand of origin energy, dyeing it red. Afterward, Jian Chen chanted, "With the blood as a medium, I search the world for the soul. First technique of the three soul-controlling techniques—gather!"

The origin energy of Radiant Saint Force that had fused with Bi Yuntian's blood dispersed in the surroundings. It used Bi Yuntian's blood as a medium to search for the soul fragments scattered across the world.

Jian Chen's eyes remained closed, as he stood there without moving. In that moment, his soul seemed to have fused with the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force, taking his body with it as he searched for the familiar soul fragments.

A while later, the space before Jian Chen began to twist slightly. The origin energy that had dispersed reappeared before him, this

time shining with an even brighter and more dazzling milky-white light. There were a few spots of dark red and a few pieces of a soul in the light.

This was Bi Yuntian's soul. Jian Chen had gathered all the soul fragments using the condensing technique.

Tian Jian, Rui Jin, Hei Yu, and Tie Ta's eyes all froze. They could feel the existence of Bi Yuntian's soul as they were all Saint Rulers or above, which made them extremely amazed.

Although they were powerful, some even at the peak of Saint King, gathering the souls like this technique before them far exceeded their capabilities.

“Second technique of the three soul-controlling techniques—condense!” Jian Chen forcefully suppressed his internal excitement and called out once again.

As he said the word ‘condense’, Bi Yuntian's soul fragments began to condense quickly, forming a faint figure in the end.

“Last technique of the three soul-controlling techniques—fuse!” Jian Chen said quickly as his lip trembled. Under the control of his mind, the nourishment of the Radiant Saint Force origin energy, and a droplet of blood, Bi Yuntian's soul slowly fused into the body within the ice casket. It was the final part to reviving the dead.

Bi Yuntian's entire body became enveloped in a bright white

light, causing her figure to become blurry.

Jian Chen sighed deeply after completing the process. He looked at Bi Yuntian with excitement and mixed emotions. He was filled with anticipation.

This was the final step to bringing back the deceased—fusing the soul with the body into one once again. Whether the person could return or not would completely depend on this step.

Chapter 991: Parents' Revival

The final step of fusing the soul with the body required some time. It was not as fast as the two previous steps.

Bi Yuntian's entire body became enveloped in a bright white light. The light gradually permeated the ice caskets before enveloping it completely. Her soul slowly re-entered her body with the help of the Radiant Saint Force origin energy inside her head.

Jian Chen, Tian Jian, and the others watched Bi Yuntian fixedly. They were all filled with anticipation.

The mercenaries entering and leaving the city noticed the powerful white light from the origin energy. It immediately drew many of them over, but before they could approach the region, they were blocked by an invisible force.

However, this did not reduce the mercenaries' curiosity at all. They watched from afar, which caused more and more people to gather in the end. Very soon, it had even attracted a few old, knowledgeable mercenaries who cried out.

“That's the Radiant Saint Force that can only be controlled by Radiant Saint Master. Look at the coffin before the caster. Is it a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master resurrecting the dead, making the people in the coffin live again?”

As a chain reaction, all the mercenaries who watched on out of interest became stunned. They all looked toward Jian Chen's

group with respect and admiration that they struggled to hide.

Ordinary Radiant Saint Masters were probably extremely commonly seen in Mercenary City, it would not attract anyone's attention. However, it would be a different story if they were Class 7.

This was because there were just too few Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters on the Tian Yuan Continent. There were only twenty or so of them, even with the whole continent in perspective. As such, they were even rarer than Saint Kings. Meanwhile, a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master had just appeared outside Mercenary City, currently casting the technique to resurrect the dead. This was something so rare that could never be seen even across thousands of years.

The news of a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master bringing back the dead outside Mercenary City spread very quickly, immediately creating a huge disturbance. Even more people hurried out from the city. They all wanted to see the heaven-defying abilities of a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master.

Some individuals from larger clans even considered pulling the Class 7 Radiant Saint Master to their side or recruiting them.

Very quickly, a huge, densely-packed crowd gathered outside the city. All of them watched on from five kilometers away, while a few Heaven Saint Masters took to the skies. They watched from high up, not because they did not want to approach Jian Chen's group, but because no one had the power to cross the five kilometer boundary.

Although Jian Chen's group knew what was happening in the surroundings, no one cared about it. All of them devoted their attention to Bi Yuntian inside the ice casket.

Time passed slowly. Night fell and day broke once more. Twenty four hours had passed in the blink of an eye and during this time, nothing happened to the light around Bi Yuntian. Jian Chen and the others stood like statues for the entire day.

A great group of people had gathered from Mercenary City. Although a whole day had passed, their numbers failed to decrease and had even increased. They formed a densely-packed encirclement around Jian Chen and the others.

At this moment, the milky-white light around Bi Yuntian began to fade and disappeared at a visible rate. Those with sharp eyes could tell that the light was not actually vanishing, but rather slowly entering Bi Yuntian's body. She was absorbing it.

Bi Yuntian's change caused Jian Chen's eyes to freeze. Then, he closed his eyes, using the three soul-techniques to check on the condition of Bi Yuntian's soul. When he opened his eyes once again, delight filled his face.

"It succeeded, it succeeded. My mother's soul has successfully fused with her body," Jian Chen said with a trembling voice. He was so ecstatic that he became rather unnatural. He had looked forward to this day for far too long.

Ming Dong, Tie Ta, and the others all smiled as well. They were happy for Jian Chen, that he could revive his parents.

The milky-white light completely disappeared and the paleness slowly receded from Bi Yuntian's face. It was replaced by a rosy red, but she did not wake up.

“According to the records of the three techniques, those who do not wake up immediately have their souls in an extremely weak form, which can't support their bodies. The souls need to be nourished for a period of time, with a maximum length of three days,” Jian Chen murmured excitedly. Without any hesitation, he used the three techniques once more to revive Changyang Ba.

After another day, Jian Chen successfully gathered Changyang Ba's soul and fused it into this body. However, he did not wake up either. Both their souls were very weak and needed to be nourished in the body for a period of time before they were able to wake up.

Jian Chen's excitement had already peaked with the revival of his parents. He struggled to calm down even after quite a lengthy amount of time.

“Jian Chen, let's bring your parents into the city first. They can slowly awaken there,” Tian Jian said as he saw more and more people gather in the surroundings.

Jian Chen agreed without any hesitation to this suggestion. He wanted to find a peaceful place for his parents to awaken.

Afterward, Jian Chen's group took to the air as Jian Chen carried the ice casket. They flew toward the city, directly entering it through the air.

Mercenary City had an iron rule that no one could fly within the city, or they would suffer the punishment of the barrier spirit. As a result, all the mercenaries became wide-eyed when they saw Jian Chen's group enter directly through the air. They did not suffer any punishment, which caused the gazes of all the mercenaries to be filled with admiration.

"They must be part of the upper echelon of Mercenary City. Only the upper echelon have the right to fly in the city," discussed quite a few people.

Jian Chen did not return to the divine hall. Instead, he went to another independent space under Tian Jian's lead. He settled down in a luxurious palace, quietly waiting for his parents to wake up.

Rui Jin and Hei Yu remained outside. Xiao Ling was already extremely merciful for letting the two of them into the city. No foreign race could enter the spaces carved open within Mercenary City.

Jian Chen, Ming Dong, and Tie Ta waited beside Bi Yuntian and Changyang Ba for the two to wake up. After two whole days, Bi Yuntian's finger finally twitched slightly. Then, her eyes slowly opened; her eyes were filled with confusion.

“Mother, you’ve finally woken up,” Jian Chen called out with a trembling voice. Tears began to well uncontrollably in his eyes.

Bi Yuntian’s eyes froze when she heard this familiar voice. The confusion quickly vanished from her eyes and she looked toward the direction of the voice. She immediately discovered Jian Chen’s face, a face she was most familiar with.

“Xiang’er...” Bi Yuntian cried out. Her memories surged forth like a flood, before they stopped at the moment when old man Situ and his four other cronies had come to caused trouble for the Changyang clan.

Bi Yuntian’s face changed abruptly when her memories reached there. She cried out, “Xiang’er, go. There are Saint Ruler coming to get you.” Bi Yuntian had no idea she was no longer in the Changyang clan as she had just woken up. She subconsciously wanted to stand up from the bed, but as soon as she moved, she discovered that she was completely powerless. She could not even stand up.

“Mother, just lie there and don’t move. Rest well first. The matters from before have already past. Those Saint Rulers can no longer oppress me,” Jian Chen said gently as he hurried to urged Bi Yuntian to lie down.

These slight movements seemed to have consumed all the power left in Bi Yuntian. She collapsed powerlessly onto the bed and heaved heavily for quite a while. Then, she asked, “Xiang’er, just what has happened to me? Why don’t I have any power?” Bi Yuntian’s eyes suddenly narrowed as she said that. She became

shocked and murmured, “I clearly remember that I died to the hands of that Saint Ruler, so how am I still alive? Xiang’er, what is this all about? And where is this place? It doesn’t seem like the Changyang clan.”

“Mother, this is Mercenary City...” Jian Chen started to explain everything from start to end.

“What did you say!? Xiang’er, it has already been ten years since then? And my life was resurrected by your abilities as a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master?” Bi Yuntian became tongue-tied after she learned everything that had happened in all those years. She became filled with disbelief.

Jian Chen nodded and replied, “Mother, there’s also father. Father has been saved by me as well, but he’s currently unconscious. He should wake up shortly.”

Afterward, Jian Chen, Ming Dong, and Tie Ta sat down beside Bi Yuntian and began talking with her. They told her the matters that had occurred in the past ten years as well as the changes to the Changyang clan bit by bit. However, they did hide some parts.

Half a day later, Changyang Ba woke up as well. He learned about his current situation from Jian Chen very quickly, and also became tongue-tied. He struggled to calm down after a very long time.

The one most excited was definitely Jian Chen as his parents both woke up. Jian Chen had never been so happy even with all the years that had passed.

Jian Chen spoke some more with his parents, before leaving with Ming Dong and Tie Ta. He left them in a safe environment to rest well. This was also to give them some time to accept what was going on.

In the next few days, Jian Chen made soup from hundred-year-old heavenly resources, which possessed a mild medicinal effect to nourish his parent's body. Afterward, he slowly increased it to several-hundred-year-old heavenly resources, and then thousand-year-old and several-thousand-year-old heavenly resources.

His parents had just been resurrected. Their souls and bodies had been separated for so long. Although their bodies had been maintained perfectly and had been nourished by the origin energy of Radiant Saint Force, a huge disparity still existed if they were compared to the bodily conditions of ordinary people. They needed to slowly recuperate.

Bi Yuntian and Changyang Ba recovered quickly under the medicine made from the heavenly resources. They made a full recovery in just half a month.

The two of them had completely accepted the unbelievable facts that lay before them after the half a month of buffering. They knew that they had died once already.

Chapter 992: Whereabouts of Seven Beast Furs

Jian Chen finally completely his greatest wish with the revival of his parents. He was extremely happy in the past few days.

Half a month later, Jian Chen gathered with Bi Yuntian and Changyang Ba. The two had fully recovered. However, something heavy seemed to be weighing on their minds.

“Xiang’er, we’ve stayed at Mercenary City for so long. It’s about time we leave. We’ll be returning to the Changyang clan,” said Bi Yuntian.

“Sigh, so much time has passed in the blink of an eye. Xiang’er, we’ve left the Changyang clan for just too long. We learned about some of the situations the Changyang clan experienced, but we’re still impatient to return. Since, that’s our home,” Changyang Ba said as well. The thought of going home had laid in the couples’ minds the whole time they rested. They were just too weak before, so they did not mention it.

Jian Chen agreed without any hesitation after hearing this. He said, “Mother, Father, since you want to return so much, let’s leave Mercenary City as soon as possible.” Jian Chen seemed to think of something as he spoke up to there. He hesitated slightly before speaking with mixed emotions, “Mother Father, the clan has changed greatly now. Because I wanted you to recuperate peacefully after having your souls fuse into your bodies, I hid some things from you.”

Jian Chen had indeed explained the situation of the Changyang clan to the couple roughly in the past few days, but he did not go into detail. He hid a lot of matters and did not mention the protector clans at all. He did this so that his recently revived parents could recover peacefully. After all, it would just be too shocking for the two if he recounted the connection between the Changyang clan of Lore City and the protector Changyang clan.

Jian Chen no longer had any worries now that Bi Yuntian and Changyang Ba had both made full recoveries. He narrated everything regarding the Changyang clan in a more complete fashion, including the situation with the Changyang clan of the protector clans and the return of the founder, Changyang Zu Yunkong.

Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian were about to return to the clan, so Jian Chen only wanted to let them know about the situation beforehand. This would allow them to mentally prepare themselves. That way, they would not become dumbfounded after they returned.

Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian both become dumbstruck once again after learning these matters. Their hearts churned, and they struggled to calm down even after a very long time.

The two of them had never thought that the clan would have such a profound history, much less think that the founder was actually a member of the ten protector clans of the continent.

Jian Chen left the room, providing his parents with a peaceful environment so that they could accept everything. Jian Chen only skimmed over what he had gone through in the past ten years with a few sentences and did not go into the details. He had experienced quite a lot of bloodshed and danced between the edge of life and death many times. He did not plan on telling his parents about this, as it would make them worry.

At the same time, Jian Chen did not tell them about his conflict with the ten protector clans. That was not something for the couple to interfere with at all, so if he told them about it, it would only burden them.

Afterward, Jian Chen found Ming Dong and Tie Ta. He had learned from Tian Jian that Ming Dong had reached the peak of Heaven Saint Master long ago and had always been stuck at the obstacle of reaching Saint Ruler, unable to break through.

Jian Chen pulled out three pieces of white beast fur and a scroll from his Space Ring. Then, he passed these things to Ming Dong. He said, "Ming Dong, these items can assist you in the comprehension of the mysteries of the world and thus help you with your breakthrough. I relied on them to reach Saint Ruler before. You should stay in Mercenary City and work hard on cultivation in the next few days so you can reach Saint Ruler as fast as possible."

Ming Dong did not try to turn these items down out of politeness and took the three beast furs and the scroll from Jian Chen. He nodded determinedly and said, "Don't worry Jian Chen. The next time we meet, I would have definitely already become a Saint

Ruler.”

At this moment, Tian Jian walked in from outside. He casually glanced at the items in Ming Dong’s hand. At the very start, he paid no mind to it, but in the next moment, his eyes suddenly narrowed. He began to stare fixedly at the three white beast furs. With a slight movement, he immediately arrived before Ming Dong. Afterward, he took the three furs from Ming Dong’s hands and began to examine them. He was surprised.

Ming Dong, Jian Chen, and Tie Ta all became stunned with how Tian Jian had reacted. Afterward, Jian Chen seemed to realize something and a gleam of light flashed through his eyes. He asked, “Senior Tian Jian, do you recognize these three beast furs?”

Tian Jian did not reply immediately. He caressed the beast furs for quite some time before nodding slightly. He looked toward Jian Chen in interest and asked, “Where did you get these three pieces of beast fur, Jian Chen?”

“I obtained them from various places years before. Senior Tian Jian, do you know the secret that’s hidden within them?” Jian Chen asked. He had already learned some basic information regarding the furs from Mo Tianyun, but it was limited. He knew nothing else other than the fact that there were eighteen in total and only a Saint Emperor’s soul could fuse them back together.

Jian Chen had always been extremely curious toward the secret hidden within these beast furs.

After a while of thought, Tian Jian said, “Mercenary City also has a piece of beast fur. An elder accidentally obtained it several hundred thousand years ago, and we’ve kept it all the way until now. The mysterious and powerful energy is hidden within the beast fur and as it oscillates, no one can sense it. But when it awakens, it can display the mysteries of the world. It’s extremely wondrous. However, the beast fur is extremely tough. No one in the world can tear it apart. Even I can’t.”

“Many of my predecessors of Mercenary City have tried guessing the secret of the beast furs before. However, they said nothing other than guessing that it came from the Winged Tiger God of the ancient times.”

Tian Jian rubbed the beast furs gently and mumbled, “Mercenary City has one piece, the ten protector clans hold onto six pieces and with the three pieces in your possession, there’s a total of ten that has appeared now. I wonder just how many there are in total.”

Jian Chen could not help but feel disappointed after he failed to learn anything substantial from Tian Jian. However, he did learn one thing; at least he learned the whereabouts of seven other pieces. One was with Mercenary City and six were with the protector clans. Only the locations of the remaining eight were unknown.

“These beast furs can only be fused with the soul of a Saint Emperor. There’s no need to hurry!” Jian Chen thought. He made up his mind; he needed to gather all the pieces somehow in the future.

Tian Jian passed the beast furs to Ming Dong once again and said, “It should only be a matter of time before you reach Saint Ruler with these three beast furs. It’s a pity that the beast fur in Mercenary City’s possession is in the divine hall left behind by the city lord. A Saint Emperor grand elder left it there all those years ago, so I cannot retrieve it at all. Otherwise, I would have lend it to you long ago so that you could reach Saint Ruler as soon as possible.”

Then, Tian Jian looked toward Jian Chen and said, “Jian Chen, I know you need to leave. Go with your parents. Ming Dong and Tie Ta will stay here. Once Ming Dong reaches Saint Ruler, he will go looking for you. Tie Ta’s identity is relatively special though. His constitution as the war god has already awakened completely, and his special characteristics have become even more obvious. Meanwhile, you’ll be coming into contact with the protector clans very often in the coming period of time, so Tie Ta cannot go with you. Even I won’t be able to do anything once he gets recognized by the protector clans. After all, he’s not a member of the human race, and the protector clans have a vendetta against the previous war god.”

Jian Chen nodded silently. Tian Jian was right. Tie Ta’s identity was just too special. His strength was still not enough to contend with the protector clans, so it would be best if he did not interact with the protector clans. Jian Chen would definitely stand with Tie Ta if his identity was exposed. However, once he helped out Tie Ta, the protector clans that hated him would probably brand him as a traitor. Even the Changyang clan of Lore City would be pulled into the matter and would result in extremely severe consequences.

Tie Ta's face immediately darkened after he heard Tian Jian's words. He became extremely heavy-hearted.

Jian Chen patted Tie Ta's chest and said, "Tie Ta, just cultivate here at ease. I will come back in the next few days."

Tie Ta nodded silently.

After bidding farewell to the two of them, Jian Chen left with Bi Yuntian and Changyang Ba, along with Rui Jin and Hei Yu. Xiao Ling naturally tried to persuade him to stay before he had left. It took up a great effort before Jian Chen managed to convince Xiao Ling.

Chapter 993: You Yue's Feelings

Thanks to the assistance of Rui Jin and Hei Yu, Jian Chen's journey was extremely easy. Hei Yu directly ripped open a Space Gate, crossing over a million kilometers in a mere step. They directly arrived in the space above the Changyang clan in Lore City.

Right now, Jian Chen was completely certain that Rui Jin and Hei Yu only followed him to protect the Winged Tiger God. He had already grown accustomed to them following him closely everywhere.

Jian Chen originally wanted to visit the Tianqin clan in Walaurent City to see Qin Xiao. However, he gave up on the idea after considering that it was just too inconvenient with his parents as well as Rui Jin and Hei Yu. He decided to spend the next period of time dealing with the matters at hand, before proceeding to the Tianqin clan to find Qin Xiao. He had no idea how Qin Xiao was after they had separated for ten years—was he married? Did he have children? What level of strength did he grow to?

Jian Chen brought Bi Yuntian and Changyang Ba back with Rui Jin and Hei Yu, which immediately lead to a very large uproar in the clan. Very few people in the clan knew that Jian Chen was a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master, so many of them felt utterly astounded with Bi Yuntian and Changyang Ba's resurrection.

Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yunkong viewed Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian's return with great importance. They set aside their lofty statuses and personally went up to

receive them. They were extremely polite, and did not display the haughtiness commonly seen between different generations.

After all, they had given birth to the pride of the clan, Jian Chen.

As Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian already had some prior understanding of the clan before they had arrived, they did not panic or become surprised when they saw Changyang Zu Yunxiao, Changyang Zu Yeyun, or the Changyang clan ancestor. They greeted the three of them as juniors, as they were Changyang Zu Yunkong's descendants after all.

Bi Yuntian and Changyang Ba were nimble-minded people. When they saw how politely the esteemed Changyang Zu Yunxiao and Changyang Zu Yeyun treated them, they immediately understood that it was all because of their son. They could not help but feel extremely proud, but in no way did they become arrogant.

Later that night, Changyang Zu Yunxiao personally held a banquet to welcome back Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian. Even the king of the Gesun Kingdom ran over from a very great distance and warmly greeted Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian. He made his mind up to establish a tight relationship with the clan, as he was only on friendly terms with Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian in the clan other than Jian Chen.

The king mentioned the marriage between his daughter and Jian Chen once again to Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian during the banquet. He used various excuses in an attempt to make the marriage occur earlier. He was eager for Jian Chen to become his son-in-law.

Changyang Ba and Bi Yuntian naturally agreed with the king's suggestions. They were also eager for Jian Chen to marry You Yue, but with Jian Chen's present day status, they could no longer force him into the marriage. They still needed to ask Jian Chen himself.

Jian Chen had just returned to the continent, so he had a lot of matters to attend to. The white tiger's mother, Rum Guinness, needed to be saved, and the white tiger also needed to take its revenge. Jian Chen also needed to take revenge for the massacre of the Bi clan, deal with Tie Ta's identity, deal with the threats from the Beast God Continent, deal with the sea goddess' task and so on. These matters would all take a large amount of time to complete, so he could not afford to think about matters of love. As a result, he pushed it back time and time again. He knew that this was very unfair to You Yue, but he could do nothing about it.

You Yue, who sat beside Jian Chen, naturally became extremely happy as soon as she heard her father mention the marriage with Jian Chen. She was filled with anticipation, but she still became extremely disappointed in the end.

"Xiang'er, you're not young anymore. It's about time you consider marriage. Yue'er has already waited for you for over a decade. Do you still want to keep her waiting?" said Bi Yuntian, as she persuaded him earnestly. She liked You Yue very much as a daughter-in-law.

Jian Chen also became filled with uneasiness. He said, "Mother, I'll find some time to marry Yue'er after I deal with the matters at hand." After these words left his mouth, he could not help but

think about Huang Luan who he was in love with, as well as the Heavenly Enchantress who he ended up sleeping with since they had no other choice. His emotions immediately became mixed.

“Mother-in-law, let’s talk about it after Jian Chen deals with his matters. Yue’er is busy with the Flame Mercenaries right now as well, so I’m not in the mood to deal with marriage at this time either,” You Yue said gently. Her soft voice was as pleasant as a lark’s call. Although she said this, You Yue’s gaze toward Jian Chen still hid a deep bitterness.

At the banquet, Changyang Zu Yunkong formally announced Changyang Ba as the patriarch once again. Changyang Ba would be dealing with all the matters of the clan. The position of patriarch was finally passed on officially.

The position did not mean anything, but it at least showed Changyang Zu Yunkong’s acceptance and respect for Changyang Ba.

The sun had set completely after the banquet ended. However, the Changyang clan was still completely bright. Groups of guards patrolled the surroundings with their chest held high. They were in fine spirits, constantly looking around sharply like eagles.

Jian Chen and You Yue walked around in the slightly-dark back garden. They walked together slowly and said nothing. Jian Chen was calm and revealed an expression of thought from time to time. He seemed to have a lot that weighed on his mind. Meanwhile, You Yue looked toward Jian Chen from time to time. Her eyes were bright and enchanting.

In the end, Jian Chen and You Yue arrived in the pavilion of the garden. The night breeze was gentle. Jian Chen stood in the pavilion with his arms crossed behind his back, as he looked at the fishes within the lake. His luxurious white robes fluttered gently in the wind.

“Jian Chen, is there something on your mind?” said You Yue gently, as she looked at Jian Chen brightly.

“You Yue, I’ve really let you down. I’ve made you wait for so long in the past few years, but I really do have a lot of things to attend to right now...” Jian Chen said apologetically. He felt riddled with guilt.

You Yue raised her arm gently and used her thin fingers to cover Jian Chen’s mouth. She stopped what Jian Chen wanted to say next and looked toward Jian Chen with tender affection. She said softly, “Jian Chen, don’t say any more. I know it has been very hard for you in the past few years. You seem extremely glorious on the surface, but all that glory was exchanged from risking your life. In the past few years, you’ve worked very hard to increase your strength, almost dying countless times. It has been harder for you than anyone. Those hair-raising situations you’ve been in exceeds anything we can imagine.”

“Jian Chen, go attend to your matters without worry. I am weak and cannot help you with anything, but I will wait for you silently. I will stand behind you quietly and follow your shadow, and quietly support you from behind.”

Suddenly, Jian Chen looked at You Yue's face when he heard these words. He was deeply moved once again as he looked at her weary face.

"Yue'er..." Jian Chen said gently. He opened his arms and hugged You Yue tightly. Immediately, a faint fragrance entered his nose. Coupled with You Yue's petite body, Jian Chen felt enchanted.

A sliver of visible panic appeared in You Yue's eyes when Jian Chen suddenly pulled her in, but she calmed down very quickly. A faint red flush immediately dyed her cheeks. She extended her arms to embrace Jian Chen as well and gently placed her head on his chest. She slowly closed her eyes to enjoy this lovely moment in all of its detail.

In this moment, You Yue felt like she had obtained the world. There was nothing more wonderful than embracing her most beloved person.

A while later, You Yue said gently, "Jian Chen, I know you won't be able to stay at the clan for very long. Can you tell me when you will be leaving?"

After a slight pause, Jian Chen said with difficulty, "Tomorrow."

You Yue's body shook. She looked toward Jian Chen, unwilling for him to go. "You just returned. Can't you stay for a few days longer?"

Jian Chen shook his head slowly and said, “I need to deal with some matters as soon as possible.”

You Yue embraced Jian Chen even more tightly. She said after a period of hesitation, “Jian Chen, I want to be with you. If there’s no danger, please bring me with you.”

Jian Chen hesitated when he heard this. After a period of thought, he realized that what he would be doing was nothing dangerous. Also, he had Rui Jin and Hei Yu by his side, as well as the protection from the Octoterra Divine Hall and the saint artifact. As a result, it was unlikely that You Yue would be in any danger, so he agreed.

He had owed You Yue enough. It really was hard for Jian Chen to turn down such a small request from her.

Chapter 994: Rum Guinness

You Yue immediately became emotional when she saw Jian Chen accept her small request. She was extremely happy.

In the morning of the next day, Jian Chen took You Yue with him as he left the Changyang clan with Rui Jin and Hei Yu.

The wild wind whistled in the sky as it blew past them like a gale at sea. It was terrifyingly loud, almost like thunder.

Jian Chen held You Yue's thin waist as he flew through the sky, flying in a straight line toward an unknown location. A barrier formed from World Force staved off the wind around them.

You Yue became slightly flushed from Jian Chen's embrace. However, happiness filled her as well. She smiled slightly as she looked at the receding landscape below and Jian Chen's face.

“Jian Chen, where are we going next? Will it be dangerous?” You Yue's voice was filled with excitement as she looked at Jian Chen brightly. This was the first time she had wandered the Tian Yuan Continent in her entire life, and it was with her most beloved and most admirable partner. It was impossible for her to be unexcited.

Jian Chen flipped his hand, and a white tiger hair suddenly appeared in his palm. This hair was originally left behind by Xiao Bai's mother—Rum Guinness. She left it behind so that they could find her in the future.

Jian Chen gently brought the hair to the white tiger that lied gently on his shoulder. He said, “Xiao Bai, it’ll all be up to you if you can find your mother or not.”

The white tiger’s interest was immediately piqued. Suddenly, it stood up. It stared unblinkingly at the white hair in Jian Chen’s hands with its eyes wide open. Rare, mixed emotions began to pour from its pure eyes.

The white tiger could not even open its eyes when it had left its mother—it probably did not even know what she looked like. However, it was impossible for it to mistake his mother’s scent, because this was a natural instinct of magical beasts that humans did not possess.

“Grrrrr...” The white tiger produced a throaty growl as if it was crying in anguish. It also seemed to be talking to Jian Chen, even though he could not understand it at all. The white tiger appeared to miss its mother after catching a whiff of her scent.

The white tiger was currently a Class 7 Magical Beast, but the time since its birth was just too short. His current mind was even more undeveloped than Xiao Ling from Mercenary City.

The white tiger gently raised its furry front paw and opened its mouth slightly. A wind blade shot out and cut its paw. Immediately, a droplet of bright red blood dripped out and fell accurately onto the hair in Jian Chen’s hand.

Only the blood from the white tiger could activate the hair that Rum Guinness left behind.

The hair immediately turned completely red after it absorbed the blood. It began to glow with a demonic red light, before it broke free from Jian Chen's grasp. It shot off into the distance with lightning speed.

Jian Chen tightened his arm around You Yue and fused with the surrounding space. He used Spatial Force to travel, turning into a blur as he chased after the tiger hair.

In the northern parts of the continent, there was a marsh perpetually covered by a layer of poisonous gas. Countless poisonous bug and feral beasts lived in the marsh, and there were plenty of Class 6 Magical Beasts.

The marsh was in an extremely desolate region, as the poisonous gas there was just too potent. Even Earth Saint Masters were not resistant to it, and most detoxifying pills were ineffective. As a result, it became labeled as a forbidden region to most mercenaries. Only Heaven Saint Masters could survive within it.

In the center of the marsh, powerful booms constantly rang out despite the thick, green poisonous gas that clouded the area. It caused the gas to churn constantly as violent ripples of energy radiated outward.

More than ten experts floated in the air at the center. They rained down powerful attacks one after another, striking the

marshland below.

Their wild attacks formed a huge ditch. It revealed a dull barrier that enveloped an underground cavern. It seemed to shake more and more under the rain of attacks. There were signs of it almost breaking.

“Put in some effort, everyone. There’s not enough energy in the barrier. It’ll break very soon.” A gray-haired old man in luxurious golden robes floated high up in the sky as he stared coldly toward the shaking barrier. He directed the Heaven Saint Masters to attack the barrier in turns, which constantly ate away at the barrier’s energy.

The old man was a former patriarch of a large clan nearby. He was also the most powerful person in the group and had reached Saint Ruler already. However, he only belonged to the First Heavenly Layer.

“Old man Hou, are you sure there’s a heavily-injured Class 7 Magical Beast hiding behind the barrier? A Class 7 Magical Beast is on the same level of cultivation as you, and magical beasts are just innately more powerful than us. If we break the barrier, we’ll definitely aggravate the magical beast inside. If it isn’t as weak as you anticipated, it would be a disaster,” a Heaven Saint Master asked out of worry as he attacked the barrier.

The old man referred to as old man Hou coldly glanced at the Heaven Saint Master. His gaze was like a sharp knife and pierced the Heaven Saint Master’s heart. It immediately made him tremble, and fear rose from the bottom of his heart.

All those below Saint Ruler were ants. Even though old man Hou was only at the First Heavenly Layer, the Heaven Saint Masters were as weak as ants before him.

“Don’t worry. Ever since I discovered something odd here, I’ve always kept an eye out. I’m certain that it’s an injured Class 7 Magical Beast hiding in the barrier. It must be healing here, so it can’t threaten us at all,” old man Hou said nonchalantly. He was filled with confidence. He could tell that the magical beast that hid behind the barrier was much stronger than himself. If it were not injured, he definitely would not have come to provoke it. He did not take part in breaking the barrier, as he needed to remain in top condition in order to deal with the magical beast’s counterattacks.

“Class 7 Monster Cores are like great treasures on the Tian Yuan Continent. They’re invaluable. If I can obtain a Class 7 Monster Core and absorb all the energy inside it, my strength will be elevated to another level,” old man Hou thought.

A snow-white, three-meter long tiger lied weakly on the ground inside the dark cave protected by the barrier. It stared powerlessly at the constantly-shaking barrier as despair filled her eyes.

She was Xiao Bai’s mother, Rum Guinness.

When the tiger king from the Gilligan clan initially injured her, she was already at the edge of death and extremely weak. The tiger king had also deposited his power into her body, and only a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master could cleanse it. It had been sealed up by Jian

Chen's power as a Class 6 Radiant Saint Master before. However, this had limited her strength and her recovery speed at the same time.

She needed to devote all her strength to suppressing the dark energy, or it would break through the Radiant Saint Force seal. She would be dead for sure at that point.

It had consumed a lot of her strength to maintain the seal over the years. She had less than a hundredth of her peak power. As such, once the barrier broke, even Heaven Saint Masters could kill her off, let alone Saint Rulers.

As soon as she tried fighting back, the tiger king's energy would destroy the Radiant Saint Force seal that Jian Chen left behind.

Chapter 995: Imminent Danger

“My child, it’s a pity that I can’t see you one last time. I wonder how you are right now. Did following that human make you suffer?” Rum Guinness thought inside. Despair had already filled her heart. She knew that the barrier would not last much longer without more support from her. She was dead for sure after it had broken.

Although she was a powerful Class 7 Magical Beast, she was no longer in her peak condition. She did not possess her previous strength.

At this moment before death, she missed and worried about her child the most.

Outside, the booms from the barrier constantly rang out. The Heaven Saint Masters rained the barrier with attacks under the directions of the Saint Ruler. This made the barrier’s power rapidly decrease.

Old man Hou floated in the air. He stared coldly at the barrier below as caution flooded his eyes. He had already charged up his strength, secretly ready to strike out at any moment. He made his preparations so that the Class 7 Magical Beast hiding in the barrier would be unable to attack him suddenly.

Far away, Jian Chen tailed the white tiger hair as he carried You Yue. The white tiger stood on his shoulder. He traveled toward the north of the continent, where Rum Guinness had hidden herself.

At the side, Rui Jin and Hei Yu followed him closely. Although they could rip open Space Gates, they had no idea of the precise locations as there was only the tiger hair as a guide. As a result, all they could do was follow the tiger hair.

However, they were still extremely fast even though they were flying.

In the blink of an eye, several days had passed. Jian Chen's group had crossed through countless kingdoms of various sizes as well as many mountain ranges. They flew constantly and approached the north after they traveled for tens of millions of kilometers.

At the same time, the Heaven Saint Masters finally broke through Rum Guinness' barrier. The barrier had repelled their attacks for over ten days, and this consumed all its energy. It revealed the dark entrance to the cavern.

The Heaven Saint Masters immediately retreated after the barrier broke. Old Hou entered the cavern carefully alone. He saw the powerless Rum Guinness on the floor at first glance.

Rum Guinness' eyes were filled with weakness and were dull. She glanced at old Hou, before she slowly closed her eyes. She had already accepted death now, as she did not have the power to flee in her current condition. Even if she made a final, full-powered retaliation regardless of the consequences, she would not be able to injure a Saint Ruler in peak condition.

Old Hou stood cautiously as he stared fixedly at Rum Guinness for a while. Only after he confirmed that the Class 7 Magical Beast was actually heavily injured did he relax slightly. However, he was still unwilling to be careless. With a wave of his hand, he gathered a powerful energy, shooting it toward Rum Guinness with lightning speed.

Boom!

Rum Guinness was sent flying without any resistance. She collided against the cavern wall behind her heavily before she fell to the ground. A few mouthfuls of blood immediately spurted from her mouth. A terrifying injury had formed on her body as blood flowed from it. It dyed her snow-white fur red.

Rum Guinness' eyes darkened once more. She became even weaker.

Old Hou could not help but laugh aloud when he saw this. He said, "Looks like my worry was unneeded. Your injuries are far worse than I had imagined. Looks like I'll be able to obtain a Class 7 Monster Core and a magical beast corpse with ease today."

As he spoke, energy began to gather in old Hou's hands once more. He struck toward Rum Guinness again. He was unwilling to approach Rum Guinness at all out of caution, afraid that she was faking it all.

The white tiger that stood silently on Jian Chen's shoulder suddenly trembled when Rum Guinness was injured. Two streaks

of light immediately shone from its eyes and the vast presence of a Class 7 Magical Beast began to radiate from its tiny body. The presence contained a burning fury.

Roar! The white tiger roared loudly at the sky. It was not like its earlier growl, but a true tiger's roar. It was deafening and basically spread through the entire sky.

Afterward, the white tiger leaped off Jian Chen's shoulder. Its curled-up wings suddenly unfurled and began to flap. The white tiger turned into a white streak as it shot off with unbelievable speed. It disappeared in an instant, almost like teleportation. It was moving as fast as it could.

The white tiger's sudden actions caused Jian Chen and the others to become stunned. However, Jian Chen realized something very quickly and his face sank. He hoarsely said, "Xiao Bai's mother is likely to be in danger right now. Let's hurry."

"Jian Chen, your comprehension of the mysteries of the world is just far too limited. Let me take you," Hei Yu said. With a wave of his arm, an invisible force instantly surrounded Jian Chen and You Yue. Afterward, it did not hold back at all, fusing them with the surrounding space even more. Through the use of Spatial Force, they turned into a blur with Rui Jin and Hei Yu. They passed the tiger hair instantly as they chased after the white tiger.

Rum Guinness had taken several heavy attacks in the marshland. She lay on the ground on her last legs, as blood had dyed her completely red. The blood on the ground had already formed a pool, while her eyes were dark. She seemed to almost close her

eyes.

Old Hou smiled ruthlessly. He no longer had any fear now and a curved blade appeared in his hand. He planned on giving Rum Guinness a final strike to completely end her life.

Roar!

At this moment, a great roar boomed from afar. The sound began near the horizon and rapidly grew louder and arrived nearby in an instant.

The roar possessed a great pressure like the angry roar of a lord. All the magical beasts living in the poisonous marshland were frightened, collapsing onto the ground as they trembled.

Even the Heaven Saint Masters and old Hou were frightened by the roar. However, the effect was not as heavy as they were humans.

“T-that’s a Class 7 Magical Beast. Another Class 7 Magical Beast has actually come.” Old Hou’s expression changed drastically, becoming extremely ugly.

Chapter 996: Hanging by a Thread

Old man Hou stood in the cavern dumbstruck. He was no longer as complacent as he seemed before, and deep fear completely enveloped him.

As a Saint Ruler, old man Hou was extremely knowledgeable. He knew quite a lot regarding Class 7 Magical Beasts. They were naturally more powerful than humans of the same cultivation level. The chances of a human's victory were pitiful if they fought a magical beast with a similar cultivation level. He was a Saint Ruler, but he did not possess any powerful battle skills. All he could do was probably flee if he came across a Class 7 Magical Beast, and he could tell from the roar that the magical beast hurrying over was far stronger than him. This made it even more difficult for him to deal with the current situation.

“How is this possible? How can another Class 7 Magical Beast appear here?” Old man Hou murmured with a trembling voice. Without any hesitation, he no longer bothered to kill Rum Guinness in the cavern. Instead, he turned into a blur and fled at his greatest speed.

At the same time, the stunned Heaven Saint Masters outside returned to their senses. They immediately began to flee as fast as they could without anyone's orders. They could tell from the great roars that the Class 7 Magical Beast was in top condition, unlike the heavily injured one in the cave. Even the esteemed old man Hou was not the opponent of a peak condition Class 7 Magical Beast.

The Heaven Saint Masters fled into the distance at virtually the same time as old man Hou. Old man Hou fused with the surrounding space and hurried along with his abilities as a Saint Ruler, so he was extremely fast. Meanwhile, the Heaven Saint Masters could only fly slowly.

In the blink of an eye, old man Hou was about to disappear into the horizon, but a white figure rushed over from behind with a speed countless times faster than old man Hou. It crossed through several dozen kilometers in the blink of an eye and blocked old man Hou. To no surprise, it was a huge, thirty-meter-long white tiger with wings on its back.

The white tiger floated impressively in the air as it blocked old man Hou's path. Its eyes no longer shone with a pure light. Instead, a vicious light glowed in its eyes. It seemed like a bloodthirsty beast.

The white tiger's incomparable speed immediately caused old man Hou to pale from fright. The strength of the Class 7 Magical Beast before him was beyond his imaginations.

Roar! The white tiger roared at the sky angrily and did not give old man Hou any more time to flee. It swung its front paw directly toward old man Hou's neck.

As soon as old man Hou wanted to dodge, he discovered with fright that the space around him had been frozen unknowingly. It immobilized him.

Shwt! The white tiger's sharp claws ripped the hopeless old man's throat in half. The white tiger had beheaded him, and his body fell while his head remained in the sky.

The white tiger growled constantly. It opened its mouth, and an energy ball that radiated with powerful ripples shot out. The ball directly collided with old man Hou's head.

The old man's head immediately exploded with a boom; the tiger had directly wiped out his soul. Saint Rulers were rather difficult to kill, but that was only the case when the opponent had a similar strength. Ordinary Saint Rulers could not even flee before the Winged Tiger God.

The white tiger's fury did not decrease at all after it killed off the old man. He continued to chase down the remaining Heaven Saint Masters with surging killing intent. Even though they had all used a very smart tactic and dispersed, they were nowhere as fast as the Winged Tiger God. The white tiger caught them one by one. With a flurry of its paws, the white tiger ripped the Heaven Saint Masters into pieces. Their blood dyed the sky red.

Although the white tiger was young, it had experienced quite a few events as it followed Jian Chen in all these years. It rarely ever fought, but bloody scenes like these were common to it. As a result, it was not soft-hearted at all when it came to killing people.

The white tiger still seemed to be angry after it killed the Heaven Saint Masters. It produced a deafening roar at the sky once again, which frightened all the magical beasts in the marsh. All of them were on the ground; they trembled as fear filled their eyes.

Rum Guinness lay in her own blood within the cave as she faced death. She opened her darkened eyes with difficulty. Even though she was weak, this did not hide the excitement and emotions within her eyes. As a magical beast, and a high class magical beast in particular, Rum Guinness could naturally feel a special connection with her kindred. She knew that her child that she had not seen for many years had returned since the first roar.

“My child, my child, my child has come back,” Rum Guinness said in the human tongue. Her voice was so soft and weak that it was barely audible, but indescribable emotions filled it. Blood constantly flowed from her mouth as she spoke, which made her seem extremely miserable.

The white tiger outside the cave constantly shrank before it became a meter in length as it entered the cavern step by step. Its pair of snow-white wings were slightly unfurled as they flickered with a soft white light. It seemed extremely impressive.

Growl! The white tiger produced a throaty, trembling growl in anguish when it saw Rum Guinness who lied in a pool of her own blood. The white tiger seemed to be crying, as it could clearly feel that its mother’s presence was becoming weaker and weaker. Her life force drained away constantly.

Rum Guinness was heavily injured now, so she no longer had any power to keep up the seal within her body. The dark energy broke through as it constantly ravaged her body.

“Child, my child. I thought that I would never be able to see you again. Now that I can see you right before I die, I can die without regrets,” Rum Guinness said in the human tongue. Her voice was so weak and soft that it was barely audible. She struggled to open her eyes, and she looked at the impressive white tiger before her with deep love. Pride filled her eyes.

At this moment, Jian Chen, You Yue, Rui Jin, and Hei Yu also arrived. Jian Chen’s expression immediately changed when he saw Rum Guinness’ condition. He appeared before her in the blink of an eye. A golden streak of light shot out from the center of his eyebrows and landed in his hand as a palm-sized golden tower.

“Human, I haven’t misjudged you. I can feel that my child has grown to Class 7. I thank you for looking after my child for all these years.” Rum Guinness looked toward Jian Chen with gratitude.

“Don’t talk for now. I’ll save you immediately,” said Jian Chen.

“The seal within me has broken. The dark energy a king from the Gilligan clan deposited in my body is currently invading my soul, so my soul will be wiped out very soon. It’s too late,” Rum Guinness said disjointedly.

“I’ll protect your soul with a strand of Radiant Saint Force origin energy. Don’t worry, you’ll be saved.” With a thought from Jian Chen, a strand of origin energy emerged from the top of his head and quickly floated to the tip of his finger. He extended his finger and the strand of energy immediately disappeared into Rum Guinness. It prevented the dark energy within her from tunneling

deeper.

Afterward, Jian Chen immediately contacted the artifact spirit to bring Rum Guinness into the artifact space without any hesitation. Right now, Rum Guinness was in an extremely dangerous situation. He could heal her with his abilities as a Class 7 Radiant Saint Master, but the artifact spirit's abilities were even greater. He chose to let the artifact spirit heal her personally as a safety measure.

The white tiger nervously stared at the saint artifact that floated in the air. It produced a deep growl as if it was pleading the artifact to save his mother.

Jian Chen rubbed the white tiger's head and said, "Xiao Bai, don't worry. It's not like you don't know what the artifact spirit is capable of. Don't worry, he'll definitely save your mother. Your mother will be fine. Let's go. We should enter the artifact space as well."

Afterward, Jian Chen entered the artifact space with You Yue and the white tiger. Only Rui Jin and Hei Yu remained outside as they kept guard.

Chapter 997: Recovery

Rum Guinness lied on the floor in the very center of the huge hall within the artifact space. She was at the edge of death, and her breathing was extremely weak.

In the form of a middle-aged man, the white-robed artifact spirit had already received Jian Chen's orders. It appeared out of nowhere beside her and extended a finger. Then, a strand of extremely pure Radiant Saint Force origin energy entered Rum Guinness' body. Immediately, a thick layer of white light enveloped her entire body. It was impossible to tell what was happening inside.

Jian Chen, You Yue, and the white tiger appeared out in the hall. Jian Chen and the white tiger stared unblinkingly at Rum Guinness, who was covered by the white light. At the same time, You Yue constantly looked around in curiosity, as this was the first time she had come to this place. She observed everything present.

Rum Guinness' body was in an extremely horrible condition. The dark energy left behind by the king from the Gilligan clan ravaged her body constantly, and it slowly extended toward her soul. If Jian Chen had not arrived in time and used a strand of origin energy to guard Rum Guinness' soul, she would have faced grim possibilities. It would make it very difficult to say that she could survive.

Although Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters could revive the dead, that only applied when the soul still existed. If the soul was killed off as well, even the one and only Class 8 Radiant Saint Master

from the ancient times would have been unable to revive them, let alone Class 7 Radiant Saint Masters.

The hall fell into an awkward silence. Jian Chen and the white tiger stared unblinkingly at Rum Guinness and made no sounds at all.

After she looked around a few times out of curiosity, You Yue gradually lost interest as well. She also focused her gaze on Rum Guinness and thought, “Is that Xiao Bai’s mother? She can speak human tongue. It also looks like she’s at least a Class 7 Magical Beast.”

The origin energy under the artifact spirit’s control was much more powerful and pure than Jian Chen’s. Rum Guinness’ condition took a good turn very quickly under the personal treatment of the artifact spirit. Her body, originally riddled with injuries, slowly began to return to its previous condition. Even the dark energy within her was completely purged.

Four hours later, the white light around Rum Guinness finally disappeared. Her fur was no longer bloody. Instead, she now had a layer of beautiful, snow-white fur. Her dull, weak eyes also shone with spirit once again and became bright once more.

The artifact spirit’s origin energy was far beyond anything that Jian Chen could match up to. Not only did it completely heal a Class 7 Magical Beast at the edge of death in such a short time, it had even recovered her soul to its peak condition.

Rum Guinness slowly rose up from the ground. Although her injuries had been completely healed, her energy had not been replenished at all. As a result, she was still drained and very weak, which made it rather difficult even when she just tried to stand up.

Rum Guinness' body changed, and she turned into her human form very quickly. She became an extremely sturdy middle-aged woman.

“I thank you for saving my life. Not only would I have failed to see my child ever again if you hadn't made it on time, I would not even be able to survive any longer. The kindness you have shown the two of us is so great that I cannot return it even with my life,” Rum Guinness thanked Jian Chen.

Jian Chen smiled calmly and replied, “Senior, you don't need to be so polite. I sure have made you suffer though, making you wait so long before I could heal your injuries completely.” Jian Chen looked at the white tiger when he reached this point, before he continued, “Senior, you have not seen your son in so many years. You must have a lot to say, so I won't disturb you any longer. The two of you should catch up properly.”

With that, Jian Chen and You Yue directly left the hall. They gave the two of them plenty of space.

After Jian Chen and You Yue had left, Rum Guinness looked at the impressive white tiger. She could naturally tell at first glance that her son was a Class 7 Magical Beast already.

When the white tiger had first left her side, it was still a cub that could not even open its eyes. Now, it had become a powerful Class 7 Magical Beast. Its growth speed was so great that even Rum Guinness felt extremely shocked. She also felt great excitement and happiness.

Jian Chen and You Yue walked beside each other and arrived on a nearby slope. Jian Chen looked into the distance. Then, he sighed deeply. Jian Chen had finally completed a task that had burdened his mind for many years. Rum Guinness was finally healed, and Xiao Bai had reunited with her.

You Yue stood silently beside him. She hugged Jian Chen's arm as the light in her eyes flickered. She constantly observed the weird world inside the saint artifact. It was clearly different in some aspects compared to the world outside.

"Jian Chen, where is this place?" You Yue asked. Her voice was as pleasant as a lark's call.

"This is the space within the saint artifact," Jian Chen explained the matter of the artifact space to You Yue. It immediately allowed her to come to an understanding and widened her horizons. She was amazed.

At this moment, a powerful ripple of energy surged through the entire artifact space from the hall. All the Class 7 Magical Beast sensed this and looked toward the palace in suspicion immediately.

Jian Chen also looked toward the direction where the energy

ripples came from. He could feel a vague pressure of the world hidden within. Only the use of Heaven or Saint Tier Battle Skills would cause this phenomenon.

“It’s Nubis. Looks like he’s already achieved some success with his research of the Saint Tier Battle Skill,” murmured Jian Chen. However, he also knew just how profound Saint Tier Battle Skills were. They could not be learned so easily. Not to mention that Nubis was changing the battle skill to suit himself, which made it even more difficult. Although he had achieved some success, there would still be quite some time before he completely succeeded.

Not long afterward, a white figure shot over. It was the white tiger, pulling his mother to Jian Chen’s side. As soon as they arrived before Jian Chen, Rum Guinness knelt down toward Jian Chen and bowed her head. “Savior, thank you for protecting my child. I have already learned what the savior has experienced from my child. Not only did the savior face the pursuit of the king from the Gilligan clan to protect my child, the ten protector clans even forced you to leave the continent. Savior’s kindness is so great that I, Rum Guinness, will use my life to return to the favor. I am willing to work like a slave for savior...”

“Senior, please get up.” Jian Chen quickly helped Rum Guinness off her knees. Although he was stronger than her now, Jian Chen still felt some respect toward Rum Guinness, which was why he still referred to her as senior.

Rum Guinness was a great mother. Just that was enough for Jian Chen to respect her.

Afterward, Jian Chen said a few polite words to Rum Guinness, before getting her to recuperate properly. She would leave after she had completely recovered.

Growl! The white tiger produced a deep growl as he looked at Rum Guinness. Hatred filled his eyes.

Rum Guinness rubbed the white tiger's head and said, "Child, of course, you need to take revenge for your father, but the king of the Gilligan clan is powerful. He's a Class 8 Magical Beast, and we are not his opponent with our current strength. Child, once you become a Class 8 Magical Beast, we'll kill our way into the Gilligan clan together and avenge your father." Rum Guinness' voice also became filled with hatred as she reached the end of these words.

Years ago, her husband had died at the hands of the king from the Gilligan clan to protect her and her child. His soul had been wiped out.

Jian Chen's eyes turned cold when he heard this. He said with a deep voice, "Senior, the tiger king from the Gilligan clan almost killed me years ago. I have an absolutely irreconcilable enmity with him. Once you recover, we'll kill our way into the Gilligan clan together."

Chapter 998: Calling on a Helper

Rum Guinness glanced at Jian Chen with suspicion, as if she wanted to see through Jian Chen's strength. However, she could not see through him with her level of cultivation, so Jian Chen seemed like an ordinary person before her.

“The two of us are extremely grateful that the savior could help us, but the king of the Gilligan clan is just too powerful. Also, he has the support of many Class 7 Magical Beast elders. We will definitely not risk things so easily until we are sure that we can achieve victory,” said Rum Guinness. Although she had learned many of the things Jian Chen had gone through throughout the years from the white tiger, she was still unsure of Jian Chen's exact strength.

However, Rum Guinness could guess. When she first saw Jian Chen, he was still an Earth Saint Master. He was unworthy of any importance in her eyes. To her, it was impossible for him to surpass her in this time no matter how great his talent was.

Rum Guinness credited it all to some protective treasure on Jian Chen as to why she could not perceive his strength. After all, the saint artifact was a very good example of a protective treasure.

Jian Chen could not help but smile when he saw Rum Guinness's lack of confidence. “Senior is over-worrying. The king of the Gilligan clan may be a Class 8 Magical Beast, something equal to human Saint Kings, but he can still be considered as a weaker Saint King. I naturally have my methods of dealing with him. He cannot threaten us.”

“Really? Do you really have the power to defeat the Gilligan clan?” Rum Guinness said in surprise. She became delighted.

Jian Chen nodded and said, “Senior, recuperate your strength first. Once you’re in peak condition again, we’ll head to the Cross Mountains immediately and kill our way into the Gilligan clan. We’ll take revenge for your husband and Xiao Bai’s father.”

Afterward, Rum Guinness returned to the hall to recuperate. Jian Chen did not disturb Nubis who was comprehending the battle skill, so he strolled around the artifact space at leisure with You Yue.

The artifact space had existed for hundreds of thousands of years. After such a long time, the place had become filled with countless magical beasts. Many Class 7 ones still remained even though all the Class 8 ones had left.

The Class 7 Magical Beasts were born in the artifact space and also died inside there. They knew that there was a world outside the artifact space, but they could not leave at all to their dismay. They were essentially trapped in the artifact space, unless they reached Class 9 and became an existence on par with Saint Emperors. Otherwise, they would never be able to see the outside world.

“There are quite a lot of Class 7 Magical Beasts inside the saint artifact. If I use them correctly, they can be an extremely powerful force,” Jian Chen thought. He began to think of using the Class 7

Magical Beasts, but he dismissed it temporarily after some careful consideration.

If he let out all those Class 7 Magical Beasts, the first people to stop him would probably be the ten protector clans. He knew very well that the protector clans would definitely let so many Class 7 Magical Beasts appear on the Tian Yuan Continent, much less give him control over so many and let the protector Changyang clan's power increase.

He no longer feared the ten protector clans, but this was all because Rui Jin and Hei Yu were supporting him. If the two of them were not present, it would be very hard to contend with the other protector clans with just the Changyang clan and themselves.

"I'll subdue those Class 7 Magical Beasts after I become powerful enough to take the protector clans head-on. There'll be a day where they'll become useful to me," thought Jian Chen. He became extremely determined. He was unwilling to waste the huge force inside the artifact space.

He just could not use it right now.

The artifact space also contained many heavenly resources. Jian Chen was able to conduct a harvest properly over the next few days and collected a large amount of heavenly resources. He planned on bringing them to an alchemist and refining them into pills in the future. This would allow the Flame Mercenaries to grow stronger and simultaneously raise the people who were loyal to him.

He had poured all the heavenly resources he had obtained from Tian Jian before into the white tiger with not a single one remaining. Other than the aged Dragon's Saliva he had kept before, he possessed no other heavenly resources.

Jian Chen met the Class 7 crow king once again during these few days. Jian Chen had once killed many of the crow king's descendants when he competed within the artifact space as a Radiant Saint Master. This made it hold quite the grudge against him. If it were not for the fact that all the Class 7 Magical Beasts and above were trapped by the artifact spirit before, he probably would have been ripped into pieces long ago by the crow king.

However, it was different from before now. When Jian Chen met the Class 7 Magical Beast once again, it did not dare to show any dissatisfaction toward Jian Chen at all. Instead, it bowed politely to him, while Jian Chen did not make any trouble for it either. After all, it was possible for the crow king to become a general under him in the future.

Several days later, Rum Guinness' strength fully recovered. She was back at her peak. Then, she left with Jian Chen.

Jian Chen brought You Yue, the white tiger, and Rum Guinness out of the artifact space and returned to the cavern. He noticed Rui Jin and Hei Yu meditating nearby as soon as he emerged. The two of them had always been guarding the area for the past few days.

Rui Jin and Hei Yu opened their eyes slowly and stood up at the

same time. They looked at Rum Guinness nonchalantly as a sliver of interest flickered through the depths of their eyes. Although Rum Guinness' strength was insignificant before the two, her status as the Winged Tiger God's mother was enough to deserve special respect.

“Senior, now that we've found Xiao Bai's mother, let's go take revenge at the Cross Mountains. Please help me pave a convenient path there,” Jian Chen said to the two of them.

Rui Jin spoke up after some thought, “In the few days we spent in Mercenary City, we gained a rough understanding of the current situation on the Tian Yuan Continent. The Cross Mountains possesses a force from the Beast God Continent, so if you provoke them so openly, it's extremely likely that the Beast God Continent will react violently. We're also almost the enemies of both the Tian Yuan Continent and the Beast God Continent simultaneously now, while the Beast God Continent has three Class 9 Magical Beasts. Two of them have always been trying to get their hands on the Winged Tiger God, while the other is not trustworthy even though it has stood on the side of the Winged Tiger God.”

“There is also the human Saint Emperor from the Tian Yuan Continent. Although his soul attacks cannot do anything to Hei Yu and me, his target is the Winged Tiger God as well. If he works together with the Class 9 Magical Beasts of the Beast God Continent, it'll be very hard for us to deal with them with just Hei Yu and me. As such, we want to increase our power.”

“Senior Rui Jin, do you want to gather the other Class 8 Magical Beasts that left the artifact space with you?” Jian Chen felt

pleasantly surprised.

“I’m not talking about them. They can’t deal with Class 9 Magical Beasts even if they gather together. I was talking about that Scorching Divine Phoenix of the Divine Phoenix clan,” said Rui Jin. Then, he turned to Hei Yu and said, “Hei Yu, go with Jian Chen to the Cross Mountains. I’ll go find Hong Lian. If there’s anything you can’t deal with, contact me through the secret technique.”

Hei Yu nodded silently.

Rui Jin meant it when he said he was going. He immediately ripped open a Space Gate and left. Hei Yu did not tarry either, also ripping open a Space Gate to the Cross Mountains and leaving with Jian Chen and the others.

Jian Chen passed through the Space Gate with You Yue, and they traversed several million kilometers in an instant. Soon, they arrived at the edge of the Cross Mountains. Afterward, they all flew toward the depths of the mountain range.

The high-ranked members of the nine other protector clans were all gathered together right now, excluding the protector Changyang clan. Other than the nonchalant expressions of the people from the Pure Heart Pavilion, everyone else had their brows furrowed and were stern.

This was not the first meeting they had held in the past few year. However, the intent was the same for all of them whenever they

held one. If it were not about the Winged Tiger God, it would be about Jian Chen and the Changyang clan.

Jian Chen had returned with the advantage of a divine hall, and even Saint Kings at Great Perfection could not harm him at all. They all felt extremely threatened by him as the Winged Tiger God followed him as well, along with his connection to the Changyang clan. They felt even more uneasy now that Jian Chen had the two supreme experts, Rui Jin and Hei Yu, beside him.

Although the protector clans were the ultimate force that protected the continent, a balance formed between them at the same time. They restrained each other, so even if a certain clan became powerful, they were unable to surpass a certain level. However, the current Changyang clan had already surpassed what they could allow or endure.

If the Changyang clan obtained the help of Rui Jin and Hei Yu, they could not be suppressed even if all nine other clans worked together. They had a lot of hidden power, but this could only be used against invading foreigners or when they came across existences that they could not repel.

Kaiser and the tiger emperor Lankyros gathered on the ninety-eighth floor of the Beast God Hall in the center of the continent. They were both sunken-faced.

“Cangqiong actually hindered me in the most crucial moment. If he had done something on that day, the Winged Tiger God would have fallen into our hands long ago.” Kaiser clenched his fist tightly. He was extremely angry.

Chapter 999: Returning Mightily

Lankyros's face was also ugly, as he stood with his chest bare opposite of Kaiser. The light in his eyes flickered, and he said coldly, "Cangqiong treats the Winged Tiger God in a completely different manner to us. If he's present, he'll ruin our plans sooner or later. His existence is a great latent danger."

Kaiser's eyes also flickered. He growled after a while, "If it were possible, I really would like to eliminate Cangqiong. However, he's one of the three rulers of the continent. If he falls, our continent's power will be greatly affected as well. Also, how difficult is it to kill a Class 9 Magical Beast? Not to mention, Cangqiong is part of the Peng clan. Their speed is the greatest in the world, so he can move around as he wishes. If he wants to flee, neither of us can stop him."

"Then what do we do now? Do we just watch the Winged Tiger God grow rapidly in the hands of that human youngster?" Lankyros furrowed his brows. He was extremely stern. "The Winged Tiger God is growing much faster than we expected in the hands of that human youngster. I never thought it would reach Class 7 so quickly. If it has some more time, it probably won't take long before the Winged Tiger God grows to a level that we can't deal with. At that time, it'll become our calamity. We did try to harm it before after all, and its father's death is connected to me in a way I cannot hide."

Kaiser also furrowed his brows tightly when he heard that. He was confident in his own strength and feared no one. Origin energy had also ceased in the world, so breaking through was much more difficult than before, which made it impossible to

surpass Saint Emperor. As a result, it was almost impossible that the Winged Tiger God could grow to a point where it could threaten him.

However, the Winged Tiger God's fame was just too great. It was the irrefutable beast god since the ancient times, and its scariness and talent were indescribable. Beasts of antiquity could not compare with it, which was why Kaiser felt a little worried as well.

Kaiser stood silently for a very long time in the center of the ninety-eighth floor in thought. His eyes flickered, as he appeared hesitant.

A while later, he seemed to finally make up his mind. His eyes suddenly stopped wavering, and he growled, "We can't drag out the matter of the Winged Tiger God any further. The human Saint Emperor just happens to want the Winged Tiger God as well. We have similar intentions to him, so maybe we can work together."

Lankyros hesitated, "Will he agree?"

"He wants to benefit from the Winged Tiger God, which will be impossible for him unless he works with us. After all, that human youngster has the protection from two experts that I can't deal with," Kaiser growled.

"Alright then. We'll go discuss it with the path lord of carnal desires later," Lankyros said helplessly.

Afterward, Kaiser and Lankyros left the Beast God Hall together. They ripped open a Space Gate and proceeded to the Tian Yuan Continent.

With their strength as Saint Emperors, the protector clans could not discover them when they went to the Tian Yuan Continent as long as they did not create too great of a disturbance. As a result, the agreement of no trespassing between the Beast God Continent and the Tian Yuan Continent was purely ornamental to two of them, existing but without any real function.

A ruddy old man silently appeared outside the ninety-seventh floor of the Beast God Hall after Kaiser and Lankyros had departed. He looked deeply in the direction that they traveled off to, as his expression changed constantly.

He was one of the three rulers of the Beast God Continent, the peng emperor Cangqiong.

Cangqiong floated in the air as he stared off in the direction of the Tian Yuan Continent for a very long time. In the end, he sighed gently and shook his head, before returning to the Beast God Hall. He murmured gently, “The Winged Tiger God has the protection of the dragon king, the Divine Golden Dragon. It shouldn’t face any dangers.”

“But where did they get their origin energy armor and weapons from? I wonder about the Sacred Dragon’s Spear and Sacred Dragon’s Armor in the hands of the Golden Divine Dragon in particular. They are holy items of the Dragon clan that vanished with the disappearance of the Dragon clan and the Divine Phoenix

clan all those years ago. Why would it suddenly appear in his hands?”

“And according to my understanding from the records about the Dragon clan, the two items don’t possess origin energy at all...”

A majestic palace stood in the depths of the Cross Mountains. Class 6 Magical Beasts would constantly move around in its surroundings, entering and exiting from time to time. There was a plentiful number of them.

The rare Class 6 Magical Beasts on the continent could be seen everywhere here, because this was where all the high class magical beasts gathered. There were even quite a number of the Class 7 Magical Beasts, existences that were otherwise almost extinct on the rest of the continent.

This was where all the power of Cross Mountains gathered, the Gilligan clan.

A burly, middle-aged and bare-chested man meditated in a room within the Gilligan clan as he cultivated. Powerful ripples of energy permeated his surroundings, which caused the space in the room to constantly tremble.

He was the tiger king of the two kings of the Gilligan clan that had almost killed Jian Chen back when he left the Cross Mountains.

The terrifying energy slowly settled down and a while later, he opened his eyes gradually. A sliver of weakness was hidden deep within his eyes.

“I wonder when I can finally recover my strength at the Second Heavenly Layer,” the tiger king murmured to himself. When he went to deal with Jian Chen all those years ago, a great expert of the human race injured him in the crucial moment, which forced him to resort to a self-cannibalizing secret technique to flee. He was extremely injured, while his strength at the Second Heavenly Layer had also fallen to the first. This made it extremely difficult to heal, where even after so much time, he still had yet to make a full recovery.

The tiger king stood up from the icy-cold floor. He paced around the room with his brows furrowed. He seemed rather stern.

“I suddenly felt uneasy a few days ago, as if something big is going to happen, something extremely bad for me. Just what is going to happen?” he murmured to himself. His eyes flickered as he revealed an expression of thought. He recollected everything that had happened in the past few years several times.

Suddenly, his eyes froze and, he mumbled, “Is it because of the Winged Tiger God? Impossible. The Winged Tiger God is still young and weak. It’s already extremely fortunate to be able to survive from the threat of the ten protector clans, so why would it make me feel uneasy?”

The tiger king had always remained in seclusion to recover in the recent years, and had basically cut himself off from the outside

world. His understanding of what had happened on the continent was rather limited. He knew that the ten protector clans had basically scoured the continent for the Winged Tiger God, but he had no idea that Jian Chen had already returned forcefully with the Winged Tiger God.

The barrier around the room suddenly disappeared. The door of the room opened, and the tiger king disappeared.

At the same time, a group of unwelcomed guests had arrived in the depths of the Cross Mountains that was known to be forbidden to humans. Jian Chen entered the depths of the Cross Mountains with You Yue, Hei Yu, Rum Guinness, and the white tiger brazenly. They flew toward the Gilligan clan in a threatening manner.

They flew extremely quickly, shooting across the sky like comets. They disappeared in the blink of an eye.

There were quite a few Class 7 Magical Beasts in the depths of the mountain range, so their threatening manner of arrival naturally alarmed many of them. Powerful presences immediately appeared in many areas and six Class 7 Magical Beasts in human form shot toward Jian Chen's group from afar with lightning speed. They blocked the path of Jian Chen's group.

A magical beast glanced across the five of them sharply and growled, "There are humans among you. Don't you know it's forbidden for humans to enter the Cross Mountains? All those who trespass the depths of the mountain range are to be killed without mercy." When he reached this point, he suddenly paused. He

stared at Run Guinness with shining eyes and cried out of surprise, “Run Guinness, how is it you?”

The other magical beasts all looked toward Run Guinness as well. Their expressions changed and became extremely mixed. There was animosity as well as regret.

Run Guinness slowly made her way to the front. She looked at the Class 7 Magical Beasts with some emotions and said bitterly, “Elders, long time no see. I hope you are still well.

The magical beasts all looked at each other. Then, someone stepped forward. He pointed toward her and started to curse, “Run Guinness, the river king said that your couple was working with humans, wanting to do horrible things to the Gilligan clan. We didn't really believe it at first, but by the looks of things, he was right. You really are working with humans.”

“Working with humans,” muttered Run Guinness. Afterward, she smiled sadly and said, “It’s fine if the tiger king tried to kill us. I never thought he’d incriminate us with such a great crime as well.”

“Run Guinness, since you’ve become a traitor of the Gilligan clan, you’re our enemy. Elders, let’s do it. Kill the traitor.” Powerful ripples of energy immediately began to permeate from the Class 7 Magical Beasts as soon as they finished these words. They were about to attack. Although they could not see through Jian Chen and Hei Yu’s strength, the Cross Mountains were their territory, so they feared nothing.

Jian Chen's eyes grew cold. Just as he was about to draw his Emperor Armament, an earth-shaking tiger roar suddenly rang out from behind. It was extremely loud and echoed through the surroundings. It almost rang through the entire mountain range.

The tiger roar possessed a great pressure, like the descent of a supreme lord. It was enough to make all bow down.

This was the pressure of the Winged Tiger God. It possessed an ability to suppress magical beasts on a spirit level, so with the white tiger's roar, the entire mountain range became silent. All the Class 6 Magical Beasts and those below collapsed on the ground as fear filled their eyes.

Even the Class 7 Magical Beasts they faced up against were stunned. They all forgot to attack, and stared at the white tiger by Rum Guinness' side in shock.

A white-robed, middle-aged man suddenly snapped open his eyes as he cultivated inside the Gilligan clan. He leaped up from the ground and stared off into the distance in shock. He cried out, "The Winged Tiger God!"

At the same time, the tiger king also trembled violently when he heard the great roar right after he had left his room. Disbelief flooded his eyes and, he called out involuntarily, "The Winged Tiger God. It's the call of the Winged Tiger God. It has actually come to the Cross Mountains."

Chapter 1000: Revelation

The white tiger's angry roar shocked the entire mountain range. Its effects were undoubtedly earth-shaking; not only did the expressions of all the Class 7 Magical Beasts inside the Gilligan clan change drastically, even the two kings were shocked.

The Class 7 Magical Beasts that wanted to deal with Rum Guinness all changed drastically in expression. They stared at the awe-inspiring white tiger that had its wings unfolded in mid-air as shock and disbelief flooded their eyes.

“I-i- is this the Winged Tiger God!?” A human form Class 7 Magical Beast elder growled. The pressure from the white tiger caused his soul to tremble, and the two wings on its back had basically allowed them to realize the white tiger's identity in that instant.

They were all magical beasts after all and high ranking Class 7 Magical Beasts as a matter of fact. A human would probably not recognize the white tiger at first glance, but its identity was no secret if it appeared before any Class 7 Magical Beast, unless the white tiger had erased its presence.

“How is this possible? Just how is this possible? The great beast god has actually appeared once more,” a Class 7 Magical Beast cried out.

“A pair of wings on its back and able to make my soul shudder. It can't be wrong. It can't be wrong. It is indeed a Winged Tiger God

that has only appeared in the ancient times.”

“Our great beast god has actually appeared once again...”

The Class 7 Magical Beasts all cried out emotionally. The Winged Tiger God’s supreme status was irreplaceable among magical beasts, to the point where even the three supreme experts of the Beast God Continent came nowhere close to replacing it. This was because it was the indisputable god of the Beast God Continent, and the god in the eyes of all magical beasts. Even after countless years, its prestige had not suffered at all.

As a result, the Class 7 Magical Beasts became emotional and excited after they confirmed the white tiger’s identity. They had ceased to be threatening like before long ago.

“We greet the great beast god.” The magical beasts all knelt down to greet the white tiger. Their voices were filled with respect.

“Elders, please rise.” The speaker was Rum Guinness, who stood behind the white tiger.

However, the elders ignored her. One of them glared at Rum Guinness angrily and called out furiously, “Do you still have any rights to talk to us as a traitor of the magical beasts, Rum Guinness? Our god is right here. Just wait until you face the stern judgment of the beast god.”

Anguish filled Rum Guinness’ eyes. She slowly walked up to the

white tiger's side and gently rubbed its head, placating the white tiger's anger.

The white tiger did not resist. Its great presence slowly subsided, and it closed its eyes comfortably.

The magical beasts all watched this scene unfolded in a dumbstruck fashion as they knelt in the air. They all became filled with shock and disbelief. With its pride and status as a beast god, how could the Winged Tiger God let anyone touch it like that? Yet, not only did it fail to show any signs of resistance, it even closed its eyes comfortably. The magical beasts on their knees directly began to doubt their eyes when they saw this.

“Rum Guinness actually has such a close relationship with the Winged Tiger God. Is this good or bad? How are we going to deal with Rum Guinness' betrayal this way?” Similar worries appeared in the minds of the elders.

“Elders, do you really believe that I, Rum Guinness, has betrayed the magical beasts? Have you never doubted the truthfulness of the tiger king's words?” Rum Guinness said painfully.

The magical beasts immediately began to stare blankly after they heard these words. They looked at each other, and one of them asked, “Rum Guinness, does that mean that there's another story to your betrayal of the Gilligan clan?”

All of them focused their gazes on Rum Guinness and waited for her answer.

She nodded her head and said, “There are indeed a hidden truth to this matter. The betrayal of my husband and I—our betrayal of the Gilligan clan—was completely a lie forged by the tiger king. The tiger king wanted to eliminate our family. You’ve all been deceived by the tiger king.”

The magical beast elders all became surprised with what Rum Guinness had said. “What? Lies forged by the tiger king? The tiger king wanted to eliminate you? Rum Guinness, are you sure you’re not trying to trick us?”

“Rum Guinness, may I ask if you have any evidence regarding this? The tiger king has no ill feelings toward your couple, let alone the fact that your husband was the brother of the tiger king. Why would he want to eliminate your family?”

“Rum Guinness, if you don’t give us a logical explanation, we won’t be believing you.”

The elders all spoke out. Very few of them believed Rum Guinness’ words. After all, the tiger king was one of the two kings of the clan. The prestige he possessed was just too great in the eyes of the elders.

Rum Guinness looked toward the white tiger beside her, and her face immediately became kind. She said slowly, “It’s all because of my child, because my child is the Winged Tiger God.”

“What! The Winged Tiger God is your child!” The elders all cried

out in shock and disbelief as soon as Rum Guinness finished speaking. They all glanced past the Winged Tiger God and Rum Guinness once again in surprise.

This piece of information was just too astounding to them, in no way less surprising than an actual bolt from the blue. The shock in the elders' hearts had peaked at this moment in time. They all struggled to believe that the Winged Tiger God was actually Rum Guinness' child.

At this moment, several dozen tremendous presences appeared in all directions. The white tiger's roar had rung through the entire mountain range and alerted all the high class magical beasts in the area. All the Class 7 Magical Beasts made their way toward the group.

In that instant, more than forty individuals of various ages had gathered around Jian Chen's group. They all radiated with a great presence, all Class 7 Magical Beasts in human form.

You Yue became rather nervous as soon as she became surrounded by them. However, she relaxed slightly after she saw how calm Jian Chen was as he stood beside her. After all, she did not face up against a group of humans this time, but a group of Class 7 Magical Beasts in the Cross Mountains that were known to be forbidden to humans.

As soon as the magical beasts gathered, they all looked toward the awe-inspiring Winged Tiger God with no exception. Surprise and doubt flooded their eyes.

“It’s the Winged Tiger God. It really is the Winged Tiger God...”

“That’s the Winged Tiger God of our Magical Beast race. I never thought that our beast god would finally appear once more after so many years.”

Very quickly, a few of the Class 7 Magical Beasts recognized the Winged Tiger God’s identity and immediately cried out emotionally. They were ecstatic. However, there were other Class 7 Magical Beasts among them who became rather ugly in expression as well.

Jian Chen glanced past all the Class 7 Magical Beasts nonchalantly and silently took note of their expressions. He paid particular attention to the ones who revealed rather ugly expressions once they saw the Winged Tiger God. He memorized them in detail.

Table of Contents

[Chaotic Sword God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 901: Conflict](#)

[Chapter 902: The Highest Kill Command](#)

[Chapter 903: The Grand Elder's Death](#)

[Chapter 904: Returning To The Turtle Clan](#)

[Chapter 905: The Taihong Clan](#)

[Chapter 906: Five Year's Agreement](#)

[Chapter 907: Return of the Changyang Clan Ancestor](#)

[Chapter 908: Bi Jian's Calculations](#)

[Chapter 909: Qin Qin Takes A Master](#)

[Chapter 910: Violent Movements Of The Emperor Armament](#)

[Chapter 911: The Beast God Continent Gathers Near the Sea Realm](#)

[Chapter 912: The Sea Goddess Appears](#)

[Chapter 913: Opening of the Octoterra Divine Hall](#)

[Chapter 914: Attack of a Beast Horde](#)

[Chapter 915: Fight for a Class 8 Monster Core](#)

[Chapter 916: Leaving the Maze](#)

[Chapter 917: The Octoterra Emperor's Schemes](#)

[Chapter 918: A Barrier's Obstruction \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 919: A Barrier's Obstruction \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 920: Hanging by a Thread](#)

[Chapter 921: A Piece of Divine Quality Crystal](#)

[Chapter 922: Treasury](#)

[Chapter 923: The Blood Demon Emperor](#)

[Chapter 924: Emperor Armament](#)

[Chapter 925: A Chaotic Battle](#)

[Chapter 926: The Seal Undone](#)

[Chapter 927: Battle for the Emperor Armament](#)

[Chapter 928: Eighth Floor of the Hall](#)

[Chapter 929: Baleful Yin Force](#)

[Chapter 930: Assassins of the Serpent God Hall](#)

[Chapter 931: The Octoterra Emperor \(One\)](#)

[Chapter 932: The Octoterra Emperor \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 933: A Battle of Souls](#)

[Chapter 934: Founder of the Bloodsword Sect](#)
[Chapter 935: The Empyrean Demon Monarch](#)
[Chapter 936: Trapped in the Divine Hall](#)
[Chapter 937: Battle of Flame City \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 938: Battle of Flame City \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 939: Battle of Flame City \(Three\)](#)
[Chapter 940: Battle of Flame City \(Four\)](#)
[Chapter 941: Tie Ta's Strength](#)
[Chapter 942: Protector Shui Sighs](#)
[Chapter 943: Tie Ta's Sainthood](#)
[Chapter 944: Gathering of the Powerful](#)
[Chapter 945: Third Layer of the Chaotic Body \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 946: Third Layer of the Chaotic Body \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 947: Controlling the Emperor Armament](#)
[Chapter 948: Fighting the Divine Hall](#)
[Chapter 949: Thysnich's Death](#)
[Chapter 950: Owner of the Divine Hall](#)
[Chapter 951: Five Years](#)
[Chapter 952: Submission of the Taihong Clan](#)
[Chapter 953: Trial of the Two Elders](#)
[Chapter 954: Visiting the Serpent God Hall \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 955: Visiting the Serpent God Hall \(Two\)](#)
[Chapter 956: Visiting the Serpent God Hall \(Three\)](#)
[Chapter 957: Visiting the Serpent God Hall \(Four\)](#)
[Chapter 958: Taking Revenge](#)
[Chapter 959: Serpent God's Fury](#)
[Chapter 960: Proceeding to the Heaven's Spirit Hall](#)
[Chapter 961: Three Underlings](#)
[Chapter 962: The White Tiger's Breakthrough](#)
[Chapter 963: Dealing with Zhou Yunzi and Zhou Tianzi](#)
[Chapter 964: Leaving the Sea Realm](#)
[Chapter 965: Return to Three Saint Island](#)
[Chapter 966: Fury](#)
[Chapter 967: Monstrous Killing Intent](#)
[Chapter 968: Returning to Qinhuang Kingdom](#)
[Chapter 969: Fighting the Extinguishing Alliance](#)
[Chapter 970: Battling Bi Yifei](#)
[Chapter 971: Resisting the Protector Clans \(One\)](#)
[Chapter 972: Resisting the Protector Clans \(Two\)](#)

[Chapter 973: Resisting the Protector Clans \(Three\)](#)
[Chapter 974: Resisting the Protector Clans \(Four\)](#)
[Chapter 975: Resisting the Protector Clans \(Five\)](#)
[Chapter 976: Jian Chen's Treatment](#)
[Chapter 977: The Path Lord of Carnal Desires Appears](#)
[Chapter 978: Fighting a Saint Emperor](#)
[Chapter 979: Gathering of the Three Saint Emperors](#)
[Chapter 980: Clash of the Powerful](#)
[Chapter 981: Resolution](#)
[Chapter 982: Retaking Flame City](#)
[Chapter 983: Returning to the Changyang Clan](#)
[Chapter 984: Tip of the Iceberg](#)
[Chapter 985: Yi Yangzi's Ambush](#)
[Chapter 986: Rui Jin's Assistance](#)
[Chapter 987: Seeing Xiao Ling Again](#)
[Chapter 988: Tie Ta's Identity](#)
[Chapter 989: The Three Soul-controlling Techniques](#)
[Chapter 990: Reviving the Dead](#)
[Chapter 991: Parents' Revival](#)
[Chapter 992: Whereabouts of Seven Beast Furs](#)
[Chapter 993: You Yue's Feelings](#)
[Chapter 994: Rum Guinness](#)
[Chapter 995: Imminent Danger](#)
[Chapter 996: Hanging by a Thread](#)
[Chapter 997: Recovery](#)
[Chapter 998: Calling on a Helper](#)
[Chapter 999: Returning Mightily](#)
[Chapter 1000: Revelation](#)